Sabin 58394

Carlin under
[PRETOCK, Robert]

Smithsonian
Institution
Libraries

Gift of

DR. FREDERICK M. BAYER

LD 4/12
6 plates
Painting

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS,

A CORNISH MAN.

TAKEN FROM HIS OWN MOUTH, IN HIS PASSAGE TO ENGLAND, FROM OFF CAPE HORN IN AMERICA, IN THE SHIP HECTOR.

BY R. S. A PASSENGER IN THE HECTOR.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

LONDON:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXXIII.

PR
3605
P5
L72
1783
SCHERB

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

Elizabeth, Counteſs of Northumberland.

MADAM,

FEW authors, I believe, who write in my way, (whatever view they may ſet out with) can, in the proſecution of their work, forbear to dreſs their fictitious characters in the real ornaments themſelves have been moſt delighted with.

This, I confeſs, hath been my caſe, in the perſon of Youwarkee, in the following ſheets; for having formed her body, I found myſelf at an inexpreſſible loſs how to adorn her mind in the maſterly ſentiments I coveted to endue her with, till I recollected the moſt amiable pattern in your ladyſhip; a ſingle view of which, at a time of the utmoſt fatigue to his lordſhip, hath charmed my imagination ever ſince.

If a participater of the cares of life in general alleviates the concerns of man, what an invaluable bleſſing muſt that lady prove, to the ſoftneſs of whoſe ſex nature hath conjoined an aptitude for council, an application, zeal, and diſpatch, but too rarely found in his own!

Had my ſituation in life been ſo happy as to have preſented me with opportunities of more frequent and minuter remarks upon your ladyſhip's conduct, I might have defied the whole Britiſh fair to have outſhone my ſouthern Gawry; for if to a majeſtick form and extenſive capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, that maternal tenderneſs, that chearfulneſs, that complacency, condeſcenſion, affability, and unaffected benevolence, which ſo apparently diſtinguiſh the Counteſs of Northumberland; I had exhibited in my Youwarkee a ſtandard for future generations.

Madam, I am the more ſenſible of my ſpeaking but the truth, from the late inſtance of your benignity, which entitles me to the honour of ſubſcribing myſelf,

Madam,

Your Ladyſhip's

Moſt obliged and

Moſt obedient Servant,

R. P.

EXPLANATION

OF

Names and Things mentioned in this Work.

A.

ABB—a room.
Apsilo—capital of Norbon.
Arco—a man who committed the first murder.
Arndrumnsiake—Pendlehamby's colambat.
Arkoe—water surrounded with wood.

B.

Barbarsa—Georigetti's favourite.
Barkatt—a husband.
Barras—a leathern apron, or flap behind.
Bash—a valet de chambre.
Battringdrigg—the name of an arkoe.
Begsurbeck—an old king of Sass Doorpt Swangeanti.
Born Isles—islands to the right-hand.
Boskee—a very grand room, or saloon.
Bott—a gourd.
Bougee—lie down.
Brandleguarp—chief city of Sass Doorpt Swangeanti.

C.

Callentar—a doctor, or surgeon.
Cluff—a captain.
Colamb—a governor.
Colambat—a government.
Colapet—a bag for provision.
Coll-war—God.
Coovett—a mansion-house or seat.
Crashdoorpt—Quangrallort's colambat, or country of the flit.
Crashee—flit.
Crullmott—a fruit tasting like a fowl.

D.

David—Peter's fourth son.
Doorpt Swangeanti—the land of flight.
Doors—a sort of apples.
Dossee—a soft thing.

E.

Emina—a rock.

F.

Felbamko—Oniwheske's nephew.
Filgay—a freeman.
Filus—a rib of the graundee.

G.

Gadsi—governor of Mount Alkoe.
Gauingrunt—a revolted town in the west.
Gawrey—a flying woman.
Georigetti—king of Sass Doorpt Swangeanti.
Glanlipze—an African who escaped with Peter.
Glumm—a flying man.
Glumm Boss—a young man.
Goppa—a father-in-law.
Gorpell—an enlign.
Gowren—women.
Graundee—the glumms wings and dress.
Gripsack—a trumpet.
Graundevolet—Peter's arkoe.
Gume—the leather between the filuses of the graundee.

H.

Hallycarnie—Youwarkee's sister, also her second daughter.
Harlokin—prince of the rebels.
Hoximo—a place to bury the dead.
Hunkum—marriage.

I.

I. O.—the chief ragam.

J.

Jahanel—the king's sister.
Jemmy—Peter's second son.

L.

Lallio—first king of Sass Doorpt Swangeanti.
Lask—a slave.
Laskmett—slavery.
Lasmeel—Peter's scholar.

M.

Maleck—Peter's man from Mount Alkoe.
Mindrack—the devil.
Mouch—a church.
Moucheratt—an assembly of the states.
Mount Alkoe—a kingdom taking name from a burning mountain.

N.

Nasgig—a common soldier made a general at the request of Peter.
Nicor—a creature of Barbarsa, the king's favourite.
Norbon—the name of the north country.

Normnbdsgrsutt

Normnbdfgrfutt—ancient name of Youwarkee's country.

O.

Oniwheſke—king of Norbon.
Ors clam gee—here am I.

P.

Padſi—a fruit taſting like fiſh.
Palang—a town.
Parky—ſweet.
Patty—Peter's eldeſt daughter, alſo his firſt wife.
Pedro—Peter's eldeſt ſon.
Peter—the author.
Pendlehamby—Youwarkee's father, the colamb of Arndrumnſtake.
Perigen—the firſt-born man.
Philella—the firſt-born woman.
Puly—an image.
Praave—modeſt.

Q.

Quangrollart—Youwarkee's brother, colamb of Craſhdoorpt.
Quilly—Peter's baſh.

R.

Ragan—a prieſt.
Razy—mighty.
Richard—Peter's fifth ſon.
Roppin—marmalade.
Roſig—Quangrallort's companion.

S.

Sary—Peter's youngeſt daughter.
Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti—Peter's new name given to Georigetti's dominions.
Slip the graundee—drawing the graundee tight to the body, by a running nooſe on a line.
Stapps—minutes.
Stygee—Oniwheſke's daughter.
Sweecoe—an inſect giving a ſtrong light in the dark.
Sweecoan—a flight with ſweecoes.
Swangean—flight.

T.

Telamine—a woman, whoſe huſband committed the firſt murder.
Tommy—Peter's ſecond ſon.

Y.

Yaccombourſe—the king's miſtreſs.
Yacom—a man child.
Youk—capital of the weſt.
Youwarkee—Peter's wife.

Z.

Zaps—lords.

THE

INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the life of another, to trouble the reader with any of my own concerns, or the affairs that led me into the South Seas. Therefore, I ſhall only acquaint him, that in my return on board the Hector, as a paſſenger, round Cape Horn, for England, full late in the ſeaſon, the wind and currents ſetting ſtrong againſt us, our ſhip drove more ſouthernly, by ſeveral degrees, than the uſual courſe, even to the latitude of 75 or 76; when the wind chopping about, we began to reſume our intended way. It was about the middle of June, when the days are there at the ſhorteſt, on a very ſtarry and moon-light night, that we obſerved at ſome diſtance a very black cloud, but ſeemingly of no extraordinary ſize or height, moving very faſt towards us, and ſeeming to follow the ſhip, which then made great way. Every one on deck was very curious in obſerving it's motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and preſently to cloſe again, and not to continue long in any determined ſhape, our captain, who had never before been ſo far to the ſouthward as he then found himſelf, had many conjectures what this phænomenon might portend; and every one offering his own opinion, it ſeemed at laſt to be generally agreed, that there might poſſibly be a ſtorm gathering in the air, of which this was the prognoſtick; and by it's following, and nearly keeping pace with us, we were in great fear leſt it ſhould break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our commander, therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the ſhip's guns to be fired, to try if the percuſſion of the air would diſperſe it. This was no ſooner done, than we heard a prodigious flounce in the water, at but a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, on the weather-quarter; and after a violent noiſe, or cry in the air, the cloud, that upon our firing diſſipated, ſeemed to return again, but by degrees diſappeared. Whilſt we were all very much ſurprized at this unexpected accident, I, being naturally very curious and inquiſitive into the cauſes of all unuſual incidents, begged the captain to ſend the boat, to ſee, if poſſible, what it was that had fallen from the cloud, and offered myſelf to make one in her. He was much againſt this at firſt, as it would retard his voyage, now we were going ſo ſmoothly before the wind. But in the midſt of our debate, we plainly heard a voice calling out for help, in our own tongue, like a perſon in great diſtreſs. I then inſiſted on going, and not ſuffering a fellow-creature to periſh for the ſake of a trifling delay. In compliance with my reſolute demand, he ſlackened ſail; and hoiſting out the boat, myſelf and ſeven others made to the cry; and ſoon found it to come from an elderly man, labouring for life, with his

arms acroſs ſeveral long poles, of equal ſize at both ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd manner. The ſailors at firſt were very fearful of aſſiſting, or coming near him; crying to each other, 'He 'muſt be a monſter!' and, perhaps, might overſet the boat and deſtroy them; but hearing him ſpeak Engliſh, I was very angry with them for their fooliſh apprehenſions, and cauſed them to clap their oars under him, and at length we got him into the boat. He had an extravagant beard, and alſo long blackiſh hair upon his head. As ſoon as he could ſpeak, (for he was almoſt ſpent) he very familiarly took me by the hand, I having ſet myſelf cloſe by him to obſerve him, and ſqueezing it, thanked me very kindly for my civility to him, and likewiſe thanked all the ſailors. I then aſked him by what poſſible accident he came there; but he ſhook his head, declining to ſatisfy my curioſity. Hereupon reflecting that it might juſt then be troubleſome for him to ſpeak, and that we ſhould have leiſure enough in our voyage for him to relate, and me to hear, his ſtory, (which, from the ſurprizing manner of his falling amongſt us, I could not but believe would contain ſomething very remarkable) I waved any farther ſpeech with him at that time.

We had him to the ſhip, and taking off his wet cloaths, put him to bed in my cabbin; and I having a large proviſion of ſtores on board, and no concern in the ſhip, grew very fond of him, and ſupplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent diſcourſes together, he had ſeveral times dropped looſe hints of his paſt tranſactions, which but the more inflamed me with impatience to hear the whole of them. About this time, having juſt begun to double the Cape, our captain thought of watering at the firſt convenient place; and finding the ſtranger had no money to pay his paſſage, and that he had been from England no leſs than thirty-five years, deſpairing of his reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him that he muſt expect to be put on ſhore to ſhift for himſelf, when we put in for water. This entirely ſunk the ſtranger's ſpirits, and gave me great concern; inſomuch that I fully reſolved, if the captain ſhould really prove ſuch a brute, to take the payment of his paſſage on myſelf.

As we came nearer to the deſtined watering, the captain ſpoke the plainer of his intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my deſign to him or any one elſe;) and one morning the ſtranger came into my cabbin, with tears in his eyes, telling me, he verily believed the captain would be as good as his word, and ſet him on ſhore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuſe to tell him immediately what I deſigned in his favour, but aſked him if he could think of no way of ſatisfying the captain, or any one elſe who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and farther, how he expected to live when he ſhould get to England, a man quite forgotten and pennyleſs. Hereupon he told me he had, ever ſince his being on board, conſidering his deſtitute condition, entertained a thought of having his adventures written; which, as there was ſomething ſo uncommon in them, he was ſure the world would be glad to know; and he had flattered himſelf with hopes of raiſing ſomewhat by the ſale of them to put him in a way of living: but as it was plain now he ſhould never ſee England without my aſſiſtance, if I would anſwer for his paſſage, and write his life, he would communicate to me a faithful

narrative

narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any charge I might be at on his account. I was very well pleaſed with this overture; not from the proſpect of gain by the copy, but from the expectation I had of being fully ſatisfied in what I had ſo long deſired to know: ſo I told him I would make him eaſy in that reſpect. This quite tranſported him: he careſſed me, and called me his deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the captain to tell him ſo. But I put a ſtop to that: 'For,' ſays I, 'though I inſiſt 'upon hearing your ſtory, the captain may yet relent of his pur-'poſe, and not leave you on ſhore; and if that ſhould prove the 'caſe, I ſhall neither part with my money for you, nor you with your 'intereſt in your adventures to me.' Whereupon he agreed I was right, and deſiſted.

When we had taken in beſt part of our water, and the boat was going it's laſt turn, the captain ordered up the ſtrange man, as they called him, and told him he muſt go on board the boat, which was to leave him on ſhore with ſome few proviſions. I happening to hear nothing of theſe orders, they were ſo ſudden, the poor man was afraid, after all, he ſhould have been hurried to land without my knowledge; but begging very hard of the captain only for leave to ſpeak with me before he went, I was called, (though with ſome reluctance; for the captain diſliked me, for the liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal behaviour.) I expoſtulated with the cruel wretch on the inhumanity of the action he was about; telling him, if he had reſolved the poor man ſhould periſh, it would have been better to have ſuffered him to do ſo, when he was at the laſt extremity, than to expoſe him afreſh, by this means, to a death as certain, in a more lingering and miſerable way. But the ſavage being reſolved, and nothing moved by what I ſaid, I paid him part of the paſſage down, and agreed to pay the reſt at our arrival in England.

Thus having reprieved the poor man, the next thing was to enter upon my new employ of amanuenſis: and having a long ſpace of time before us, we allotted two hours every morning for the purpoſe of writing down his life from his own mouth; and frequently, when wind and weather kept us below, we ſpent ſome time of an afternoon in the ſame exerciſe, till we had quite compleated it. But then there were ſome things in it ſo undeſcribable by words, that if I had not had ſome knowledge alſo in drawing, our hiſtory had been very incompleat. Thus it muſt have been, eſpecially in the deſcription of the *Glumms* and *Gawrys* therein mentioned. In order to gain (that ſo I might communicate) a clear idea of theſe, I made ſeveral drawings of them from his diſcourſes and accounts; and, at length, after divers trials, I made ſuch exact delineations, that he declared they could not have been more perfect reſemblances if I had drawn them from the life. Upon a ſurvey, he confeſſed the very perſons themſelves could not have been more exact. I alſo drew with my pencil the figure of an aërial engagement, which, having likewiſe had his approbation, I have given a draught of.

Then, having finiſhed the work to our mutual ſatisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruſe it at leiſure, intending to have preſented it

to him at our arrival in England, to diſpoſe of as he pleaſed, in ſuch a way as might have conduced moſt to his profit; for I reſolved, notwithſtanding our agreement, and the obligations he was under to me, that the whole of that ſhould be his own. But he, having been in a declining ſtate ſome time before we reached ſhore, died the very night we landed; and his funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greateſt right to the manuſcript: which, however, I had no deſign to have parted with; but ſhewing it to ſome judicious friends, I have by them been prevailed with not to conceal from the world what may prove ſo very entertaining, and perhaps uſeful.

THE

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

GIVING AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S BIRTH AND FAMILY—THE FONDNESS OF HIS MOTHER—HIS BEING PUT TO AN ACADEMY AT SIXTEEN BY THE ADVICE OF HIS FRIEND—HIS THOUGHTS OF HIS OWN ILLITERATURE.

I WAS born at Penhale, in the county of Cornwall, on the twenty-firſt day of December 1685, about four months after my father, Peter Wilkins, who was a zealous proteſtant of the church of England, had been executed by Jefferys, in Somerſetſhire, for joining in the deſign of raiſing the Duke of Monmouth to the Britiſh throne. I was named, after my father and grandfather, Peter, and was my father's only child by Alice his wife, the daughter of John Capert, a clergyman in a neighbouring village. My grandfather was a ſhopkeeper at Newport, who, by great frugality, and extraordinary application, had raiſed a fortune of about one hundred and ſixty pounds a year in lands, and a conſiderable ſum of ready-money; all which at his death devolved upon my father, as his only child; who being no leſs parſimonious than my grandfather, and living upon his own eſtate, had much improved it in value, before his marriage with my mother; but he coming to that unhappy end, my mother, after my birth, placed all her affection upon me, (her growing hopes as ſhe called me) and uſed every method, in my minority, of encreaſing the ſtore for my benefit.

In this manner ſhe went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for confinement at the apron-ſtring, being then about fourteen years of age; and having met with ſo much indulgence from her, for that reaſon, found very little or no contradiction from any body elſe; ſo I looked on myſelf as a perſon of ſome conſequence, and began to take all opportunities of enjoying the company of my neighbours, who hinted, frequently, that the reſtraint I was under, was too great a curb upon an inclination like mine of ſeeing the world: but my mother, ſtill impatient of any little abſence, by exceſſive fondneſs, and encouraging every inclination I ſeemed to have, when ſhe could be a partaker with me, kept me within bounds of reſtraint, till I arrived at my ſixteenth year.

About this time I got acquainted with a country gentleman, of a ſmall paternal eſtate, which had been never the better for being in his hands, and had ſome uneaſy demands upon it.

He

He ſoon grew very fond of me, hoping, as I had reaſon afterwards to believe, by an union with my mother, to ſet himſelf free from his entanglements. She was then about thirty-five years old, and ſtill continued my father's widow, out of particular regard to me, as I have all the reaſon in the world to believe. She was really a beautiful woman, and of a ſanguine complexion; but had always carried herſelf with ſo much reſerve, and given ſo little encouragement to any of the other ſex, that ſhe had paſſed her widowhood with very few ſolicitations to alter her way of life. This gentleman obſerving my mother's conduct, in order to ingratiate himſelf with her, had ſhewn numberleſs inſtances of regard for me; and, as he told my mother, had obſerved many things in my diſcourſe, actions, and turn of mind, that preſaged wonderful expectations from me, if my genius was but properly cultivated.

This diſcourſe, from a man of very good parts, and eſteemed by every body an accompliſhed gentleman, by degrees wrought upon my mother, and more and more inflamed her with a deſire of adding what luſtre ſhe could to my applauded abilities, and influenced her ſo far as to aſk his advice in what manner moſt properly to proceed with me. My gentleman then had his deſire; for he feared not the widow, could he but properly diſpoſe of her charge; ſo having deſired a little time to conſider of a matter of ſuch importance, he ſoon after told her he thought the moſt uſeful method of eſtabliſhing me, would be at an academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious gentleman, about thirty, or more, miles from us, in Somerſetſhire; where, if I could but be admitted, the maſter taking in but a ſtated number of ſtudents at a time, he did not in the leaſt doubt but I ſhould fully anſwer the character he had given her of me, and out-ſhine moſt of my cotemporaries.

My mother, over-anxious for my good, ſeeming to liſten to this propoſal, my friend (as I call him) propoſed taking a journey himſelf to the academy, to ſee if any place was vacant for my reception, and learn the terms of my admiſſion; and in three days time returned with an engaging account of the place, the maſter, the regularity of the ſcholars, of an apartment ſecured for my reception, and, in ſhort, whatever elſe might captivate my mother's opinion in favour of his ſcheme; and, indeed, though he acted principally from another motive, as was plain afterwards, I cannot help thinking he believed it to be the beſt way of diſpoſing of a lad, ſixteen years old, born to a pretty fortune, and who, at that age, could but juſt read a chapter in the Teſtament: for he had before beat my mother quite out of her inclination to a grammar-ſchool in the neighbourhood, from a contempt, he ſaid, it would bring upon me from lads much my juniors in years, by being placed in the firſt rudiments of learning with them.

Well, the whole concern of my mother's little family was now employed in fitting me out for my expedition; and as my friend had been ſo inſtrumental in bringing it about, he never miſſed a day enquiring how preparations went on; and, during the proceſs, by humouring me, ingratiated himſelf more and more with my mother, but without ſeeming in the leaſt to aim at it.

In ſhort, the hour of my departure arrived; and, though I had never been maſter of above ſixpence at one time, unleſs at a fair, or ſo, for immediate ſpending, my mother, thinking to make my heart eaſy at our ſeparation, (which, had it appeared otherwiſe, would have broke her's, and ſpoiled all) gave me a double piſtole in gold, and a little ſilver in my pocket to prevent my changing it.

Thus I, (the coach waiting for us at the door) having been preached into a good-liking of the ſcheme by my friend, who now inſiſted upon making one of our company to introduce us, mounted the carriage with more alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the ſmoak of his mother's chimney; but the thoughts I had conceived, from my friend's diſcourſe, of liberty in the academick way, and the weight of ſo much money in my pocket, as I then imagined would ſcarce ever be exhauſted, were prevailing cordials to keep my ſpirits on the wing. We lay at an inn that night, near the maſter's houſe, and the next day I was initiated; and, at parting with me, my friend

friend presented me with a guinea. When I found myself thus rich, I must say I heartily wished they were all fairly at home again, that I might have time to count my cash, and dispose of such part of it as I had already appropriated to several uses then in embryo.

The next morning left me master of my wishes; for my mother came and took her last (though she little thought it) leave of me, and smothering me with her caresses and prayers for my well-doing, in the heighth of her ardour, put into my hand another guinea, promising to see me again quickly; and desiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good husband, which I have since taken to be a sort of prophetick speech, she bid me farewel.

I shall not trouble you with the reception I met from my master, or his scholars; or tell you how soon I made friends of all my companions, by some trifling largesses which my stock enabled me to bestow as occasion required: but I must inform you, that, after sixteen years of idleness at home, I had but little heart to my nouns and pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldest lad in the house, I sometimes regretted the loss of the time past, and at other times despaired of ever making a scholar at my years; and was ashamed to stand like a great lubber, declining of *hæc mulier*, a woman, whilst my schoolfellows, and juniors by five years, were engaged in the love-stories of Ovid, or the luscious songs of Horace. I own these thoughts almost overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholy, of which I soon after, by letter, informed my mother; who (by the advice, as I suppose, of my friend, by this time her suitor) sent me word to mind my studies, and I should want for nothing.

CHAP. II.

HOW HE SPENT HIS TIME AT THE ACADEMY—AN INTRIGUE WITH A SERVANT-MAID THERE—SHE DECLARES HERSELF WITH CHILD BY HIM—HER EXPOSTULATIONS TO HIM—HE IS PUT TO IT FOR MONEY—REFUSED IT FROM HOME BY HIS FRIEND, WHO HAD MARRIED HIS MOTHER—IS DRAWN IN TO MARRY THE MAID—SHE LIES-IN AT HER AUNT'S—RETURNS TO HER SERVICE—HE HAS ANOTHER CHILD BY HER.

I Had now been passing my time for about three months in this melancholy way; and, you may imagine, under that disadvantage, had made but little progress in my learning; when one of our maids taking notice one day of my uneasiness, as I sat musing in my chamber according to my custom, began to rally me, that I was certainly in love, I was so sad. Indeed, I never had a thought of love before; but the good-natured girl seeming to pity me, and seriously asking me the cause, I fairly opened my heart to her; and, for fear my master should know it, gave her half-a-crown to be silent. This last engagement fixed her my devotee, and from that time we had frequent conferences in confidence together; till at length inclination, framed by opportunity, produced the date of a world of concern to me: for, about six months after my arrival at the academy, instead of proving my parts by my scholarship, I had proved my manhood, by being the destined father of an infant, which my female correspondent then assured me would soon be my own.

We, nevertheless, held on our frequent intercourse; nor was I so alarmed at the news as I ought to have been, till about two months after; when Patty (for that was the only name I then knew her by) explained herself to me in the following terms—'You 'know, Mr. Peter, how matters are 'with me; I should be very sorry, for 'your sake, and my own too, to reveal my shame; but, in spite of us 'both, nature will shew itself; and, 'truly, I think, some care should be 'taken, and some method proposed, 'to preserve the infant, and avoid, as 'far as may be, the inconveniences 'that may attend us; for here is now 'no room for delay.' This speech, I own, gave me the first reflection I ever had in my life, and locked up all my faculties for a long time; nor was I able, for the variety of ideas that crouded my brain, to make a word of answer, but stood like an image of stone; till Patty, seeing my confusion, desired

me

me to recollect my reaſon; for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that prudence and caution which the nature of the caſe required; and that, for her part, ſhe would concur in every reaſonable meaſure I ſhould approve of: but, I muſt remember, ſhe was only a ſervant, and had very little due to her for wages, and not a penny beſides that; and that there muſt neceſſarily be a preparation made for the reception of the infant, when time ſhould produce it. I now began to ſee the abſolute neceſſity of all ſhe ſaid; but how to accompliſh it was not in me to comprehend. My own ſmall matter of money was gone, and had been ſo a long time; we therefore agreed I ſhould write to my mother for a freſh ſupply. I did ſo; and, to my great confuſion, was anſwered by my former friend, in the following words—

'SON PETER,

'YOUR mother and I are much 'ſurprized you ſhould write for 'money, having ſo amply provided 'for you; but as it is not many months 'to Chriſtmas, when poſſibly we may 'ſend for you home, you muſt make 'yourſelf eaſy till then; as a ſchool-'boy, with all neceſſaries found him, 'can't have much occaſion for money.

'*Your loving father,*

'J. G.'

Imagine, if it is poſſible, my conſternation at the receipt of this letter. I began to think I ſhould be tricked out of what my father and grandfather had, with ſo much pains and induſtry, for many years been heaping up for me, and had a thouſand thoughts all together, juſtling out each other; ſo could reſolve on nothing. I then ſhewed Patty the letter, and we both condoled my hard fortune, but ſaw no remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be, as I could ſee. For my part, I was like one diſtracted, and no more able to aſſiſt, or counſel what ſhould be done, than a child in arms. At length poor Patty, who had ſat thinking ſome time, began, with telling me ſhe had formed a ſcheme which in ſome meaſure might help us; but, fearing it might be diſagreeable to me, ſhe durſt not mention it, till I ſhould aſſure her, whatever I thought of that, I would think no worſe of her for propoſing it. This preparatory introduction ſtartled me a great deal; for it darted into my head, ſhe waited for my concurrence to deſtroy the child, to which I could never have conſented. But, upon my aſſuring her that I would not think the worſe of her for whatever ſhe ſhould propoſe, but freely give her my opinion upon it, ſhe told me, as ſhe could ſee no other way before us, but what tended to our diſgrace and ruin, if I would marry her, ſhe would immediately quit her place, and retire to her aunt, who had brought her up from a child, and had enough prettily to live upon; who, ſhe did not doubt, would entertain her as my wife; but ſhe was aſſured, upon any other ſcore, or under any other name, would prove her moſt inveterate enemy. When Patty had made an end, I was glad to find it no worſe; and, revolving matters a little in my mind, both as to affairs at home, and the requeſted marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great inclination to acquaint my mother of it; but was diverted from that, by ſuſpecting it might prove a good handle for my new father, to work with my mother ſome miſchief againſt me; ſo determined to marry forthwith, ſend Patty to her aunt's, and remain ſtill at the academy myſelf, till I ſhould ſee what turn things would take at home. Accordingly, the next day, good part of Patty's wages went to tie the connubial knot, and to the honeſt parſon for a bribe to ante-date the certificate; and ſhe very ſoon after took up the reſt, to defray her journey to her aunt's.

Though Patty was within two months of her time, ſhe had ſo managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting ſafe to her aunt's, was delivered of a daughter, of which ſhe wrote me word, and ſaid, ſhe hoped to ſee me at the end of her month. 'How,' thought I, 'can ſhe expect 'to ſee me; money I have none!' and then I deſpaired of leave for a journey, if I had it; and to go without leave, would only arm J. G. againſt me, as I perceived plainly his intereſt and mine were very remote things; ſo I reſolved to quit all thoughts of a journey, and wait till opportunity better ſerved, for ſeeing my wife and child, and our good aunt, to whom

we

we were so much obliged. While these and such like cogitations engrossed my whole attention, I was most pleasingly surprized one day, upon my return from a musing walk, by the river side, at the end of our garden, where I frequently got my tasks, to find Patty sitting in the kitchen, with my old mistress, my master's mother, who managed his house, he having been a widower many years. The sight of her almost overcame me, as I had bolted into the kitchen, and was seen by my old mistress, before I had seen Patty was with her. The old lady perceiving me discomposed, enquired into the cause, which I directly imputed to the symptoms of an ague, that, I told her, I had felt upon me best part of the morning. She, a good motherly woman, feeling my pulse, and satisfying herself of it's disorder, immediately ran to her closet to bring me a cordial, which she assured me had done wonders in the like cases; so that I had but just time to embrace Patty, and enquire after our aunt and daughter, before Madam returned with the cordial. Having drank it, and given thanks, I was going to withdraw, but she would not part with me so; for nothing less than my knowledge, that this cordial was of her own making, from whence she had the receipt, and an exact catalogue of the several cures it had done, would serve her turn; which, taking up full three quarters of an hour, gave room to Patty and me to enjoy each other's glances for that time, to our mutual satisfaction. At last, the old prattlebox having made a short pause, to recover breath, from the narrative of the cordial—'Mr. 'Peter,' says she, 'you look as if you 'did not know poor Patty; she has 'not left me so long that you should 'forget her; she is a good tight wench, 'and I was sorry to part with her; 'but she is out of place, she says, and 'as that dirty creature Nan is gone, I 'think to take her again.' I told her, I well knew she was judge of a good servant, and I did not doubt Patty was such, if she thought so; and then I made my exit, lighter in heart by a pound than I came.

I shall not tire you any farther with the amours between self and Patty; but to let you know she quitted her place again seven months after, upon the same score.

CHAP. III.

MINDS HIS STUDIES—INFORMS HIS MASTER OF HIS MOTHER'S MARRIAGE, AND USAGE OF HIM—HEARS OF HER DEATH—MAKES HIS MASTER HIS GUARDIAN—GOES WITH HIM TO TAKE POSSESSION OF HIS ESTATE—IS INFORMED ALL IS GIVEN TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW—MORAL REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION, AND ON HIS FATHER'S CRIMES.

I Was now near nineteen years of age; and though I had so much more in my head than my school-learning, I know not how it happened, but ever since the commencement of my amour with Patty, having somebody to disburden my mind to, and to participate in my concerns, I had been much easier, and had kept true tally with my book, with more than usual delight; and being arrived to an age to comprehend what I heard and read, I could, from the general idea I had of things, form a pretty regular piece of Latin, without being able to repeat the very rules it was done by; so that I had the acknowledgment of my master for the best capacity he ever had under his tuition: this, he not sparing frequently to mention it before me, was the acutest spur he could have applied to my industry; and now, having his good will, I began to diffuse set hours of exercise, but at my conveniency applied myself to my studies, as I best pleased, being always sure to perform as much, or more, than he ever enjoined me; till I grew exceedingly in his confidence, and by reason of my age, (though I was but small, yet manly) I became rather his companion upon parties, than his direct pupil.

It was upon one of these parties I took the opportunity to declare the dissatisfaction I had at my mother's second marriage. 'Sir,' says I, 'surely 'I was of age to have known it first, 'especially, considering the affection 'my mother had always shewn to me, 'and my never once having done the

'leaſt thing to diſoblige her; but, 'Sir,' ſaid I, 'ſomething elſe I fear 'is intended, by my mother's ſilence 'to me; for I have never received 'above three letters from her ſince I 'came here, which is now, you know, 'three years, and thoſe were within 'the firſt three months.' I then ſhewed him the fore-mentioned letter I received from my new father-in-law, and aſſured him, that gave me the firſt hint of this ſecond marriage.

I found, by the attention my maſter gave to my relation, he ſeemed to ſuſpect this marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the ſudden, knowing what to ſay to it, he told me he would conſider of it; and, by all means, adviſed me to write a very obliging letter to my new father, with my humble requeſt, that he would pleaſe to order me home the next receſs of our learning. I did ſo, under my maſter's dictation; and not long after received an anſwer to the following effect—

'SON PETER,

'YOUR mother has been dead a 'good while; and as to your re-'queſt, it will be only expenſive, and 'of little uſe; for a perſon who muſt 'live by his ſtudies can't apply to 'them too cloſely.'

This letter, if I had a little hope left, quite ſubdued my fortitude, and well-nigh reduced me to clay. However, with tears in my eyes, I ſhewed it to my maſter; who, good man! wiſhing me well; 'Peter,' ſays he, 'what can 'this mean, here is ſome myſtery con-'cealed in it; here is ſome ill deſign 'on foot!' Then taking the letter into his hand, "A perſon who muſt live by "his ſtudies," ſays he; 'here is more 'meant than we can think for. Why, 'have not you a pretty eſtate to live 'upon, when it comes to your hands? 'Peter,' ſays he, 'I would adviſe you 'to go to your father, and enquire 'how your affairs are left; but I am 'afraid to let you go alone, and will, 'when my ſtudents depart at Chriſt-'mas, accompany you myſelf with 'all my heart; for, you muſt know, 'I have adviſed on your affair already, 'and find you are of age to chuſe your-'ſelf a guardian, who may be any 'relation or friend you can confide in; 'and may ſee you have juſtice done you.' I immediately thanked him for the hint, and begged him to accept of the truſt, as my only friend, having very few, if any near relations: this he with great readineſs complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So ſoon as our ſcholars were gone home, my maſter lending me a horſe, we ſet out together, to poſſeſs ourſelves of all my father's real eſtate, and ſuch part of the perſonal as he had been adviſed would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old houſe, but were not received with ſuch extraordinary tokens of friendſhip, as would give the leaſt room to ſuppoſe we were welcome. For my part, all I ſaid, or could ſay, was, that I was very ſorry for my mother's death. My father replied, ſo was he. Here we pauſed, and might have ſat ſilent till this time for me, if my maſter, a grave man, who had ſeen the world, and was unwilling any part of our time there, which he gueſſed would be ſhort, ſhould be loſt, had not broke ſilence. 'Mr. 'G.' ſays he, 'I ſee the loſs of Ma-'ſter Wilkins's mother puts him un-'der ſome confuſion; ſo that you will 'excuſe me, as his preceptor and 'friend, in making ſome enquiry how 'his affairs ſtand, and how his effects 'are diſpoſed; as I don't doubt you 'have taken care to ſchedule every 'thing that will be coming to him; 'and though he is not yet of the ne-'ceſſary age for taking upon himſelf 'the management of his eſtate, he is 'nevertheleſs of capacity to under-'ſtand the nature, and quantum of it, 'and to ſhew his approbation of the 'diſpoſition of it, as if he was a year 'or two older.' During this diſcourſe, Mr. G. turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himſelf; but, however, kept ſilence till my maſter had done; when, with a ſneer, he replied, 'Sir, I muſt own 'myſelf a great ſtranger to your diſ-'courſe; nor can I, for my life, ima-'gine what your harangue tends to; 'but ſure I am, I know of no eſtate, 'real or perſonal, or any thing elſe 'belonging to young Mr. Wilkins, to 'make a ſchedule of, as you call it: 'but this I know, his mother had an 'eſtate in land, near two hundred a 'year, and alſo a good ſum of money, 'when I married her; but the eſtate

'ſhe

'she settled on me before her marriage, 'to dispose of after her decease as I saw 'fit; and her money and goods are all 'come to my sole use, as her husband.' I was just ready to drop, while Mr. G. gave this relation, and was not able to reply a word; but my master, though sufficiently shocked at what he had heard, replied—'Sir, I am informed 'the estate, and also the money, you 'mention, was Mr. Wilkins's father's 'at his death; and I am surprized to 'think any one should have a better 'title to them than my pupil, his only 'child.'—'Sir,' says Mr. G. 'you 'are deceived; and though what you 'say seems plausible enough, and is in 'some part true, as that the late Mr. 'Wilkins had such estate, and some 'hundreds, I may say thousands, at his 'death; yet you seem ignorant that he 'made a deed, just before entering into 'the fatal rebellion, by which he gave 'my late wife both the estate, money, 'and every thing else he had, absolutely, 'without any conditions whatsoever; 'all which, on his unhappy execu-'tion, she enjoyed; and now of right, 'as I told you before, belongs to me: 'however, as I have no child, if Pe-'ter behaves well under your direction, 'I have thoughts of paying another 'year's board for him, and then he 'must shift for himself.'

'Oh!' cried I, 'for the mercy of 'some savage beast to devour me! Is 'this what I have been cocker'd up 'for! Why was I not placed out to 'some laborious craft, where I might 'have drudged for bread in my pro-'per station! But, I fear, it is too 'late to enquire into what is past, and 'must submit.'

My master, good man! was thunderstruck at what he had heard; and finding our business done there, we took our leaves; after Mr. G. had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my preceptor should keep me another year, which was all I must expect from him; and, at my departure, he gave me a crown-piece, which I then durst not refuse, for fear of offending my master.

We made the best of our way home again to my tutor's, where I staid but a week to consider what I should do with myself. In this time he did all he could to comfort me; telling me, if I would stay with him, and become his usher, he would compleat my learning for nothing, and allow me a salary for my trouble. But my heart was too lofty to think of becoming an usher, within so little a way from mine own estate in other hands. However, since I had not a penny of money to endeavour at recovering my right with, I told my master I would consider of his proposal.

During my stay with him, he used all methods to make me as easy as possible; and frequently moralized with so much effect, that I was almost convinced I ought to submit, and be content. Amongst the rest of his discourse, he endeavoured to shew me, (one day, after I had been loudly condemning my cruel fortune, and saying I was born to be unhappy) that I was mistaken, if I thought, or imagined, it was chance or accident that had been against me, when I complained of fortune; 'For,' says he, 'Peter, there 'is nothing done below, but is at least 'fore-known, if not decreed, above; 'and our business in life is to believe 'so: not that I would have such be-'lief make us careless, and think it to 'no purpose to strive, as some do; 'who being persuaded that our actions 'are not in our own choice, but that 'being pressed by an irresistible de-'cree we are forced to act this or 'that, fancy we must be necessarily 'happy or miserable hereafter; or, as 'others, who, for fear of falling upon 'that shocking principle, would even 'deprive the Almighty of fore-know-'ledge, lest it should consequentially 'amount to a decree—"For," say 'they, "what is fore-known, will, "and must be." But I would have 'you act so, as that, let either of these 'tenets be true, you may still be sure 'of making yourself easy and happy: 'and for that purpose let me recom-'mend to you an uniform life of justice 'and piety; always chusing the good 'rather than the bad side of every 'action; for this, say they what they 'will to the contrary, is not above the 'power of a reasonable being to prac-'tise; and doing so, you may without 'scruple say, "If there is fore-know-"ledge of my actions, or they are de-"creed, I then am one who is fore-"known or decreed to be happy." And 'this, without farther speculation, you 'will find the only means always to

'keep you so; for all men, of all denominations, fully allow this happy effect to follow good actions. Again, Peter, a person acting in a vicious course, with such an opinion in his head as above, must surely be very miserable, as his very actions themselves must pronounce the decree against him: whilst, therefore, we have not heard the decree read, you see we may easily give sentence whether it be for good or evil to us, by the tenor and course of our own actions.

'You are not now to learn, Peter, that the crimes of the father are often punished in the children, often in the father himself, sometimes in both, and not seldom in neither, in this life; and though, at first, one should think the future punishment, annexed to bad actions, was sufficient, still it is necessary some should suffer here also for an example to others; we being much more affected with what the eye sees, than what the heart only meditates upon.

'Now, to bring it to our own case: your father, Peter, rose against the lawful magistrate, to deprive him (it matters not that he was a bad one) of his lawful power. Your father's policy was such, and his design so well laid, as he thought, that upon any ill success to himself, he had secured his estate to go in the way of all others he could wish to have it, and sits down very well contented, that, happen what would, he should bite the government, in preventing the forfeiture. But, lo! his policy is as a wall of sand blown down with a puff! for it is to you it ought, even himself being umpire, to have come, as no one would think he could prize any before you his own child. Now, could he look from the grave, and know what passes here, and see Mr. G. in possession of all he fancied he had secured for you, what a weak and short-sighted creature would he find himself! If it be said, he did not know he should have a child, then herein appears God's policy beyond man's; for he knew it, and has so ordered, that that child should be disinherited; for, by the way, Peter, take this for a maxim, wherever the first principle of an action is ill, no good consequence can possibly ever be an attendant on it. Could he, as I said before, but look up and see you, his only child, undone by the very instrument he designed for your security, how pungent would be his anxiety! I say, Peter, though there is something so unaccountable, to human wisdom, in such events of things, yet there is something therein so reasonable and just withal, that by a prying eye, the Supreme Hand may very visibly be seen in them. Now, this being plainly the case before us, and herein the glory of the Almighty exalted, rest content under it, and let not this disappointment, befallen you for your father's faults, be attended with others sent down for your own; but remember this, the Hand that depresses a man, is no less able to exalt and establish him.'

CHAP. IV.

DEPARTS SECRETLY FROM HIS MASTER—TRAVELS TO BRISTOL—RELIGIOUS THOUGHTS BY THE WAY—ENTERS ON SHIPBOARD, AND IS MADE CAPTAIN'S STEWARD.

I Seemed to be very well satisfied whilst my master was speaking; but though I thought he talked like an angel, my former uneasiness seized me at parting with him. In short, without more consideration, I rose in the morning early, and marched off, having first wrote to my wife, at her aunt's, relating the state of the case to her, with my resolution to leave England the first opportunity, giving her what comfort I could, assuring her, if I ever was a gainer in life, she should not fail to be a partaker, and promising also to let her know where I settled. I walked at a great rate, for fear my master's kindness should prompt him to send after me; and taking the bye-ways, I reached by dark-night a little village, where I resolved to halt. Upon enquiry, I found myself thirty-five miles from my master's. I had eaten nothing all day, and was very hungry and weary, but my crown-piece was as yet whole; however, I fed very sparingly, being over-pressed with the distress of my affairs, and the confusion of my thoughts. I slept that night tolerably;

lerably; but the morning brought it's face of horror with it. I had enquired over night where I was, and been informed that I was not above ſixteen miles from Briſtol, for which place I then reſolved. At my ſetting out in the morning, after I had walked about three miles, and had recollected a little my maſter's laſt diſcourſe, I found by degrees my ſpirit grew calmer than it had been ſince I left Mr. G. at my houſe, (as I ſhall ever call it) and looking into myſelf for the cauſe, found another ſet of thoughts were preparing a paſſage into my mind, which did not carry half the dread and terror with them that their predeceſſors had; for I began to caſt aſide the difficulties and apprehenſions I before felt in my way, and encouraging the preſent motions, ſoon became ſenſible of the benefit of a virtuous education; and though what I had hitherto done in the immediate ſervice of God, I muſt own had been performed from force, cuſtom, and habit, and without the leaſt attention to the object of the duty; yet, as under my mother at home, and my maſter at the academy, I had been always uſed to ſay my prayers, as they called it, morning and night; I began, with a ſort of ſuperſtitious reflection, to accuſe myſelf of having omitted that duty the night before, and alſo, at my ſetting out in the morning, and very much to blame myſelf for it, and, at the ſame inſtant, even wondered at myſelf for that blame. 'What,' ſays I, 'is the real uſe of this 'praying? and to whom or to what 'do we pray? I ſee no one to pray to; 'neither have I ever thought that my 'prayers would be anſwered. It is 'true, they are worded as if we prayed 'to God: but he is in Heaven, does 'he concern himſelf with us, who can 'do him no ſervice? Can I think all my 'prayers that I have ſaid, from day to 'day, ſo many years, have been heard 'by him! No, ſure; if they had, I 'ſhould ſcarce have ſuſtained this hard 'fate in my fortune. But hold, how 'have I prayed to him? Have I as earneſtly prayed to him, as I uſed to petition my mother for any thing when 'I wanted it againſt her inclination? 'No, I can't ſay I have. And would 'my mother have granted me ſuch 'things, if ſhe had not thought I 'from my heart deſired them, when 'I uſed to be ſo earneſt with her? No, 'ſurely; I can't ſay ſhe had any reaſon for it. But I had her, indeed, 'before me; now I have not God in 'my view, he is in Heaven: yet, let 'me ſee, my maſter (and I can't help 'thinking he muſt know) uſed to ſay, 'that God is a ſpirit, and not confined 'by the incumbrance of a body, as we 'are; now, if it is ſo, why may he not 'virtually be preſent with me, though 'I don't perceive him? Why may he not 'be at once in Heaven and elſewhere? 'For, if he conſiſts not of parts, nothing 'can circumſcribe him: and, truly, I 'believe it muſt be ſo; for if he is of 'that ſupreme power as he is repreſented, he could never act in ſo unconfined a capacity, under the reſtraint of place; but if he is an operative and purely ſpiritual Being, 'then I can ſee no reaſon why his virtual eſſence ſhould not be diffuſed 'through all nature; and then, (which 'I begin to think moſt likely) why 'ſhould I not ſuppoſe him ever preſent with me, and able to hear me? 'And why ſhould not I, when I pray, 'have a full idea of the being, though 'not of any corporeal parts or form 'of God, and ſo have actually ſomewhat to be intent upon in my prayers? and not do as I have hitherto 'done, ſay ſo many words only upon 'my knees; which, I cannot help 'thinking may be as well without 'either ſenſe or meaning in themſelves, 'as without a proper object in my 'mind to direct them unto.'

Theſe thoughts agitated me at leaſt two miles, working ſtronger and ſtronger in me; till at length, burſting into tears, 'Have I been doing nothing,' ſays I, 'in the ſight of God, under 'the name of prayers, for ſo many 'years? Yes, it is certainly ſo. Well, 'by the grace of God, it ſhall be ſo no 'longer; I will try ſomewhat more.' So looking round about me, to ſee if I was quite alone, I ſtept into an adjoining copſe, and could ſcarce refrain falling on my knees, till I came to a proper place for kneeling in. I then poured forth my whole ſoul and ſpirit to God; and all my ſtrength, and every member, every faculty, was to the utmoſt employed, for a conſiderable time, in that moſt agreeable as well as uſeful duty. I would, indeed, have began with my accuſtomed prayers, and

and had repeated ſome words of them; when, as though againſt and contrary to my deſign, I was carried away by ſuch rapturous effuſions, that, to this hour, when I reflect thereon, I cannot believe but I was moved to them by a much more than human impulſe. However, this extaſy did not laſt above a quarter of an hour; but it was conſiderably longer before my ſpirits ſubſided to their uſual frame. When I had a little compoſed myſelf, how was I altered; how did I condemn myſelf for all my paſt diſquiet! what calm thanks did I return for the eaſe and ſatisfaction of mind I then enjoyed! And coming to a ſmall rivulet, I drank an hearty draught of water, and contentedly proceeding on my journey, I reached Briſtol about four o'clock in the afternoon. Having refreſhed myſelf, I went the ſame evening to the Kay, to enquire what ſhips were in the river, whither bound, and when they would depart. My buſineſs was with the ſailors, of whom there were at that time great numbers there; but I could meet with no employ, though I gave out I would gladly enter myſelf before the maſt: after I had done the beſt I could, but without ſucceſs, I returned to the little houſe I had dined at, and went to bed very penſive. I did not forget my prayers; but I could by no means be rouzed to ſuch devotion as I felt in the morning. Next day I walked again to the Kay, aſking all I met, who looked like ſeafaring men, for employment; but could hear of none, there being many waiting for births; and I feared my appearance (which was not ſo mean as moſt of that ſort of gentry is) would prove no ſmall diſappointment to my preferment that way. At laſt, being out of heart with my frequent repulſes, I went to a landing-place juſt by, and as I aſked ſome ſailors, who were putting two gentlemen on ſhore, if they wanted a hand on board their ſhip, one of the gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the maſter of a veſſel bound to the coaſt of Africa, turned back, and looking earneſtly on me, 'Young man,' ſays he, 'do you want employment on 'board?' I immediately made him a bow, and anſwered, 'Yes, Sir.' Said he, 'There is no talking in this wea-'ther,' (for it then blew almoſt a ſtorm) 'but ſtep into that tavern,' pointing to the place, 'and I will be with you 'preſently.'—I went thither, and not long after came my future maſter. He aſked me many queſtions, but the firſt was, whether I had been at ſea. I told him no; but I did not doubt ſoon to learn the duty of a ſailor. He then looked on my hand, and ſhaking his head, told me it would not do, for I had too ſoft a hand. I told him I was determined for the ſea, and that my hand and heart ſhould go together; and I hoped my hand would ſoon harden, though not my heart. He then told me, it was pity to take ſuch a pretty young fellow before the maſt; but if I underſtood accounts tolerably, and could write a good hand, he would make me his ſteward, and make it worth my while. I anſwered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his offer; but on his aſking me where my cheſt was, ('For,' ſays he, 'if the wind had 'not been ſo ſtrong againſt me, I had 'fallen down the river this morning,') I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other ſtores than I carried on my back. The captain ſmiled. Says he, 'Young man, I ſee you are a 'novice; why, the meaneſt ſailor in 'my ſhip has a cheſt, at leaſt, and 'perhaps ſomething in it: come,' ſays he, 'my lad, I like your looks; be 'diligent and honeſt, I will let you 'have a little money to ſet you out, 'and deduct it in your pay.' He was then pulling out his purſe, when I begged him, as he ſeemed to ſhew me ſo great a kindneſs, that he would order ſomebody to buy what neceſſaries he knew I ſhould want for me, or I ſhould be under as great a difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them, as I ſhould have been at for want of them. He commended my prudence, and ſaid he would buy them, and ſend them on board himſelf; ſo bid me trouble myſelf no more about them, but go to the ſhip, in the return of his boat, and ſtay there till he came; giving me a ticket to the boat's crew to take me in. When I came to the ſhore, the boat was gone off, and at a good diſtance; but I hailed them, and ſhewing my ticket, they put back, and took me ſafe to the ſhip; heartily glad that I was entered upon my new ſervice.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

HIS FIRST ENTERTAINMENT ON BOARD—SETS SAIL—HIS SICKNESS—ENGAGEMENT WITH A FRENCH PRIVATEER—IS TAKEN AND LAID IN IRONS—TWENTY-ONE PRISONERS TURNED ADRIFT IN A SMALL BOAT WITH ONLY TWO DAYS PROVISION.

BEING once on board, and in pay, I thought I was a man for myſelf, and ſet about conſidering how to behave; and nobody knowing, as yet, upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a paſſenger, as my dreſs did not at all beſpeak me a ſailor; ſo every one, as I ſauntered about, had ſomething to ſay to me. By and by comes a pert young fellow up, 'Sir,' ſays he, 'your ſervant; what, I ſee, our captain has 'picked up a paſſenger at laſt.'—'Paſſenger,' ſays I, 'you are pleaſed 'to be merry, Sir; I am no paſſenger.'—'Why, pray,' ſays he, 'what may 'you be, then?'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'the 'captain's ſteward.'—'You impertinent puppy,' ſays he, 'what an anſwer you give me; you the captain's 'ſteward! No, Sir, that place, I can 'aſſure you, is in better hands!' and away he turned.—I knew not what to think of it, but was terribly afraid I ſhould draw myſelf into ſome ſcrape. By and by, others aſked me, ſome one thing, ſome another, and I was very cautious what anſwers I made them, for fear of offence: till a graviſh ſailor came and ſat down by me; and, after talking of the weather, and other indifferent matters, 'Pray,' ſays I, 'Sir, 'who is that gentleman that was ſo 'affronted at me ſoon after I came on 'board?'—'Oh,' ſays he, 'a proud 'inſignificant fellow, the captain's 'ſteward: but don't mind him,' ſays he, 'he uſes the captain himſelf as 'bad; they have had high words juſt 'before the captain went on ſhore; 'and had he uſed me, as he did him, 'I ſhould have made no ceremony of 'tipping him over-board, a raſcal!'—Says I, 'you ſurprize me, for the 'captain ſent me on board to be his 'ſteward, and agreed with me about 'it this afternoon.'—'Huſh,' ſays he, 'I ſee how it will go; the captain, if 'that's the caſe, will diſcharge him 'when he comes on board; and, in'deed, I believe he would not have 'kept him ſo long, but we have wait'ed for a wind, and he could not pro'vide himſelf.'

The captain came on board at night; and the firſt thing he did was, to demand the keys of Mr. Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on ſhore.

The next morning the captain went on ſhore himſelf; but the wind chopping about, and ſtanding fair about noon, he returned then with my cheſt, and before night we were got into ſailing order, and before the wind, with a briſk gale.

What happened the firſt fourteen days of our paſſage I know not, having been all that time ſo ſick and weak, I could ſcarcely keep life and ſoul together; but after grew better and better. We proſecuted our voyage, touching, for about a week, at the Madeiras in our way. The captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard duty, and I paſſed my time, under his favour, very pleaſantly. One evening, being within ſixty leagues of the Cape of Palmes, calm weather, but the little wind we had againſt us, one of our men ſpied a ſail, and gave the captain notice of it. He not ſuſpecting danger, minded it little; and we made what way the wind would permit: but, night coming on, and the calm continuing, about peep of day we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a French privateer; who, hoiſting French colours, called out to us to ſtrike. Our captain had ſcarce time to conſider what to do, they were ſo near us; but as he had twenty-two men on board, and eight guns he could bring to, he called all hands on deck, and telling them the conſequence of a ſurrender, aſked them if they would ſtand by him. One and all ſwore they would fight the ſhip to the bottom, rather than fall into the privateer's hands. The captain immediately gave the word for a clear deck, prepared his fire-arms, and begged them to be active, and obey orders; and perceiving the privateer out-numbered our hands by abundance, he commanded all the ſmall arms to be brought upon deck loaded, and to run out as many of the ſhip's guns as ſhe could

bring

bring to on one ſide; and to charge them all with ſmall ſhot; then ſtand to till he gave directions.—The privateer being a light ſhip, and a ſmall breeze ariſing, run up cloſe to us; firſt firing one gun, then another, ſtill calling out to us to ſtrike; but we neither returned fire nor anſwer, till he came almoſt within piſtol-ſhot of us, and ſeeing us a ſmall veſſel, thought to board us directly; but then our captain ordered a broadſide, and immediately all hands to come on deck; himſelf ſtanding there at the time of our firſt fire with his fuſee in his hand, and near him I ſtood with another. We killed eight men and wounded ſeveral others. The privateer then fired a broadſide through and through us. By this time our hands were all on deck, and the privateer puſhing, in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a volley from thence, that did good execution; and then all hands to the ſhip's guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the ſmall arms. It is incredible how ſoon they had fired the great guns, and were on deck again. This laſt fire, being with ball, raked the privateer miſerably. Then we fired the ſmall arms, and away to the ſhip's guns. This we did three times ſucceſſively without loſs of a man; and I believe if we could have held it once more, and no aſſiſtance had come to the privateer, ſhe had ſheered quite off: but our captain ſpying a ſail at ſome diſtance behind the privateer, who lay to windward of us, and ſeeing by his glaſs it was a Frenchman, was almoſt diſmayed; the ſame ſight put courage into our enemies, who thereupon redoubled the attack; and, the firſt volley of their ſmall arms ſhot our captain in the breaſt, upon which he dropped dead without ſtirring. I need not ſay, that ſight ſhocked me exceedingly. Indeed, it diſconcerted the whole action; and though our mate, a man of good courage and experience, did all that a brave man could do to animate the men, they apparently drooped, and the loſs of the ſhip became inevitable; ſo we ſtruck, and the Frenchman boarded us.

During the latter part of the engagement, we had two men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their wounds. We, who were alive, were all ordered on board the Frenchman; who, after rifling us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the hold. Our veſſel was then ranſacked; and the other privateer, who had ſuffered much the day before, in an engagement with an Engliſh twenty-gun ſhip of war, coming up, the prize was ſent by her into port, where ſhe herſelf was to refit.

In this condition did I, and fourteen of our crew, lie for ſix weeks; till the fetters on our legs had almoſt eaten to the bone, and the ſtench of the place had well-nigh ſuffocated us.

The Glorieux (for that was the name of the privateer who took us) ſaw nothing farther in five weeks worth her notice, which very much diſcouraged the men; and, conſulting together, it was agreed to cruize more northward, between Sierra Leon and Cape de Verde; but, about noon, next day, they ſpied a ſail, coming weſt north-weſt, with a freſh gale. The captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and lie by for her. But, though ſhe diſcerned us, ſhe kept her way, bearing only more ſouthward; when the wind ſhifting to north-eaſt, ſhe ran for it, full before the wind, and we after her with all the ſail we could croud; and though ſhe was a very good ſailer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before night came pretty well up with her; but, being a large ſhip, and the evening hazy, we did not chuſe to engage her till morning. The next morning we found ſhe was ſlunk away; but we fetched her up, and, hoiſting French colours, fired a ſhot; which ſhe not anſwering, our captain run along-ſide of her, and fired a broadſide; then ſlackening upon her, a hard engagement enſued; the ſhot thumping ſo againſt our ſhip, that we priſoners, who had nothing to do in the action, expected death, one or other of us, every moment. The merchantman was ſo heavy loaded, and drew ſo much water, that ſhe was very unwieldy in action; ſo after a fight of two hours, when moſt of her rigging and maſts were cut and wounded, ſhe ſtruck. Twelve men were ſent on board her, and her captain and ſeveral officers were ordered on board us.

There were thirty-eight perſons in her, including paſſengers; all of whom, except five, and the like number which had

had been killed in the action, were sent chained into the hold to us, who had lain there almost six weeks. This prize put Monsieur into good heart, and determined him to return home with her. But in two days time, his new acquisition was found to have leaked so fast near the bottom, that before they were aware of it, the water was risen some feet. Several hands were employed to find out the leak; but all asserted it was too low to be come at: and as the pumps, with all the labour the prisoners, who were the persons put to it, could use, would not reduce it, but it still increased, they removed what goods they could into the privateer; and before they could unload it, the prize sunk.

The next thing they consulted upon, was, what to do with the prisoners, who, by the loss of the prize, were now grown too numerous to be trusted in the privateer; fearing, too, as they were now so far out at sea, by the great addition of mouths, they might soon be brought to short allowance; it was, on both accounts, resolved to give us the prize's boat, which they had saved, and turn us adrift to shift for ourselves. There were in all forty-three of us; but the privateer having lost several of their own men in the two engagements, they looked us over, and picking out two and twenty of us, who were the most likely fellows for their purpose, the remaining one and twenty were committed to the boat, with about two days provision and a small matter of ammunition, and turned out.

CHAP. VI.

THE BOAT, TWO HUNDRED LEAGUES FROM LAND, MAKES NO WAY, BUT DRIVES MORE TO SEA BY THE WIND—THE PEOPLE LIVE NINE DAYS AT QUARTER ALLOWANCE—FOUR DIE WITH HUNGER THE TWELFTH DAY—FIVE MORE THE FOURTEENTH DAY—ON THE FIFTEENTH THEY EAT ONE JUST DEAD—WANT OF WATER EXCESSIVE—SPY A SAIL—ARE TAKEN UP—WORK THEIR PASSAGE TO THE AFRICAN SHORE—ARE SENT ON A SECRET EXPEDITION—ARE WAY-LAID, TAKEN SLAVES, AND SENT UP THE COUNTRY.

WHEN we, who were in the boat, came to reflect on our condition, the prospect before us appeared very melancholy; though we had at first readily enough embraced the offer, rather than perish in so much misery as we suffered in our loathsome confinement. We now judged we were above two hundred leagues from land, in about eight degrees north latitude; and it blowing north-east, a pretty stiff gale, we could make no way, but rather lost, for we aimed at some port in Africa, having neither sail, compass, nor any other instrument to direct us; so that all the observation we could make was by the sun for running southward, or as the wind carried us, for we had lost the north-pole. As we had little above two day's provisions, we perceived a necessity of almost starving voluntarily, to avoid doing it quite; seeing it must be many days before we could reach shore, if ever we did, having visibly driven a great deal more southward than we were; nay, unless a sudden change happened, we were sure of perishing, unless delivered by some ship that Providence might send in our way. In short, the ninth day came, but no relief with it; and though we had lived at quarter allowance, and but just saved life, our food, except a little water, was all gone, and this caused us quite to despair. On the twelfth day four of our company died with hunger, in a very miserable way; and yet the survivors had not strength left to move them to pity their fellows. In truth, we had sat still, attempting nothing in several days; as we found, that unless the wind shifted, we only consumed the little strength we had left to no manner of purpose. On the fourteenth day, and in the night, five more died, and a sixth was near expiring; and yet we, the survivors, were so indolent, we would scarce lend a hand to throw them overboard. On the fifteenth day, in the morning, our carpenter, weak as he was, started up, and as the sixth man was just dead, cut his throat, and, whilst warm, would let out what blood

would flow; then, pulling off his old jacket, invited us to dinner, and cutting a large ſlice off the corpſe, devoured it with as much ſeeming reliſh as if it had been ox-beef. His example prevailed with the reſt of us, one after another, to taſte and eat; and as there had been a heavy dew or rain in the night, and we had ſpread out every thing we had of linen and woollen to receive it, we were a little refreſhed by wringing our cloaths, and ſipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the ſun, ſtowing them all cloſe together to keep in the moiſture, which ſerved us to ſuck at for two days after, a little and a little at a time; for now we were in greater diſtreſs for water, than for meat. It has ſurprized me, many times ſince, to think how we could make ſo light a thing of eating our fellow-creature juſt dead before our eyes; but I will aſſure you, when we had once taſted, we looked on the bleſſing to be ſo great, that we cut and eat with as little remorſe as we ſhould have had for feeding on the beſt meat in an Engliſh market: and moſt certainly, when this corpſe had failed, if another had not dropped by fair means, we ſhould have uſed foul, by murdering one of our number as a ſupply for the reſt.

Water, as I ſaid before, to moiſten our mouths, was now our greateſt hardſhip, for every man had ſo often drank his own, that we voided ſcarce any thing but blood, and that but a few drops at a time; our mouths and tongues were quite flayed with drought, and our teeth juſt falling from our jaws; for, though we had tried, by placing all the dead men's jackets and ſhirts one over another, to ſtrain ſome of the ſea-water through them by ſmall quantities, yet that would not deprive it of it's pernicious qualities; and though it refreſhed a little in going down, we were ſo ſick, and ſtrained ourſelves ſo much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miſerable than before. Our corpſe now ſtunk ſo, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on board, and every man began to look with an evil eye on his fellow, to think whoſe turn it would be next; for the carpenter had ſtarted the queſtion, and preached us into the neceſſity of it; and we had agreed, the next morning, to put it to the lot who ſhould be the ſacrifice. In this diſtreſs of thought, it was ſo ordered, by good Providence, that, on the twenty-firſt day, we thought we ſpied a ſail coming from the north-weſt, which cauſed us to delay our lots till we ſhould ſee whether it would diſcover us or not: we hung up ſome jackets upon our oars to be ſeen as far off as we could, but had ſo little ſtrength left we could make no way towards it; however, it happened to direct it's courſe ſo much to our relief, that, an hour before ſun-ſet, it was within a league of us, but ſeemed to bear away more eaſtward, and our fear was, that they ſhould not know our diſtreſs, for we were not able to make any noiſe from our throats that might be heard fifty yards; but the carpenter, who was ſtill the beſt man amongſt us, with much ado, getting one of the guns to go off, in leſs than half an hour ſhe came up with us, and, ſeeing our deplorable condition, took us all on board, to the number of eleven. Though no methods were uneſſayed for our recovery, four more of us died in as many days. When the remaining ſeven of us came a little to ourſelves, we found our deliverers were Portugueſe, bound for Saint Salvadore. We told the captain, we begged he would let us work our paſſage with him, be it where it would, to ſhore; and then, if we could be of no farther ſervice to him, we did not doubt getting into Europe again: but, in the voyage, as we did him all the ſervice in our power, we pleaſed him ſo well, that he engaged us to ſtay with him, to work the ſhip home again, he having loſt ſome hands by fevers ſoon after his ſetting ſail.

We arrived ſafe in port; and, in a few days, the captain, who had a ſecret enterprize to take in hand, hired a country coaſting-veſſel, and ſent her ſeventeen leagues farther on the coaſt for orders from ſome factory or ſettlement there. I was one of the nine men who were deſtined to conduct her; but, not underſtanding Portugueſe, I knew little of the buſineſs we went upon. We were to coaſt it all the way; but, on the tenth day, juſt at ſun-riſe, we fell in with a fleet of boats, which had way-laid us, and were taken priſoners. Being carried

aſhore,

aſhore, we were conducted a long way up the country, where we were impriſoned, and almoſt ſtarved; though I never knew the meaning of it; nor did any of us, unleſs the mate, who, we heard, was carried up the country, much farther, to Angola; but we never heard more of him, though we were told he would be ſent back to us.

Here we remained under confinement almoſt three months, at the end of which time our keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us two and two together, ſent a guard with us to Angola; when, croſſing a large river, we were ſet to work in removing the rubbiſh and ſtones of a caſtle, or fortreſs, which had been lately demoliſhed by an earthquake and lightning. Here we continued about five months, being very ſparingly dieted, and locked up every night.

This place, however, I thought a paradiſe to our former dungeon; and, as we were not over-worked, we made our lives comfortable enough, having the air all day to refreſh us from the heat, and not wanting for company; for there were, at leaſt, three hundred of us about the whole work; and I often fancied myſelf at the tower of Babel, each labourer, almoſt, ſpeaking in a language of his own.

Towards the latter end of our work, our keepers grew more and more remiſs in their care of us. At my firſt coming thither, I had contracted a familiarity with one of the natives, but of a different kingdom, who was then a ſlave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to underſtand each other, he hinted to me, one day, the deſire he had of ſeeing his own country and family; who neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, ſince he had left them, ſeven years before, to make war in this kingdom; and inſinuated, that as he had taken a great liking to me, if I would endeavour to eſcape with him, and we ſucceeded, he would provide for me; 'For,' ſays he, 'you ſee, now our 'work is almoſt over, we are but 'ſlightly guarded; and if we ſtay till 'this job is once finiſhed, we may be 'commanded to ſome new works, at 'the other end of the kingdom, for 'aught we know; ſo that our labours 'will only ceaſe with our lives; and, 'for my part, immediate death, in the 'attempt of liberty, is to me prefer-'able to a lingering life of ſlavery.'

Theſe, and ſuch like arguments, prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled moſt of the country before, in the wars of the different nations; ſo, having taken our reſolution, the following evening, ſoon after our day's work, and before the time came for locking up, we withdrew from the reſt, but within hearing; thinking, if we ſhould then be miſſed, and called, we would appear, and make ſome excuſe for our abſence, but if not, we ſhould have the whole night before us.

When we were firſt put upon this work, we were called over ſingly, by name, morning and evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly obſerved in our motions; but not one of us having been ever abſent, our actions were at length much leſs minded than before, and the ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; ſo that we concluded, if we got away unobſerved the firſt night, we ſhould be out of the reach of purſuers by the next; which was the ſooneſt it was poſſible for them to overtake us, as we propoſed to travel the firſt part of our journey with the utmoſt diſpatch.

CHAP. VII.

THE AUTHOR ESCAPES WITH GLANLIPZE, A NATIVE—THEIR HARDSHIPS IN TRAVEL—PLUNDER OF A COTTAGE — HIS FEARS — ADVENTURE WITH A CROCODILE—PASSAGE OF A RIVER—ADVENTURE WITH A LIONESS AND WHELP — ARRIVE AT GLANLIPZE'S HOUSE—THE TRIAL OF GLANLIPZE'S WIFE'S CONSTANCY — THE TENDER MEETING OF HER AND HER HUSBAND—THE AUTHOR'S REFLECTIONS THEREUPON.

HAVING now ſet out with all poſſible ſpeed, we ſeemed to each other as joyful as we could; though it cannot be ſuppoſed we had no fears in our minds, the firſt part of our journey, for we had many; but as our way advanced our fears ſubſided; and having

ing, with ſcarce any delay, puſhed forwards for the firſt twenty-four hours, nature then began to have two very preſſing demands upon us, food and reſt; but as one of them was abſolutely out of our power to comply with, ſhe contented herſelf with the other, till we ſhould be better able to ſupply her, and gave a farther time till the next day.

The next morning found us very empty, and ſharp ſet, though a very ſound night's reſt had contributed it's utmoſt to refreſh us. But what added much to our diſcomfort was, that though our whole ſubſiſtence muſt come from fruits, there was not a tree to be found at a leſs diſtance than twelve leagues, in the open rocky country we were then in; but a good draught of excellent water we met with, did us extraordinary ſervice, and ſent us with much better courage to the woods, though they were quite out of the way of our rout: there, by divers kinds of fruits, which, though my companion knew very well, I was quite a ſtranger to, we ſatisfied our hunger for the preſent, and took a moderate ſupply for another opportunity. This retarded our journey very much, for in ſo hard travel every pound weighed ſix before night.

I cannot ſay this journey, though bad enough, would have been ſo diſcouraging, but for the trouble of fetching our proviſions ſo far; and then, if we meant not to loſe half the next day in the ſame manner, we muſt double load ourſelves, and delay our progreſs by that means; but we ſtill went on, and in about eight days got quite clear of Angola.

On the eighth day, my companion, whoſe name was Glanlipze, told me we were very near the confines of Congo, but there was one little village ſtill in Angola, by which we muſt paſs, within half a league; and, if I would agree to it, he would go ſee what might be got here to ſupply ourſelves with. I told him I was in an unknown world, and would follow wherever he ſhould lead me; but aſked him if he was not afraid of the people, as he was not of that country. He told me, as there had been wars between them and his country for aſſiſting their neighbours of Congo, he was not concerned for any miſchief he ſhould do them, or they him; 'But,' ſays he, 'you have a knife in your pocket, 'and with that we will cut two ſtout 'clubs, and then follow me, fear no-'thing.'

We ſoon cut our clubs, and marching on, in the midſt of ſome ſmall ſhrubs, and a few ſcattering trees, we ſaw a little hovel, larger, indeed, but worſe contrived, than an Engliſh hog-ſtye, to which we boldly advanced; and Glanlipze entering firſt, ſaluted an old man, who was lying on a parcel of ruſhes. The man attempted to run away, but Glanlipze ſtopped him, and we tied his hands and feet. He then ſet up ſuch a hideous howl, that, had not Glanlipze threatened to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raiſed the whole village upon us: but we quieted him; and, rummaging to find proviſion, which was all we wanted, we, by good luck, ſpied beſt part of a goat hanging up behind a large mat at the farther end of the room. By this time in comes a woman with two children, very ſmall. This was the old man's daughter, of about five and twenty. Glanlipze bound her alſo, and laid her by the old man; but the two children we ſuffered to lie untied. We then examined her; who told us the old man was her father, and that her huſband, having killed a goat that morning, was gone to carry part of it to his ſiſter; that they had little or no corn; and finding we wanted victuals, ſhe told us there was an earthen pot we might boil ſome of the goat in if we pleaſed.

Having now ſeen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our bundle; when a muletto, very gently, put his head into the door-way: him Glanlipze immediately ſeized; and, bidding me fetch the great mat and the goat's fleſh, he, in the mean time, put a long rope he found there about the beaſt's neck, and laying the mat upon him, we packed up the goat's fleſh, and a little corn, in a calabaſh-ſhell; and then, turning up the mat round about, ſkewered it together, and over all we tied the earthen pot; Glanlipze crying out, at every thing we loaded, 'It is 'no hurt to plunder an enemy!' and ſo we marched off.

I own, I had greater apprehenſions from this adventure than from any thing before; 'For,' ſays I, 'if the 'woman's

'woman's husband returns soon, or 'if she or her father can release them-'selves, they will raise the whole vil-'lage upon us, and we are undone.' But Glanlipze laughed at me; saying, we had not an hour's walk out of the Angola dominions, and that the King of Congo was at war with them, in helping the King of Loango, whose subject himself was; and that the Angolans durst not be seen out of their bounds on that side the kingdom; for there was a much larger village of Congovians in our way, who would certainly rise and destroy them, if they came in any numbers amongst them; and though, the war being carried on near the sea, the borders were quiet, yet, upon the least stir, the whole country would be in arms, whilst we might retire through the woods very safely.

Well, we marched on, as fast as we could, all the remainder of that day, till moon-light, close by the skirt of a long wood, that we might take shelter therein, if there should be occasion; and my eyes were the best part of the way behind me; but neither hearing nor seeing any thing to annoy us, and finding by the declivity of the ground we should soon be in some plain or bottom, and have a chance of water for us all, and pasture for our muletto, which was now become one of us, we would not halt till we found a bottom to the hill; which in half an hour more we came to, and in some minutes after to a rivulet of fine clear water, where we resolved to spend the night. Here we fastened our muletto by his cord to a stake in the ground; but perceiving him not to have sufficient range to fill his belly in before morning, we, under Glanlipze's direction, cut several long slips from the mat, and soaking them well in water, twisted them into a very strong cord, of sufficient length, for the purpose. And now, having each of us brought a bundle of dry fallen sticks from the wood with us, and gathered two or three flints as we came along, we struck fire on my knife upon some rotten wood, and boiled a good piece of our goat's flesh; and having made such a meal as we had neither of us made for many months before, we laid us down and slept heartily till morning.

As soon as day broke we packed up our goods; and, filling our calabash with water, we loaded our muletto, and got forward very pleasantly that day, and several others following, and had tolerable lodgings.

About noon, one day, travelling with great glee, we met an adventure which very much daunted me, and had almost put a stop to my hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great river, whose name I have now forgot, near a league over, but full, and especially about the shores, of large trees that had fallen from the mountains, and been rolled down with the floods, and lodged there in a shocking manner. This river, Glanlipze told me, we must pass: for my part, I shrunk at the sight of it, and told him, if he could get over, I would not desire to prevent his meeting with his family; but, as for my share, I had rather take my chance in the woods on this side, than plunge myself into such a stream only for the sake of drowning. 'Oh!' says Glanlipze, 'then you can't swim?' —'No,' says I, 'there's my misfor-'tune.'—'Well,' says the kind Glanlipze, 'be of good heart, I'll have 'you over.' He then bade me go cut an armful of the tallest of the reeds that grew there near the shore, whilst he pulled up another where he then was, and bring them to him. The side of the river sloped for a good way with an easy descent, so that it was very shallow where the reeds grew, and they stood very close together upon a large compass of ground. I had no sooner entered the reeds a few yards, to cut some of the longest, but (being about knee-deep in the water and mud, and every step raising my feet very high to keep them clear of the roots, which were matted together) I thought I had trod upon a trunck of one of the trees, of which, as I said, there was such plenty thereabouts; and, raising my other foot, to get that also upon the tree, as I fancied it, I found it move along with me; upon which I roared out, when Glanlipze, who was not far from me, imagining what was the matter, cried out—'Leap off, and 'run to shore to the right!' I knew not yet what was the case, but did as I was bid, and gained the shore. Looking back, I perceived the reeds shake and rustle all the way to the shore, by degrees, after me. I was terribly frighted,

ened, and ran to Glanlipze, who then told me the danger I had escaped, and that what I took for a tree was certainly a large alligator or crocodile.

My blood ran chill within me, at hearing the name of such a dangerous creature; but he had no sooner told me what it was, than out came the most hideous monster I had ever seen. Glanlipze ran to secure the muletto; and then, taking the cord which had fastened him, and tying it to each end of a broken arm of a tree that lay on the shore, he marched up to the crocodile without the least dismay, and beginning near the tail, with one leg on one side, and the other on the other side, he straddled over him, still mending his pace as the beast crept forward till he came to his fore-feet; then throwing the great log before his mouth, he, by the cord in his hand, bobbed it against the creature's nose, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the muletto; then of a sudden, jerking the wood between his jaws with all his force by the cord, he gagged the beast, with his jaws wide open up to his throat, so that he could neither make use of his teeth, nor shut his mouth; he then threw one end of the cord upon the ground, just before the creature's under-jaw, which, as he by degrees crept along over it, came out behind his fore-legs on the contrary side; and serving the other end of it in the same manner, he took up those ends and tied them over the creature's back, just within his fore-legs, which kept the gag firm in his mouth; and then calling out to me, (for I stood at a good distance) 'Peter,' says he, 'bring me your knife!' I trembled at going so near; for the crocodile was turning his head this way and that very uneasy, and wanting to get to the river again; but yet I carried it, keeping as much behind him as I could, still eyeing him which way he moved, and at length tossed my knife so near that Glanlipze could reach it; and he, just keeping behind the beast's fore-feet, and leaning forward, first darted the knife into one eye, and then into the other; and immediately leaping from his back, came running to me. 'So, Peter,' says he, 'I have 'done the business.'—'Aye! business 'enough, I think,' says I, 'and more 'than I would have done to have been 'King of Congo.'—'Why, Peter,' says he, 'there is nothing but a man 'may compass by resolution, if he takes 'both ends of a thing in his view at 'once, and fairly deliberates on both 'sides what may be given and taken 'from end to end. What you have seen 'me perform, is only from a thorough 'notion I have of this beast, and of 'myself, how far each of us hath 'power to act and counter-act upon 'the other, and duly applying the 'means.—But,' says he, 'this talk 'will not carry us across the river.—'Come, here are the reeds I have 'pulled up, which, I believe, will be 'sufficient without any more, for I 'would not overload the muletto.'—'Why,' says I, 'is the muletto to 'carry them?'—'No, they are to carry you,' says he. 'I can never ride 'upon these,' says I. 'Hush!' says he, 'I'll not lose you, never fear. Come, 'cut me a good tough stick, the length 'of these reeds.'—'Well,' says I, 'this 'is all conjuration; but I don't see a 'step towards my getting over the river yet, unless I am to ride the muletto upon these reeds, and guide myself 'with the stick.'—'I must own, Peter,' says he, 'you have a bright guess.' So, taking an armful of the reeds, and laying them on the ground, 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'lay that stick upon those 'reeds, and tie them tight at both 'ends.' I did so. 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'lay yourself down upon them.' I then laying myself on my back, lengthwise, upon the reeds, Glanlipze laughed heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my breast upon the reeds at the height of my arm-pits; and then taking a handful of the reeds he had reserved by themselves, he laid them on my back, tying them to the bundle close at my shoulders, and again at the ends. 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'stand up;' which I did, but it was full as much as I could do. I then seeing Glanlipze laughing at the figure I cut, desired him to be serious, and not put me upon losing my life for a joke; for I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear; and, looking more soberly, ordered me to walk to the river, and so stand just within the bank till he came; then leading the muletto to me, he tied me to her, about a yard from the tail, and, taking the cord in his hand, led the muletto and me into the water. We had not gone far before my

Plate II.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 9, 1783.

my guide began to ſwim; then the muletto and I were preſently chin-deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every moment: however, having gone ſo far, I was aſhamed to cry out; when, getting out of my depth, and my reeds coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the eaſe imaginable: my conductor guiding us between the trees ſo dexterouſly, that not one accident happened to either of us all the way, and we arrived ſafe on the oppoſite ſhore.

We had now got into a very low, cloſe, ſwampy country, and our goat's fleſh began to be very ſtale through the heat, not only of the ſun, but the muletto's back: however, we pleaſed ourſelves we ſhould have one more meal of it before it was too bad to eat; ſo, having travelled about three miles from the river, we took up our lodging on a little riſing, and tied our muletto in a valley about half a furlong below us, where he made as good a meal in his way as we did in ours.

We had but juſt ſupped, and were ſauntering about to find the eaſieſt ſpot to ſleep on, when we heard a ruſtling and a grumbling noiſe in a ſmall thicket juſt on our right; which ſeeming to approach nearer and nearer, Glanlipze rouzed himſelf, and was on his legs juſt time enough to ſee a lioneſs, and a ſmall whelp which accompanied her, within thirty yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards gueſſed, for the ſake of our goat's fleſh, which now ſmelt very ſtrong. Glanlipze whipped on the contrary ſide of the fire to that where the goat's fleſh lay, and fell to kicking the fire about at a great rate, which being made of dry wood, cauſed innumerable ſparks to fly about us; but the beaſts ſtill approaching in a couchant manner, and ſeizing the ribs of the goat, and other bones, (for we had only cut the fleſh off) and grumbling and cracking them like rotten twigs, Glanlipze ſnatched up a fire-brand, flaming, in each hand, and made towards them; which ſight ſo terrified the creatures, that they fled with great precipitation to the thicket again.

Glanlipze was a little uneaſy at the thoughts of quitting ſo good a lodging as we had found, but yet held it beſt to move farther; for as the lions had left the bones behind them, we muſt expect another viſit if we ſtaid there, and could hope for no reſt; and, above all, we might poſſibly loſe our muletto; ſo we removed our quarters two miles farther, where we ſlept with great tranquillity.

Reflections on the nature of mankind have often aſtoniſhed me. I told you at firſt my thoughts concerning prayer, in my journey to Briſtol, and of the benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the neceſſity of it; which one would think was a ſufficient motive to a reaſonable creature to be conſtant in it; and yet, it is too true that, notwithſtanding the difficulties I had laboured under, and hardſhips I had undergone, and the danger of ſtarving at ſea or being murdered for food by my fellows, when there was as urgent a neceſſity of begging divine aſſiſtance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, nor of the Object of it, nor returned thanks for my being delivered, till the lioneſs had juſt left me; and then I felt near the ſame force, urging me to return thanks for my eſcape, as I had impelling me to prayer before; and I think I did ſo with great ſincerity.

I ſhall not trouble you with a relation of the common accidents of our journey, which laſted two months and better, nor with the different methods we uſed to get ſubſiſtence; but ſhall at once conduct you to Quamis; only mentioning that we were ſometimes obliged to go about, and were once ſtopped by a cut that my guide and companion received by a ragged ſtone in his foot, which growing very bad almoſt deprived me of the hopes of his life; but, by reſt, and conſtant ſucking and licking it, which was the only remedy we had to apply, except green leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his direction, to ſupple and cool it, he ſoon began to be able to ride upon the muletto, and ſometimes to walk a little.

I ſay, we arrived at Quamis, a ſmall place on a river of that name, where Glanlipze had a neat dwelling, and left a wife and five children when he went out to the wars. We were very near the town when the day cloſed; and, as it is ſoon dark there after ſunſet, you could but juſt ſee your hand at our entrance into it. We met nobody in the way, but I went directly to Glanlipze's door, by his direction,

and

and ſtruck two or three ſtrokes hard againſt it with my ſtick. On this there came a woman to it ſtark-naked. I aſked her, in her own language, if ſhe knew one Glanlipze. She told me, with a deep ſigh, that once ſhe did. I aſked then, where he was. She ſaid with their anceſtors, ſhe hoped, for he was the greateſt warrior in the world; but, if he was not dead, he was in ſlavery. Now, you muſt know, Glanlipze had a mind to hear how his wife took his death, or ſlavery, and had put me upon aſking theſe queſtions before he diſcovered himſelf. I proceeded then to tell her, I brought ſome news of Glanlipze, and was lately come from him, and by his order. 'And does 'my dear Glanlipze live!' ſays ſhe, flying upon my neck, and almoſt ſmothering me with careſſes, till I begged her to forbear, or ſhe would ſtrangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a light, when ſhe ſaw I was a white man, ſhe ſeemed in the utmoſt confuſion at her own nakedneſs; and, immediately retiring, ſhe threw a cloth round her waiſt, and came to me again. I then repeated to her, that her huſband was alive and well, but wanted a ranſom to redeem himſelf, and had ſent me to ſee what ſhe could any ways raiſe for that purpoſe. She told me, ſhe and her children had lived very hardly ever ſince he went from her, and ſhe had nothing to ſell, or make money of, but her five children; that, as this was the time for the ſlaving-trade, ſhe would ſee what ſhe could raiſe by them, and if that would not do, ſhe would ſell herſelf and ſend him the money, if he would let her know how to do it.

Glanlipze, who heard every word that paſſed, finding ſo ſtrong a proof of his wife's affection, could hold out no longer; but, burſting into the room, claſped her in his arms, crying, 'No, 'Zulika!' (for that was her name) 'I 'am free; there will be no occaſion for 'your or my dear children's ſlavery; 'and rather than have purchaſed 'my freedom at that rate, I would 'willingly have died a ſlave myſelf. 'But my own ears have heard the tender ſentiments my Zulika has for 'me.' Then, drowned in tears of joy, they embraced each other ſo cloſe, and ſo long, that I thought it impertinent to be ſeen with them, till their firſt tranſports were over. So I retired without the houſe, till Glanlipze called me in, which was not in leſs than full half an hour. I admired at the love and conſtancy of the perſons I had juſt left behind me; and, 'Good 'Heaven,' thinks I to myſelf, with a ſigh, 'how happy has this our eſcape 'rendered Glanlipze and his wife! 'what a mutual felicity do they feel! 'And what is the cauſe of all this? Is 'it that he has brought home great 'treaſures from the wars? Nothing 'like it; he is come naked. Is it that, 'having eſcaped ſlavery and poverty, 'he is returned to an opulent wife, 'abounding with the good things of 'life? No ſuch thing. What, then, 'can be the cauſe of this exceſs of ſatisfaction, this alternate joy, that 'Patty and I could not have been as 'happy with each other? Why, it was 'my pride that interpoſed and prevented it. But what am I like to 'get by it, and by all this travel, and 'theſe hazards? Is this the way to 'make a fortune, to get an eſtate? No, 'ſurely, the very contrary. I could 'not, forſooth, labour for Patty and 'her children, where I was known; 'but am I any better for labouring 'here, where I am not known, where 'I have nobody to aſſiſt me, than I 'could have been where I am known, 'and where there would have been my 'friends about me, at leaſt, if they 'could have afforded no great aſſiſtance? I have been deceived, then, and 'have travelled ſo many thouſand 'miles, and undergone ſo many dangers, only to know, at laſt, I had 'been happier at home; and have 'doubled my miſery, for want of conſideration, that very conſideration 'which, impartially taken, would have 'convinced me I ought to have made 'the beſt of my bad circumſtances, 'and to have laid hold of every commendable method of improving them. 'Did I come hither to avoid daily 'labour or voluntary ſervitude at 'home? I have had it in abundance. 'Did I come hither to avoid poverty 'and contempt? Here I have met with 'them ten-fold. And now, after all, 'was I to return home empty and 'naked, as Glanlipze has done; ſhould 'I meet a wife, as bare as myſelf, 'ſo ready to die in my embraces, 'and to be a ſlave herſelf, with her 'children, for my ſake only? I fear 'not!'

Theſe

These and the like reflections had taken poſſeſſion of me, when Glanlipze called me in; where I found his wife, in her manner, preparing our ſupper, with all that chearfulneſs which gives a true luſtre to innocence.

The buſtle we made had by this time awakened the children; who, ſtark-naked, as they were born, both boys and girls, came crawling out, and black as jett, from behind a curtain at the farther end of the room, which was very long. The father, as yet, had only enquired after them; but, upon ſight of them, he fell into an extaſy, kiſſing one, ſtroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldeſt was ſcarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for ſeven years makes a great chaſm in young memories. The more I ſaw of this ſport the ſtronger impreſſions Patty and my own children made upon me. My mind had been ſo much employed on my own diſtreſſes, that thoſe dear ideas were almoſt effaced; but this moving ſcene introduced them afreſh, and imprinted them deeply on my imagination, which cheriſhed the ſweet remembrance.

CHAP. VIII.

HOW THE AUTHOR PASSED HIS TIME WITH GLANLIPZE—HIS ACQUAINTANCE WITH SOME ENGLISH PRISONERS—THEY PROJECT AN ESCAPE—HE JOINS THEM—THEY SEIZE A PORTUGUESE SHIP, AND GET OFF—MAKE A LONG RUN FROM LAND—WANT WATER—THEY ANCHOR AT A DESART ISLAND—THE BOAT GOES ON SHORE FOR WATER—THEY LOSE THEIR ANCHOR IN A STORM—THE AUTHOR AND ONE ADAMS DROVE TO SEA—A MIRACULOUS PASSAGE TO A ROCK—ADAMS DROWNED THERE—THE AUTHOR'S MISERABLE CONDITION.

I Paſſed my time with Glanlipze and his wife, who both really loved me, with ſufficient bodily quiet, for about two years: my buſineſs was chiefly in company with my patron, to cultivate a ſpot of ground wherein we had planted grain and neceſſaries for the family; and once or twice a week we went a fiſhing, and ſometimes hunted and ſhot veniſon. Theſe were our chief employments; for as to excurſions for ſlaves, which is a practice in many of thoſe countries, and what the natives get money by, ſince our own ſlavery, Glanlipze and I could not endure it.

Though I was tolerably eaſy in my external circumſtances, yet my mind hankering after England made my life ſtill unhappy; and that infelicity daily increaſed, as I ſaw the leſs probability of attaining my deſire. At length, hearing of ſome European ſailors, who were under confinement for contraband trade, at a Portugueſe fort about two leagues from Quamis, I reſolved to go to ſee them; and, if any of them ſhould be Engliſh, at leaſt to enquire after my native country. I went, and found two Dutchmen, who had been ſailors in Britiſh pay ſeveral years, three Scotchmen, an Iriſhman, and five Engliſhmen, but all had been long in Engliſh merchants ſervice. They were taken, as they told me, by a Portugueſe veſſel, together with their ſhip, as a Dutch prize, under pretence of contraband trade. The captain was known to be a Dutchman, though he ſpoke good Engliſh, and was then in Engliſh pay, and his veſſel Engliſh; therefore they would have it that he was a Dutch trader, and ſo ſeized his ſhip in the harbour, with the priſoners in it. The captain, who was on ſhore with ſeveral of his men, was threatened to be laid in irons, if he was taken; which obliged him and his men to abſcond, and fly over land, to an Engliſh factory, for aſſiſtance to recover his ſhip and cargo; being afraid to appear and claim it, amongſt ſo many enemies, without an additional force. They had been in confinement two months, and their ſhip confiſcated and ſold. In this miſerable condition I left them, but returned once or twice a week, for a fortnight or three weeks, to viſit them. Theſe inſtances of regard, as they thought them, created ſome confidence in me, ſo that they converſed with me very freely. Amongſt other diſcourſe, they told me, one day, that one of their crew, who went with the captain, had been taken ill on the way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good Portugueſe, he was not ſuſpected to belong to them; and that he had been

to visit them, and would be there again that day. I had a mind to see him, so staid longer than I intended, and in about an hour's time he came. After he was seated, he asked who I was, and (privately) if I might be trusted. Being satisfied I might, for that I was a Cornish man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to see he was not overheard: 'My lads,' says he, 'be of good courage, I have hopes for 'you; be but men, and we shall see 'better days yet.' I wondered to what this preface tended; when he told us, that since his return from the captain, as he spoke good Portuguese, and had sailed on board Portuguese traders several years, he mixed among that people, and particularly among the crew of the Del Cruz, the ship which had taken them; that that ship had partly unloaded, and was taking in other goods for a future voyage; that he had informed himself of their strength, and that very seldom more than three men and two boys lay on board; that he had hired himself to the captain, and was to go on board the very next day. 'Now,' says he, 'my lads, if you can break prison any 'night after to-morrow, and come di-'rectly to the ship,' (telling them how she lay, 'for,' says he, 'you cannot 'mistake, you will find two or three 'boats moored in the gut against the 'church) I will be ready to receive 'you, and we will get off with her, 'in lieu of our ship they have taken 'from us, for there is nothing ready 'to follow us.'

The prisoners listened to this discourse very attentively; but scratched their heads, fearing the difficulty of it, and severer usage if they miscarried, and made several objections; but, at last, they all swore to attempt it the night but one following. Upon which the sailor went away, to prepare for their reception on board. After he was gone, I surveyed his scheme attentively in my own mind, and found it not so difficult as I first imagined, if the prisoners could but escape cleverly. So, before I went away, I told them I approved of their purpose; and as I was their countryman, I was resolved, with their leaves, to risk my fortune with them. At this they seemed much pleased, and all embraced me. We then fixed the peremptory night, and I was to wait at the water-side, and get the boats in readiness.

The prison they were in was a Portuguese fort, which had been deserted ever since the building a much better on the other side of the river, a gun-shot lower. It was built with walls too thick for naked men to storm; the captives were securely locked up every night; and two soldiers or centinels, kept watch in an outer-room, who were relieved from the main-guard in the body of the building.

The expected night arrived; and a little before midnight, as had been concerted, one of the prisoners cried out, he was so parched up, he was on fire, he was on fire! The centinels were both asleep; but the first that waked, called at the door, to know what was the matter; the prisoner still crying out, 'I am on fire!' the rest begged the centinel to bring a bowl of water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

The good-natured fellow, without waking his companion, brought the water, and having a lamp in the guard-room, opened the door; when the prisoners seizing his arms, and commanding him to silence, bound his hands behind him, and his feet together; then serving the other in the same manner, who was now just awake, and taking from them their swords and musquets, they made the best of their way over the fort-wall; which, being built with buttresses on the inside, was easily surmounted. Being got out, they were not long in finding me, who had before this time made the boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; so in we all got, and made good speed to the ship, where we were welcomed by our companion, ready to receive us.

Under pretence of being a new-entered sailor, he had carried some Madeira wine on board, and treated the men and boys so freely, that he had thrown them into a dead sleep; which was a wise precaution. There being now, therefore, no fear of disturbance or interruption, we drew up the two boats, and set all hands at work to put the ship under way; and plied it so closely, the wind favouring us, that by eleven o'clock the next morning we were

were out of ſight of land; but we ſet the men and boys adrift, in one of the boats, nigh the mouth of the river.

The firſt thing we did, after we had made a long run from ſhore, was to conſult what courſe to ſteer. Now, as there was a valuable loading on board, of goods from Portugal, and others taken in ſince, ſome gave their opinion for ſailing directly to India, ſelling the ſhip and cargo there, and returning by ſome Engliſh veſſel: but that was rejected; for we did not doubt but notice would be given of our eſcape along the coaſt, and if we ſhould fall into the Portugueſe's hands, we could expect no mercy; beſides, we had not people ſufficient for ſuch an enterprize. Others, again, were for ſailing the directeſt courſe for England; but I told them, as our opinions were different, and no time was to be loſt, my advice was, to ſtretch ſouthward, till we might be quite out of fear of purſuit, and then, whatever courſe we took, by keeping clear of all coaſts, we might hope to come ſafe off.

My propoſal ſeemed to pleaſe the whole crew; ſo, crouding all the ſail we could, we puſhed ſouthward very briſkly before the wind for ſeveral days. We now went upon examining our ſtores, and found we had flour enough, plenty of fiſh, and ſalt proviſions, but were ſcant of water and wood; of the firſt whereof there was not half a ton, and but very little of the latter. This made us very uneaſy; and being none of us expert in navigation, farther than the common working of the ſhip, and having no chart on board that might direct us to the neareſt land, we were almoſt at our wit's end, and came to a ſhort allowance of liquor. That we muſt get water if we could, was indiſputable; but where to do it puzzled us, as we had determined not to get in with the African ſhore, on any account whatever.

In this perplexity, and under the guidance of different opinions, (for we were all captains now) we ſometimes ſteered eaſtward, and ſometimes weſtward, for about nine days; when we eſpied a little bluiſh cloud-like appearance to the ſouth-weſt: this continuing, we hoped it might be land, and therefore made to it. Upon our nearer approach, we found it to be, as we judged, an iſland; but, not knowing it's name, or whether it was inhabited, we coaſted round it two days, to ſatisfy ourſelves as to this laſt particular. Seeing no living creature on it during that time, and the ſhore being very broken, we came to an anchor about two miles from it, and ſent ten of our crew in our beſt boat, with ſome caſks, to get water and cut wood. The boat returned at night, with ſix men, and the caſks filled, having left four behind, to go on with the cutting of wood againſt next day. Accordingly, next morning, the boat went off again, and made two turns with water and wood ere night, which was repeated for two or three days after. On the ſixth ſhe went off for wood only, leaving none but me and one John Adams on board.

The boat had ſcarce reached the iſland, this laſt turn, before the day overcaſt, and there aroſe ſuch a ſtorm of wind, thunder, lightning, and hail, as I had never before ſeen. At laſt our cable broke cloſe to the anchor, and away we went with the wind, full ſouthward by weſt; and not having ſtrength to keep the ſhip upon a ſide wind, we were forced to ſet her head right before it, and let her drive. Our hope was, every hour, the ſtorm would abate; but it continued with equal violence for many days; during all which time, neither Adams nor I had any reſt, for one or other of us was forced, and ſometimes both, to keep her right before the wind, or ſhe would certainly have overſet. When the ſtorm abated, as it did by degrees, neither Adams nor I could tell where we were, or even in what part of the world.

I was ſorry I had no better a ſailor with me, for neither Adams nor myſelf had ever made more than one voyage till now; ſo that we were both unacquainted with the latitude, and ſcarce knew the uſe of the compaſs to any purpoſe; and, being out of all hope of ever reaching the iſland to our companions, we neither knew which way to ſteer, nor what to do: and, indeed, had we known where we were, we two only could not have been able to navigate the ſhip to any part we deſired, or ever get to the iſland, unleſs ſuch a wind as we had before would of itſelf have driven us thither.

Whilſt we were conſidering, day after day, what to do, though the ſea was now very calm and ſmooth, the ſhip ſeemed to ſail at as great a rate as before, which we attributed to the velocity ſhe had acquired by the ſtorm, or to currents that had ſet that way by the violence of the winds. Contenting ourſelves with this, we expected all ſoon to be right again; and as we had no proſpect of ever ſeeing our companions, we kept the beſt look-out we could, to ſee for any veſſel coming that courſe, which might take us in; and reſolved to reſt all our hopes upon that.

When we had ſailed a good while after this manner, we knew not whither, Adams called out, 'I ſee land!' My heart leaped within me for joy; and we hoped, the current that ſeemed to carry us ſo faſt, ſet in for ſome iſlands or rivers that lay before us. But ſtill we were exceedingly puzzled at the ſhip's making ſuch way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the land, which was now very viſible, the more ſpeed the ſhip made, though there was no wind ſtirring. We had but juſt time to think on this unexpected phænomenon, when we found that what we had taken for land was a rock of an extraordinary height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the ſhip increaſed it's motion; and all our ſtrength could not make her anſwer her rudder any other way. This put us under the apprehenſion of being daſhed to pieces immediately; and, in leſs than half an hour, I verily thought my fears had not been groundleſs. Poor Adams told me he would try when the ſhip ſtruck, if he could leap upon the rock, and ran to the head for that purpoſe; but I was ſo fearful of ſeeing my danger, that I ran under hatches, reſolving to ſink in the ſhip. We had no ſooner parted but I felt ſo violent a ſhock, that I verily thought the ſhip had brought down the whole rock upon her, and been thereby daſhed to pieces; ſo that I never more expected to ſee the light.

I lay under this terror for at leaſt half an hour, waiting the ſhip's either filling with water or bulging every moment. But finding neither motion in her, nor any water riſe, nor the leaſt noiſe whatſoever, I ventured, with an aching heart, from my retreat, and ſtole up the hatch-way as if an enemy had been on deck, peeping firſt one way, then another. Here nothing preſented but confuſion; the rock hung over the hatchway, at about twenty feet above my head, our foremaſt lay by the board, the mainmaſt yard-arm was down, and great part of the mainmaſt ſnapped off with it, and almoſt every thing upon deck was diſplaced. This ſight ſhocked me extremely; and calling for Adams, in whom I hoped to find ſome comfort, I was too ſoon convinced I had loſt him.

CHAP. IX.

WILKINS THINKS OF DESTROYING HIMSELF — HIS SOLILOQUY — STRANGE ACCIDENT IN THE HOLD—HIS SURPRIZE—CANNOT CLIMB THE ROCK—HIS METHOD TO SWEETEN HIS WATER—LIVES MANY MONTHS ON BOARD — VENTURES TO SEA IN HIS BOAT SEVERAL TIMES, AND TAKES MANY FISH—ALMOST OVERCOME BY AN EEL.

AFTER I had ſtood a while in the utmoſt confuſion of thought, and my ſpirits began to be a little compoſed, I was reſolved to ſee what damage the hull of the ſhip had received. Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only ſhe was immoveably fixed in a cleft of the rock, like a large arch-way, and there ſtuck ſo faſt, that though upon fathoming, I could find no bottom, ſhe never moved in the leaſt by the working of the water.

I now began to look upon Adams as a happy man, being delivered by immediate death, from ſuch an inextricable ſcene of diſtreſs, and wiſhed myſelf with him a thouſand times. I had a great mind to have followed him into the other world; yet, I know not how it is, there is ſomething ſo abhorrent to human nature, in ſelf-murder, be one's condition what it will, that I was ſoon determined on the contrary ſide. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large field to expatiate in upon the trial of his creatures, by bringing them into imminent dangers, ready to overwhelm them, and at the ſame time, as it were,

were, hanging out the flag of truce and mercy to them. These thoughts brought me to my knees, and I poured out my soul to God, in a strain of humiliation, resignation to his will, and earnest petitions for deliverance or support in this distress. Having finished, I found myself in a more composed frame; so having eaten a biscuit, and drank a cann of water, and not seeing any thing to be done whereby I could better my condition, I sat me down upon the deck, and fell into the following soliloquy.

'Peter,' says I, 'what have you to 'do here?'—'Alas!' replied I to myself, 'I am fixed against my will in 'this dismal mansion, destined, as 'rats might be, to devour the provi-'sions only, and having eat all up, to 'perish with hunger for want of a sup-'ply.'—'Then,' says I, 'of what 'use are you in the world, Peter?'—'Truly,' answered I, 'of no other 'use, that I can see, but to be an ob-'ject of misery for Divine vengeance to 'work upon, and to shew what a de-'plorable state human nature can be 'reduced to; for I cannot think any 'one else can be so wretched.'—'And 'again, Peter,' says I, 'what have 'you been doing ever since you came 'into the world?'—'I am afraid,' says I, 'I can answer no better to this 'question than to either of the for-'mer; for if only reasonable actions 'are to be reckoned among my do-'ings, I am sure I have done little 'worth recording; for, let me see 'what it all amounts to. I spent my 'first sixteen years in making a fool 'of my mother; my three next in 'letting her make a fool of me; and 'in being fool enough myself to get 'me a wife and two children before I 'was twenty. The next year was 'spent in finding out the misery of 'slavery from experience. Two years 'more I repined at the happiness of 'my benefactor, and at finding it was 'not my lot to enjoy the same. This 'year is not yet spent, and how many 'more are to come, and where they 'may be passed, and what they may 'produce, requires a better head than 'mine even to guess at; but certainly 'my present situation seems to pro-'mise nothing beside woe and misery.'—'But hold a little,' says I, 'and let 'me clearly state my own wretched-'ness. I am here, it is true; but for 'any good I have ever done, or any 'advantage I have reaped in other 'places, I am as well here as any 'where. I have no present want of 'food, or unjust or cruel enemy to 'annoy me; so, as long as the ship 'continues entire, and provisions last, 'I shall do tolerably. Then, why 'should I grieve or terrify myself 'about what may come? What my 'frighted imagination suggests may 'perhaps never happen. Deliver-'ance, though not to be looked for, is 'yet possible: and my future fate may 'be as different from my present con-'dition, as this is from the hopes with 'which I lately flattered myself. And 'why, after all, may I not die a natu-'ral death here as well as any where? 'all mankind die, and then there is 'an end of all——An end of all! 'did I say? No, there is something 'within that gives me the lye when I 'say so. Let me see, "Death," my ma-'ster used to say, "is not an end, but a "beginning, of real life:" and may it 'not be so? May I not as well un-'dergo a change from this to a diffe-'rent state of life, when I leave this 'world, as be born into it I know 'not from whence? Who sent me in-'to this world? Who framed me of 'two natures so unlike, that death 'cannot destroy but one of them? It 'must be the Almighty God. But all 'God's works tend to some end; and 'if he has given me an immortal na-'ture, it must be his intention that I 'should live somewhere and somehow 'for ever. May not this stage of be-'ing, then, be only an introduction to 'a preparative for another? There is 'nothing in this supposition repug-'nant to reason. Upon the whole, if 'God is the Author of my being, he 'only has a right to dispose of it, 'and I may not put an end thereto 'without his leave. It is no less true, 'that my continuing therein during 'his pleasure, and because it is so, 'may turn vastly to my advantage in 'his good time; it may be the means 'of my becoming happy for ever, 'when it is his will that I go hence. 'It is no less probable, that, dismal 'as my present circumstances appear, 'I may be even now the object of a 'kind Providence: God may be lead-'ing me by affliction to repentance of

'former

'former crimes; deſtroying thoſe ſen-
'ſual affections that have all my days
'kept me from loving and ſerving
'him. I will therefore ſubmit myſelf
'to his will, and hope for his mercy.'

Theſe thoughts, and many others I then had, compoſed me very much, and by degrees reconciled me to my deſtined ſolitude. I walked my ſhip, of which I was now both maſter and owner, and employed myſelf in ſearching how it was faſtened to the rock, and where it reſted; but all to no purpoſe as to that particular. I then ſtruck a light, and went into the hold, to ſee what I could find uſeful, for we had never ſearched the ſhip ſince we took her.

In the hold I found abundance of long iron bars, which I ſuppoſe were brought out to be trafficked with the blacks. I obſerved they lay all with one end cloſe to the head of the ſhip, which I preſumed was occaſioned by the violent ſhock they received when ſhe ſtruck againſt the rock; but ſeeing one ſhort bar lying out beyond the reſt, though touching at the end one of the long bars, I thought to take it up, and lay it on the heap with the others; but the moment I had raiſed the end next the other bars, it flew out of my hand, with ſuch violence, againſt the head of the ſhip, and with ſuch a noiſe, as greatly ſurprized me. and put me in fear it had broke through the plank.

I juſt ſtayed to ſee no harm was done, and ran upon deck, with my hair ſtiff on my head; nor could I conceive leſs than that ſome ſubtle ſpirit had done this prank merely to terrify me.

It ran in my pate ſeveral days, and I durſt upon no account have gone into the hold again, though my whole ſupport had lain there; nay, it even ſpoiled my reſt, for fear ſomething tragical ſhould befal me, of which this amazing incident was an omen.

About a week after, as I was ſhifting myſelf, (for I had not taken my cloaths off ſince I came there) and putting on a new pair of ſhoes which I found on board, my own being very bad, taking out my iron buckles, I laid one of them upon a broken piece of the maſt that I ſat upon; when, to my aſtoniſhment, it was no ſooner out of my hand but up it flew to the rock, and ſtuck there. I could not tell what to make of it; but was ſorry the devil had got above deck. I then held ſeveral other things, one after another, in my hand, and laid them down where I laid the buckle, but nothing ſtirred, till I took out the fellow of that from the ſhoes; when, letting it go, away it jumped alſo to the rock.

I muſed on theſe phænomena for ſome time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the devil; who muſt, as I imagined, have a hand in ſuch unaccountable things as they then ſeemed to me. But at length reaſon got the better of theſe fooliſh apprehenſions, and I began to think there might be ſome natural cauſe of them, and next to be very deſirous of finding it out. In order to this, I ſet about making experiments, to try what would run to the rock, and what would not. I went into the captain's cabbin, and opening a cupboard, of which the key was in the door, I took out a pipe, a bottle, a pocket-book, a ſilver ſpoon, a tea-cup, &c.. and laid them ſucceſſively near the rock; when none of them anſwered; but the key which I had brought out of the cupboard on my finger, dropping off while I was thus employed, no ſooner it was diſengaged, but away it went to it. After that I tried ſeveral other pieces of iron-ware, with the like ſucceſs. Upon this, and the needle of my compaſs ſtanding ſtiff to the rock, I concluded that this ſame rock contained great quantity of load-ſtone, or was itſelf one vaſt magnet, and that our lading of iron was the cauſe of the ſhip's violent courſe thereto, which I mentioned before.

This quite ſatisfied me, as to my notion of ſpirits, and gave me a more undiſturbed night's reſt than I had had before; ſo that now, having nothing to affright me, I paſſed the time tolerably well in my ſolitude, as it grew by degrees familiar to me.

I had often wiſhed it had been poſſible for me to climb the rock; but it was ſo ſmooth in many places, and craggy in others, and over-hanging, continuing juſt the ſame to the right and left of me as far as ever I could ſee, that from the impoſſibility of it, I diſcharged all thoughts of ſuch an attempt.

I had now lived on board three months, and perceived the days grow

ſhorter

ſhorter and ſhorter, till, having loſt the ſun for a little time, they were quite dark: that is, there was no abſolute day-light, or indeed viſible diſtinction between day and night; though it was never ſo dark but I could ſee well enough upon deck to go about.

What now concerned me the moſt was, my water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unſavoury, ſo that I could ſcarce drink it; but had no proſpect of better. Now and then, indeed, it ſnowed a little, which I made ſome uſe of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive; and, having nothing elſe to do, I ſet two open veſſels upon deck, and drawing water from the hold, I filled one of my veſſels, and letting it ſtand a day and a night, I poured it into the other, and ſo ſhifted it every twenty-four hours: this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive taſte, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheleſs a great help to it, by incorporating the freſh air with it; ſo that it became very potable: and this method I conſtantly uſed with my drinking-water, ſo long as I ſtayed on board the ſhip.

It had now been ſharp weather for ſome time; and the cold ſtill increaſing, this put me upon rummaging the ſhip farther than ever I thought to do before; when, opening a little cabbin under deck, I found a large cargo of fine French brandy, a great many bottles, and ſome ſmall caſks of Madeira wine, with divers cordial waters. Having taſted theſe, and taken out a bottle or two of brandy, and ſome Madeira, I locked up my door, and looked no farther that time.

The next day I enquired into my proviſions; and ſome of my fleſh having ſoaked out the pickle, I made freſh pickle, and cloſed it up again. I that day alſo found ſeveral cheeſes, caſed up in lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon: but what time of day or night it was when I eat this meal, I could not tell. I found a great many cheſts well filled, and one or two of tools, which ſome years after ſtood me in a very good ſtead; though I did not expect they would ever be of that ſervice when I firſt met with them.

In this manner I ſpent my time till I began to ſee broad day-light again, which cheared me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the dark ſeaſon, that ſhips were coming towards me, and that I ſhould once more have the converſation of mankind; for I had, by the ſmall glimmering, ſeen many large bodies (to my thinking) move at a little diſtance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the light; but though I hallooed as loud as I could, and often fired my gun, I never received an anſwer.

When the light returned, my days increaſed in proportion as they had before decreaſed; and gathering comfort from that, I determined to launch my ſmall boat, and to coaſt along the iſland, as I judged it, to ſee if it was inhabited, and by whom; I determined alſo to make me ſome lines for fiſhing, and carry my gun to try for other game if I found a place for landing: for though I had never, ſince my arrival ſeen a ſingle living creature but my cat, except inſects, of which there were many in the water and in the air before the dark weather, and then began to appear again, yet I could not but think there were both birds and beaſts to be met with.

Upon launching my boat, I perceived ſhe was very leaky; ſo I let her fill, and continue thus a week or more, to ſtop her cracks; then getting down the ſide of my ſhip, I ſcooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for uſe; ſo putting on board my gun, lines, brandy-bottles, and a cloaths-cheſt for a ſeat, with ſome little water, and proviſions for a week, I once more committed myſelf to the ſea; having taken all the obſervation I could, to gain my ſhip again, if any accident ſhould happen; though I reſolved, upon no account, to quit ſight of the rock willingly.

I had not rowed very long, before I thought I ſaw an iſland to my right, about a league diſtant, to which I inclined to ſteer my courſe, the ſea being very calm; but, upon ſurveying it nearer, I found it only a great cake of ice about forty yards high above the water, and a mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for ſhips, were only theſe lumps of ice. Being thus diſappointed as to my iſland, I made what haſte I could back to the rock again, and coaſted part of it's circumference; but though I had

I had gone two or three leagues of it's circuit, the proſpect it afforded was juſt the ſame.

I then tried my lines, by faſtening ſeveral very long ones, made of the log-line, to the ſide of the boat, baiting them with ſeveral different baits, but took only one fiſh of about four pounds weight, very much reſembling a haddock; part of which I dreſſed for my ſupper, after my return to the ſhip, and it proved very good. Towards evening I returned to my home, as I may call it.

The next day I made a voyage on the other ſide of the rock, though but to a ſmall diſtance from the ſhip, with intent only to fiſh, but took nothing. I had then a mind to victual my boat, or little cruizer, and prepare myſelf for a voyage of two or three days, which I thought I might ſafely undertake, as I had never ſeen a troubled ſea ſince I came to the iſland; for, though I heard the wind often roaring over my head, yet it coming always from the land-ſide, it never diſturbed the water near the ſhore. I ſet out the ſame way I went at firſt, deſigning to ſail two or three days out, and as many home again; and reſolved, if poſſible, to fathom the depth as I went. With this view I prepared a very long line, with a large ſhot tied in a rag at the end of it, by way of plummet; but I felt no ground till the ſecond night. The next morning I came into thirty fathom water, then twenty, then ſixteen. In both tours, I could perceive no abatement in the height or ſteepneſs of the rock.

In about fourteen fathom water I dropped my lines, and lay by for an hour or two. Feeling ſeveral jars, as I ſat on my cheſt in the boat, I was ſure I had caught ſomewhat; ſo pulling up my lines ſucceſſively, I brought firſt a large eel, near ſix feet long, and almoſt as thick as my thigh, whoſe mouth, throat, and fins, were of a fine ſcarlet, and the belly as white as ſnow: he was ſo ſtrong, while in the water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the boat, and then had a harder job to kill him; for though having a hatchet with me, to cut wood in caſe I met with any landing-place, I chopped off his head, the moment I had him on board, yet he had ſeveral times after that have liked to have broken my legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his life from him; and, had I not whipped off his tail, and alſo divided his body into two or three pieces, I could not have maſtered him. The next I pulled up was a thick fiſh like a tench, but of another colour, and much bigger. I drew up ſeveral others, flat and long fiſh, till I was tired with the ſport; and then I ſet out for the ſhip again, which I reached the third day.

During this whole time, I had but one ſhot, and that was as I came homewards, at a creature I ſaw upon a high crag of the rock, which I fired at with ball, fearing that my ſmall-ſhot would not reach it. The animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the rock, very near me. I picked it up, and found it to be a creature not much unlike our rabbits, but with ſhorter ears, a longer tail, and hooſed like a kid, though it had the perfect ſluck of a rabbit. I put it into my boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the ſhip; and plying my oars, got ſafe, as I ſaid, on the third day.

I made me a fire to cook with as ſoon as I had got my cargo out of the boat into my ſhip, but was under debate which of my dainties to begin upon. I had ſometimes a mind to have broiled my rabbit, as I called it, and boiled ſome of my fiſh; but being tired, I hung up my fleſh till the next day, and boiled two or three ſorts of my fiſh, to try which was beſt. I knew not the nature of moſt of them, ſo I boiled a piece of my eel, to be ſure, judging that, however I might like others, I ſhould certainly be able to make a good meal of that. This variety being ready, I took a little of my oil out of the hold for ſauce, and ſat down to my meal, as ſatisfied as an emperor. But upon taſting my ſeveral meſſes, though the eel was rather richer than the ſmaller fiſhes, yet the others were all ſo good, I gave them the preference for that time, and laid by the reſt of the eel, and of the other fiſh, till the next day, when I ſalted them for future uſe.

I kept now a whole week or more at home, to look farther into the contents of the ſhip, bottle off a caſk of Madeira, which I found leaking, and to conſume my new ſtores of fiſh and

fleſh;

flesh; which being somewhat stale, when first salted, I thought would not keep so well as the old ones that were on board; I added also some fresh bread to my provision, and sweetened more water by the aforementioned method; and when my necessary domestick affairs were brought under, I then projected a new voyage.

CHAP. X.

LAYS IN GREAT STORE OF PROVISION—RESOLVES TO TRAVERSE THE ROCK—SAILS FOR THREE WEEKS, STILL SEEING IT ONLY—IS SUCKED UNDER THE ROCK, AND HURRIED DOWN A CATARACT—CONTINUES THERE FIVE WEEKS—HIS DESCRIPTION OF THE CAVERN—HIS THOUGHTS AND DIFFICULTIES—HIS ARRIVAL AT A GREAT LAKE—AND HIS LANDING IN THE BEAUTIFUL COUNTRY OF GRAUNDEVOLET.

I Had for a long time wanted to see the other side of the rock, and at last resolved to try if I could not coast it quite round; for, as I reasoned with myself, I might possibly find some landing-places, and perhaps a convenient habitation on shore. But as I was very uncertain what time that might take up, I determined on having provisions, instruments of divers kinds, and necessary utensils in plenty, to guard against accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another seachest out of the hold of the ship, and letting it into my boat, replenished it with a stock of wine, brandy, oil, bread, and the like, sufficient for a considerable voyage. I also filled a large cask with water, and took a good quantity of salt to cure what fish I should take by the way. I carried two guns, two brace of pistols, and other arms, with ammunition proportionable; also an ax or two, a saw to cut wood if I should see any, and a few other tools, which might be highly serviceable if I could land. To all these I added an old sail, to make a covering for my goods and artillery against the weather. Thus furnished and equipped, having secured my hatches on board, and every thing that might spoil by wet, I set out, with a God's speed, on my expedition; committing myself once more to Providence and the main ocean, and proceeding the same way I went the first time.

I did not sail extraordinary fast, but frequently fished in proper places, and caught a great deal, salting and drying the best of what I took. For three weeks time and more, I saw no entrance into the island, as I call it, nor any thing but the same unscaleable rock. This uniform prospect gave me so little hopes of landing, that I was almost of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature deliberation, resolving to go forward a day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four hours, when, just as it was becoming dark, I heard a great noise, as of a fall of water; whereupon I proposed to lie by and wait for day, to see what it was: but the stream insensibly drawing me on, I soon found myself in an eddy; and the boat drawing forward, beyond all my power to resist it, I was quickly sucked under a low arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my boat, having barely light enough to see my danger, I had undoubtedly been crushed to pieces, or driven over-board. I could perceive the boat to fall with incredible violence, as I thought, down a precipice, and suddenly whirled round and round with me; the water roaring on all sides, and dashing against the rock with a most amazing noise.

I expected every moment my poor little vessel would be staved against the rock, and I overwhelmed with waters; and for that reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my peril, till after the commotion had in some measure ceased. At length, finding the perturbation of the water abate, and as if by degrees I came into a smoother stream, I took courage just to lift up my affrighted head; but guess, if you can, the horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of darkness, unable to perceive the smallest glimmer of light.

However, as my boat seemed to glide easily, I rouzed myself, and struck a light: but if I had my terrors before, what must I have now! I was quite stupified at the tremendous view of an immense arch over my head, to which I could see no bounds; the stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty yards broad, but in some places wider,

in ſome narrower. It was well for me I happened to have a tinder-box, or, though I had eſcaped hitherto, I muſt have at laſt periſhed; for in the narrower parts of the ſtream, where it ran ſwifteſt, there were frequently ſuch craggs ſtood out from the rock, by reaſon of the turnings and windings, and ſuch ſets of the current againſt them, as, could I not have ſeen to manage my boat, which I took great care to keep in the middle of the ſtream, muſt have thrown me on them, to my inevitable deſtruction.

Happy it was for me, alſo, I was ſo well victualled, and that I had taken with me two bottles of oil, (as I ſuppoſed, for I did not imagine I had any more) or I had certainly been loſt, not only through hunger, for I was, to my gueſs, five weeks in the vault or cavern, but for want of light, which the oil furniſhed, and without which all other conveniences could have been of no avail to me. I was forced to keep my lamp always burning; ſo, not knowing how long my reſidence was to be in that place, or when I ſhould get my diſcharge from it, if ever, I was obliged to huſband my oil with the utmoſt frugality; and notwithſtanding all my caution, it grew low, and was juſt ſpent, in little above half the time I ſtayed there.

I had now cut a piece of my ſhirt, for a wick to my laſt drop of oil, which I twiſted and lighted. I burnt the oil in my braſs tobacco-box, which I had fitted pretty well to anſwer the purpoſe. Sitting down, I had many black thoughts of what muſt follow the loſs of my light, which I conſidered as near expiring, and that, I feared, for ever. 'I am here,' thought I, 'like a poor condemned criminal, 'who knows his execution is fixed for 'ſuch a day, nay, ſuch an hour, and 'dies over and over in imagination, 'and by the torture of his mind, till 'that hour comes: that hour, which 'he ſo much dreads! and yet that very 'hour which releaſes him from all 'farther dread!—Thus do I—My laſt 'wick is kindled—my laſt drop of 'fuel is conſuming!—and I am every 'moment apprehending the ſhocks of 'the rock, the ſuffocation of the wa'ter; and, in ſhort, thinking over my 'dying thoughts, till the ſnuff of my 'lamp throws up it's laſt curling, ex'piring flame, and then my quietus 'will be preſently ſigned, and I re'leaſed from my tormenting anxiety! 'Happy minute! Come, then; I only 'wait for thee!'

My ſpirits grew ſo low and feeble upon this, that I had recourſe to my brandy-bottle to raiſe them; but, as I was juſt going to take a ſip, I reflected that would only increaſe thirſt, and, therefore, it were better to take a little of my white Madeira: ſo, putting my dram-bottle again into the cheſt, I held up one of Madeira, as I fancied, to the lamp; and ſeeing it was white, (for I had red too) I clapped it eagerly to my mouth, when the firſt gulp gave me a greater refreſhment, and more cheered my heart, than all the other liquors I had put together could have done; inſomuch as I had almoſt leaped over the boat's-ſide for joy. 'It is 'oil!' cried I, aloud, 'it is oil!' I ſet it down carefully, with inexpreſſible pleaſure; and examining the reſt of the bottles I had taken for white Madeira, I found two more of thoſe to be filled with oil. 'Now,' ſays I, 'here is the counter-part of my con'demned priſoners! For let but a par'don come, though at the gallows, 'how ſoon does he forget he has been 'an unhappy villain! And I, too, have 'ſcarce a notion now, how a man, in 'my caſe, could feel ſuch ſorrow as 'I have for want of a little oil.'

After my firſt tranſport, I found myſelf grow ſerious; reflecting upon the vigilance of Providence over us poor creatures, and the various inſtances wherein it interpoſes to ſave or relieve us, in caſes of the deepeſt diſtreſs, where our own foreſight, wiſdom, and power, have utterly failed, and when, looking all around, we could diſcover no means of deliverance. And I ſaw a train of circumſtances leading to the incident I have juſt mentioned, which obliged me to acknowledge the ſuperintendence of Heaven over even my affairs: and as the goodneſs of God had cared for me thus far, and manifeſted itſelf to me now, in reſcuing me, as it were, from being ſwallowed up in darkneſs, I had ground to hope he intended a compleat deliverance of me out of that diſmal abyſs, and would cauſe me yet to praiſe him in the full brightneſs of day.

A ſeries of theſe meditations brought me

me (at the end of five weeks, as nearly as I could compute it by my lamp) to a prodigious lake of water, bordered with a graſſy down, about half a mile wide, of the fineſt verdure I had ever ſeen: this again was flanked with a wood or grove, riſing like an amphitheatre, of about the ſame breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked rock to an immenſe height.

CHAP. XI.

HIS JOY ON HIS ARRIVAL AT LAND —A DESCRIPTION OF THE PLACE —NO INHABITANTS — WANTS FRESH WATER — RESIDES IN A GROTTO—FINDS WATER—VIEWS THE COUNTRY — CARRIES HIS THINGS TO THE GROTTO.

IT is impoſſible to expreſs my joy at the ſight of day once more. I got on the land as ſoon as poſſible, after my diſmiſſion from the cavern, and, kneeling on the ground, returned hearty thanks to God for my deliverance, begging, at the ſame time, grace to improve his mercies, and that I might continue under his protection, whatever ſhould hereafter befal me, and at laſt die on my native ſoil.

I unloaded my veſſel as well as I could, and hauled her up on the ſhore; and, turning her upſide down, made her a covering for my arms and baggage: I then ſat down to contemplate the place, and eat a moſt delightful meal on the graſs, being quite a new thing to me.

I walked over the green-ſward to the wood, with my gun in my hand, a brace of piſtols in my girdle, and my cutlaſs hanging before me; but, when I was juſt entering the wood, looking behind me, and all around the plain, 'Is it poſſible,' ſays I, 'that 'ſo much art (for I did not then be-'lieve it was natural) could have been 'beſtowed upon this place, and no in-'habitant in it? Here are neither 'buildings, huts, caſtle, nor any liv-'ing creature to be ſeen!—It cannot 'be,' ſays I, 'that this place was 'made for nothing!'

I then went a conſiderable way into the wood, and inclined to have gone much farther, it being very beautiful; but, on ſecond thoughts, judged it beſt to content myſelf at preſent with only looking out a ſafe retreat for that night; for, however agreeable the place then ſeemed, darkneſs was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or leſs of horror in it.

The wood, at it's firſt entrance, was compoſed of the moſt charming flowering ſhrubs that can be imagined; each growing upon it's own ſtem, at ſo convenient a diſtance from the other, that you might fairly paſs between them any way without the leaſt incommodity. Behind them grew numberleſs trees, ſomewhat taller, of the greateſt variety of ſhapes, forms, and verdures, the eye ever beheld; each, alſo, ſo far aſunder as was neceſſary for the ſpreading of their ſeveral branches, and the growth of their delicious fruits, without a buſh, briar, or ſhrub, amongſt them. Behind theſe, and ſtill on the higher ground, grew an infinite number of very large, tall trees, much loftier than the former, but intermixed with ſome underwood, which grew thicker and cloſer the nearer you approached the rock. I made a ſhift to force my way through theſe as far as the rock; which roſe as perpendicular as a regular building, having only here and there ſome crags and unevenneſſes. There was, I obſerved, a ſpace all the way between the underwood and the rock, wide enough to drive a cart in; and, indeed, I thought it had been left for that purpoſe.

I walked along this paſſage a good way, having tied a rag of the lining of my jacket at the place of my entrance, to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be ere it grew dark; but I found ſo much pleaſure in the walk, and ſurveying a ſmall natural grotto which was in the rock, that the day-light forſook me unawares: whereupon I reſolved to put off my return unto the boat till next morning, and to take up my lodging for that night in the cave.

I cut down a large bundle of underwood with my cutlaſs, ſufficient to ſtop up the mouth of the grotto, and laying me down to reſt, ſlept as ſound as if I had been on board my ſhip; for I never had one hour's reſt together ſince I ſhot the gulph till this. Nature, in-

deed, could not have ſupported itſelf thus long under much labour; but as I had nothing to do, but only keep the middle ſtream, I began to be as uſed to guide myſelf in it with my eyes almoſt cloſed, and my ſenſes retired, as a higler is to drive the cart to market in his ſleep.

The next morning I awaked ſweetly refreſhed; and, by the ſign of my rag, found the way again through the underwood to my boat. I raiſed that up a little, took out ſome bread and cheeſe, and, having eat pretty heartily, laid me down to drink at the lake, which looked as clear as chryſtal, expecting a moſt delicious draught; but I had forgot it brought me from the ſea, and my firſt gulp almoſt poiſoned me. This was a ſore diſappointment, for I knew my water-caſk was nigh emptied; and, indeed, turning up my boat again, I drew out all that remained, and drank it, for I was much athirſt.

However, I did not deſpair; I was now ſo uſed to God's providence, and had a ſenſe of it's operations ſo rivetted in my mind, that though the vaſt lake of ſalt-water was ſurrounded by an impenetrable rock or barrier of ſtone, I reſted ſatisfied that I ſhould rather find even that yield me a freſh and living ſtream than that I ſhould periſh for want of it.

With this eaſy mind did I travel five or ſix miles on the ſide of the lake, and ſometimes ſtepped into the wood, and walked a little there, till I had gone almoſt half the diameter of the lake, which lay in a circular or rather an oval figure. I had then thoughts of walking back, to be near my boat and lodging, for fear I ſhould be again benighted if I went much farther; but, conſidering I had come paſt no water, and poſſibly I might yet find ſome if I went quite round the lake, I rather choſe to take up with a new lodging that night, than to return: and I did not want for a ſupper, having brought out with me more bread and cheeſe than had ſerved for dinner, the remainder of which was in the lining of my jacket. When it grew darkiſh, I had ſome thoughts of eating; but I conſidered, as I was then neither very hungry nor dry, if I ſhould eat it would but occaſion drought, and I had nothing to allay that with; ſo I contented myſelf for that night to lay me down ſupperleſs.

In the morning I ſet forward again upon my water-ſearch, and hoped to compaſs the whole lake that day. I had gone about ſeven miles more, when, at a little diſtance before me, I perceived a ſmall hollow or cut in the graſs from the wood to the lake; thither I haſted with all ſpeed, and bleſſed God for the ſupply of a fine freſh rill, which, diſtilling from ſeveral ſmall clefts in the rock, had collected itſelf into one ſtream, and cut it's way through the green ſod to the lake.

I lay down with infinite pleaſure, and ſwallowed a moſt chearing draught of the precious liquid; and, ſitting on the brink, made a good meal of what I had with me, and then drank again. I had now got five-ſixths of the lake's circumference to go back again to my boat; for I did not ſuſpect any paſſage over the cavern's mouth where I came into the lake; and I could not, without much trouble, conſider, that, if I would have this water for a conſtant ſupply, I muſt either come a long way for it, or fix my habitation near it. I was juſt going back again, revolving theſe uneaſy thoughts in my breaſt, when this roſe ſuddenly in my mind; that, if I could poſſibly get over the mouth of the cavern, I ſhould not have above three miles from my grotto to the water. Now, as I could not get home that night, otherwiſe than by croſſing it, and as, if I loſt my labour, I ſhould be but where I was, whereas if I ſhould get over it, it would very much ſhorten my journey, I reſolved to try whether the thing was practicable; firſt, however, looking out for a reſting-place ſomewhere near my water, if I ſhould meet with a diſappointment.

I then walked into the wood; where, meeting with no place of retreat to my liking, I went to my rill, and taking another ſup, determined not to leave that ſide of the lake till morning; but having ſome time to ſpare, I walked about two miles to view the inlet of the lake, and was agreeably ſurprized, juſt over the mouth of the cavern, to ſee a large ſtone-arch like a bridge, as if it had been cut out of the rock, quite acroſs the opening: this cheered me vaſtly; and, puſhing over it, I found a path

a path that brought me to my boat before night.

I then went up to my grotto, for the third night in this moſt delightful place; and the next morning early I launched my boat, and taking my water-caſk and a ſmall dipping-bucket with me, I rowed away for the rill, and returned highly pleaſed with a ſufficiency of water, whereof I carried a bucket and a copper-kettle full up with me to the grotto. Indeed, it was not the leaſt part of my ſatisfaction that I had this kettle with me; for though I was in hopes, in my laſt voyage, I ſhould have come to ſome ſhore, where I could have landed and enjoyed myſelf over ſome of my fiſh, and for that reaſon had taken it, notwithſtanding things did not turn out juſt as I had ſchemed, yet my kettle proved the moſt uſeful piece of furniture I had.

Having now acquainted myſelf with the circumference of the lake, and ſettled a communication with my rill, I began to think of commencing houſe-keeper. In order thereunto, I ſet about removing my goods up to the grotto. By conſtant application, in a few days I had gotten all thither but my two great cheſts and my water-caſk; and how to drag or drive any of thoſe to it, I was entirely at a loſs. My water-caſk was of the utmoſt importance to me, and I had thoughts, ſometimes, of ſtopping it cloſe, and rolling it to the place; but the aſcent through the wood to the grotto was ſo ſteep, that, beſides the fear of ſtaving it, which would have been an irreparable loſs, I judged it impoſſible to accompliſh it by my ſtrength; ſo, with a good deal of diſcontent, I determined to remit both that and the cheſts to future conſideration.

CHAP. XII.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE GROTTO—A ROOM ADDED TO IT—A VIEW OF THAT BUILDING—THE AUTHOR MAKES A LITTLE CART—ALSO A WET DOCK FOR HIS BOAT—GOES IN QUEST OF PROVISION—A DESCRIPTION OF DIVERS FRUITS AND PLANTS—HE BRINGS HOME A CART-LOAD OF DIFFERENT SORTS—MAKES EXPERIMENTS ON THEM—LOADS HIS CART WITH OTHERS—A GREAT DISAPPOINTMENT—MAKES GOOD BREAD—NEVER SEES THE SUN—THE NATURE OF THE LIGHT.

HAVING come to a full reſolution of fixing my reſidence at the grotto, and making that my capital ſeat, it is proper to give you ſome deſcription of it.

This grotto, then, was a full mile from the lake, in the rock which encompaſſed the wood. The entrance was ſcarcely two feet wide, and about nine feet high, riſing, from the height of ſeven feet upward, to a point in the middle. The cavity was about fifteen feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to lie lengthwiſe in it, full ſix feet of it were taken up at the farther end for my lodging only, as nothing could ſtand on the ſide of my bed that would leave me room to come at it. The remaining nine feet of the cave's length were taken up, firſt, by my fire-place, which was the deepeſt ſide of the door-way, ranging with my bed; (which I had ſet cloſe to the rock on one ſide) and took up near three feet in length; and my furniture and proviſions, of one ſort or other, ſo filled up the reſt, that I had much ado to creep between them into my bed.

In the cheſt which I had taken for a ſeat in the boat, as aforeſaid, upon breaking it open by the water-ſide, I found a mattraſs, ſome ſhirts, ſhoes, ſtockings, and ſeveral other uſeful things; a ſmall caſe of bottles with cordials in them, ſome inſtruments of ſurgery, plaiſters and ſalves; all which, together with a large quantity of fiſh that I had ſalted, I carried to the grotto.

My habitation being thus already over-charged, and as I could not, however, bear the thoughts of quitting it, or of having any of my goods expoſed to the weather on the outſide, I was naturally bent on contriving how I ſhould encreaſe my accommodations. As I had no proſpect of enlarging the grotto itſelf, I could conceive no other way of effecting my deſire but by the addition of an outer-room. This thought pleaſed me very much, ſo that the next day I ſet myſelf to plan out the building, and trace the foundation of it.

I told you before there was about the

the ſpace of a cart-way between the wood and the rock clear; but this breadth, as I was building for life, (ſo I imagined) not appearing to me ſpacious enough for my new apartment, I conſidered how I ſhould extend it's bounds into the wood. Hereupon I ſet myſelf to obſerve what trees ſtood at a proper diſtance from my grotto, that might ſerve as they ſtood, with a little management of hewing and the like, to compoſe a noble door-way, poſts, and ſupporters; and I found, that upon cutting down three of the neareſt trees, I ſhould anſwer my purpoſe in this reſpect; and that there were ſeveral others, about twenty feet from the grotto, and running parallel with the rock, the ſituation of which was ſo happily adapted to my intention, that I could make them become, as I fancied, an out-fence or wall: ſo I took my ax, to cut down my neareſt trees; but as I was going to ſtrike, a ſomewhat different ſcheme preſented to my imagination that altered my reſolution.

In conformity with this new plan, I fixed the height of my intended cieling, and ſawed off my neareſt trees to that, ſloping from the ſides to the middle, to ſupport croſs beams for the roof to reſt on, and left the trunks ſtanding, by way of pillars, both for the uſe and ornament of the ſtructure. In ſhort, I worked hard every day upon my building for a month, in which time I had cut all my timber into proper lengths for my out-works and covering; but was at a great ſtand how to fix my ſide-poſts, having no ſpade or mattock, and the ground almoſt as hard as flint, for to be ſure it had never been ſtirred ſince the creation. I then thought I had the worſt part of my job to get over; however, I went on, and having contrived, in moſt of my upright ſide-quarters, to take the tops of trees, and leave on the lower parts of their cleft, where they began to branch out and divide from the main ſtem, I ſet one of them upright againſt the rock, then laid one end of my long cieling-pieces upon the cleft of it, and laid the other end upon a tree on the ſame ſide, whoſe top I had alſo ſawed off with a proper cleft. I then went and did the ſame on the other ſide; after this, I laid on a proper number of croſs-beams and tied all very firmly together with the bark of young trees ſtripped off in long thongs, which anſwered that purpoſe very well. Thus I proceeded, croſſing, joining, and faſtening all together, till the whole roof was ſo ſtrong and firm that there was no ſtirring any part of it: I then ſpread it over with ſmall lop-wood, on which I raiſed a ridge of dried graſs and weeds, very thick, and thatched over the whole with the leaves of a tree very much reſembling thoſe of a palm, but much thicker, and not quite ſo broad; the entire ſurface, I might ſay, was as ſmooth as a dye, and ſo ordered, by a gentle declivity every way, as to carry off the wet.

Having covered in my building, I was next to finiſh and cloſe the walls of it; the ſkeleton of theſe was compoſed of ſticks, croſſing one another checker-wiſe and tied together: to fill up the voids, I wove upon them the longeſt and moſt pliable twigs of the underwood I could find, leaving only a door-way on one ſide, between two ſtems of a tree, which dividing in the trunk, at about two feet from the ground, grew from thence, for the reſt of it's height, as if the branches were a couple of trees a little diſtant from one another, which made a ſort of ſtileway to my room. When this was all done, I tempered up ſome earth by the lake-ſide, and mixing it to a due conſiſtence with mud, which I took from the lake, applied it as a plaſtering in this manner: I divided it into pieces, which I rolled up of the ſize of a foot-ball; theſe lumps I ſtuck cloſe by one another on the lattice, preſſing them very hard with my hands, which forced part of them quite through the ſmall twigs, and then I ſmoothed both ſides with the back of my ſaw, to about the thickneſs of five or ſix inches, ſo that by this means I had a wall round my new apartment a foot thick. This plaſter-work coſt me ſome time, and a great deal of labour, as I had a full mile to go to the lake for every load of ſtuff, and could carry but little at once, it was ſo heavy; but there was neither water for tempering, nor proper earth to make it with, any nearer. At laſt, however, I compleated my building in every reſpect but a door, and for this I was forced to uſe the lid of my ſea-cheſt; which, indeed, I would have choſen not to apply that way, but I had

had nothing elſe that would do; and there was, however, this conveniency, that it had hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myſelf in my new habitation, like the abſolute and ſole lord of the country, for I had neither ſeen man nor beaſt ſince my arrival, ſave a few animals in the trees like our ſquirrels, and ſome water-rats about the lake; but there were ſeveral ſtrange kinds of birds I had never before ſeen, both on the lake and in the woods.

That which now troubled me moſt was, how to get my water nearer to me than the lake, for I had no leſſer veſſel than the caſk which held above twenty gallons, and to bring that up was a fatigue intolerable. My next contrivance, therefore, was this: I told you I had taken my cheſt-lid to make a door for an anti-chamber as I now began to call it; ſo I reſolved to apply the body of the cheſt alſo to a purpoſe different from that it originally anſwered. In order to this, I went to the lake where the body of the cheſt lay, and ſawed it through within about three inches of the bottom. Of the two ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two wheels; and with one of the ſides I made two more. I burnt a hole through the middle of each; then preparing two axle-trees, I faſtened them, after ſetting on the wheels, to the bottom of the cheſt, with the nails I had drawn out of it. Having furniſhed this machine, on which I beſtowed no ſmall labour, I was hugely pleaſed with it, and only wiſhed I had a beaſt, if it were but an aſs, to draw it; however, that taſk I was ſatisfied to perform myſelf, ſince there was no help for it; ſo I made a good ſtrong cord out of my fiſhing-lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readineſs, filling my water-caſk, I bound it thereon, and ſo brought it to the grotto, with ſuch eaſe, comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having ſucceeded ſo well in the firſt eſſay, I no ſooner unloaded, but down went I again with my cart, or truckle rather, to the lake, and brought from thence on it my other cheſt, which I had left entire.

I had now nothing remaining near the lake but my boat, and had half a mind to try to bring that up too; but having ſo frequent occaſion for her to get my water in, which I uſed in greater abundance now than I had done at firſt, a great part going to ſupply my domeſtick uſes, as well as for drinking, I reſolved againſt that, and ſought out for a convenient dock to ſtow it in, as a preſervative againſt wind and weather, which I ſoon after effected; for having pitched upon a ſwampy place, overgrown with a ſort of long flags or reeds, I ſoon cut a trench from the lake, with a ſort of ſpade or board that I had chopped and ſharpened for that uſe.

Thus having ſtowed my boat, and looked over all my goods, and ſorted them, and taken a ſurvey of my proviſions, I found I muſt ſoon be in want of the laſt if I did not forthwith procure a ſupply; for though I had victualled ſo wel lat ſetting out, and had been very ſparing ever ſince, yet, had it not been for a great quantity of fiſh I took and ſalted in my paſſage to the gulph, I had been to ſeek for food much ſooner. Hereupon, I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

With this reſolution I accoutred myſelf, as in my firſt walk, with my inſtruments and arms: but inſtead of travelling the lake-ſide, I went along the wood, and therein found great plenty of divers kinds of fruits; though I could ſcarce perſuade myſelf to taſte, or try the effects of them, being ſo much unlike our own, or any I had ſeen elſewhere. I obſerved amongſt the ſhrubs abundance of a fruit, or whatever elſe you may call it, which grew like a ram's horn; ſharp at the point next the twig it was faſtened to, and circling round and round, one fold upon another, which gradually increaſed to the ſize of my wriſt in the middle, and then as gradually decreaſed till it terminated in a point again at the contrary extreme; all which ſpiral, if it were fairly extended in length, might be a yard or an ell long. I ſurveyed this ſtrange vegetable very attentively; it had a rind, or cruſt, which I could not break with my hand, but taking my knife, and making an opening therewith in the ſhell, there iſſued out a ſort of milky liquor in great quantity, to at leaſt a pint and half, which having taſted, I found as ſweet as honey, and very pleaſant: however, I could not perſuade

ſnade myſelf any more than juſt to taſte it. I then found on the large trees ſeveral kinds of fruits, like pears or quinces, but moſt of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite diſagreeable; ſo I quitted my hopes of them.

About three miles from my grotto I met with a large ſpace of ground full of a low plant, growing only with a ſingle woody ſtalk half a foot high, and from thence iſſued a round head, about a foot or ten inches diameter, but quite flat, about three quarters of an inch thick, and juſt like a cream-cheeſe, ſtanding upon it's edge: theſe grew ſo cloſe together, that, upon the leaſt wind ſtirring, their heads rattled againſt each other very muſically; for though the ſtalks were ſo very ſtrong that they would not eaſily either bend or break, yet the fanning of the wind upon the broad heads twiſting the ſtalks, ſo as to let the heads ſtrike each other, they made a moſt agreeable ſound.

I ſtood ſome time admiring this ſhrub, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two pounds: they had a tough, green rind, or covering, very ſmooth, and the inſide full of a ſtringy pulp, quite white. In ſhort, I made divers other trials of berries, roots, herbs, and what elſe I could find, but received little ſatisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad qualities. I returned back ruminating on what things I had ſeen, reſolving to take my cart the next walk, and bring it home loaded with different kinds of them, in order to make my trials thereof at leiſure: but my cart being too flat, and wanting ſides, I conſidered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwiſe bear, on that account, muſt tumble and roll off; ſo I made a fire, and turned ſmith; for with a great deal to do, breaking off the wards of a large key I had, and making it red-hot, I by degrees faſhioned it into a kind of ſpindle, and therewith making holes quite round the bottom of my cart, in them I ſtuck up ſticks, about two feet high, that I had tapered at the end to fit them.

Having thus qualified my cart for a load, I proceeded with it to the wood, and cutting a ſmall quantity of each ſpecies of green, berry, fruit, and flower, that I could find, and packing them ſeverally in parcels, I returned at night heavy laden, and held a council with myſelf what uſe they could moſt properly be applied to.

I had amongſt my goods, as I ſaid, a copper-kettle, which held about a gallon; this I ſet over my fire, and boiled ſomething, by turns, of every ſort in it, watching all the while, and with a ſtick ſtirring and raiſing up one thing and then another, to feel when they were boiled tender: but of upwards of twenty greens which I thus dreſſed, only one proved eatable, all the reſt becoming more ſtringy, tough, and inſipid, for the cooking. The one I have excepted, was a round, thick, woolly-leafed plant, which boiled tender, and taſted as well as ſpinnage; I therefore preſerved ſome leaves of this, to know it again by; and, for diſtinction, called it by the name of that herb.

I then began upon my fruits of the pear and quince kind, at leaſt eight different ſorts; but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were moſt of them as rough and crabbed after ſtewing as before, ſo I laid them all aſide. Laſtly, I boiled my ram's-horn and cream-cheeſe, as I called them, together. Upon taſting the latter of theſe, it was become ſo watery and inſipid, I laid it aſide as uſeleſs. I then cut the other, and taſted the juice, which proved ſo exceeding pleaſant, that I took a large gulp or two of it, and toſſed it into the kettle again.

Having now gone through the ſeveral kinds of my exoticks, I had a mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of my greens but the ſpinnage. I tried ſeveral berries and nuts too; but, ſave a few ſorts of nuts, they were all very taſteleſs. Then I began to review the fruits, and could find but two ſorts that I had any the leaſt hopes from. I then laid the beſt by, and threw the others away. After this proceſs, which took me up near a whole day, and clearing my houſe of good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my cheeſe, that was grown cold, and was now ſo dry and hard I could not get my teeth into it; upon which I was going to ſkim it away out of my grotto, ſaying, 'Go, thou worthleſs!'

(for

(for I always ſpoke aloud my thoughts to myſelf) I ſay, I was juſt diſpatching it, when I checked my hand, and, as I could make no impreſſion with my teeth, had a mind to try what my knife could do. Accordingly I began at the edge of the quarter, for I had boiled but a quarter of it; but the rind was grown ſo hard and brittle that my knife ſlipping, and raking along the cut-edge of it, ſcratched off ſome powder as white as poſſible; I then ſcraped it backward and forward ſome time, till I found it would all ſcrape away in this powder, except the rind; upon which I laid it aſide again for farther experiment.

During this review, my kettle and ram's-horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and ſeeing there was but little liquor in it, I whipped it off the fire, for fear of burning it's bottom, but took no farther notice of it till about two hours after; when, returning to the grotto, I went to waſh out my kettle, but could ſcarce get my ram's-horn from the bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a ſort of pitchy ſubſtance, though not ſo black, and ſeveral gummy threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great length. I wondered at this, and thought the ſhell of the ram's-horn had melted, or ſome ſuch thing; till venturing to put a little of the ſtuff on my tongue, it proved to my thinking as good treacle as I had ever taſted.

This new diſcovery pleaſed me very much. I ſcraped all the ſweet thing up, and laid it near my grotto, in a large leaf of one of the trees, (about two feet long, and broad in proportion) to prevent it's running about. In getting this curioſity out of my kettle, I found in it a ſmall piece of my cheeſe, which I ſuppoſe had been broke off in ſtirring; and biting it, (for it was ſoft enough) I think it was the moſt luſcious and delicate morſel I ever put into my lips. This unexpected good fortune put me on trying the beſt of my pears again; ſo, ſetting on my kettle, with very little water, and putting ſome of my treacle into it, and two of the beſt pears quartered, I found, upon a little boiling, they alſo became an excellent dainty.

Having ſucceeded ſo well, I was quite ripe for another journey with my cart; which I accordingly undertook, taking my route over the ſtone-bridge, to ſee what the other ſide of the lake produced. In travelling through the trees, I met, amongſt other things, with abundance of large gourds, which, climbing the trees, diſplayed their fruit to the height of twenty or thirty feet above the ground. I cut a great many of theſe, and ſome very large ones of different hues and forms; which of themſelves making a great load, with ſome few new ſorts of berries and greens, were the gathering of that day. But I muſt tell you, I was almoſt foiled in getting them home; for coming to my ſtone-bridge, it roſe ſo ſteep, and was ſo much ruggeder than the graſs or wood-ground, that I was at a ſet upon the firſt entrance, and terribly afraid I ſhould either break my wheels, or pull off my axle-trees. Hereupon I was forced to unload, and carry my cargo over in my arms to the other ſide of the bridge; whither having then, with leſs fear but much caution, drawn my cart, I loaded again, and got ſafe home.

I was mightily pleaſed with the acquiſitions of this journey; 'For now,' thought I, 'I ſhall have ſeveral conve-'nient family-utenſils;' ſo ſpent the next day or two in ſcooping my gourds and cleaning away the pulp. When I had done this, finding the rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good fire, and ſetting them round it at a moderate diſtance, to dry, I went about ſomething elſe without doors: but, alas! my hopes were ill-founded; for coming home to turn my gourds, and ſee how dry they were, I found them all warped, and turned into a variety of uncouth ſhapes. This put me to a ſtand; but, however, I recovered ſome pieces of them for uſe, as the bottom parts of moſt of them, after paring away the ſides, would hold ſomething, though they by no means anſwered my firſt purpoſe.

'Well,' thought I, 'what if I 'have loſt my gourds, I have gained 'experience. I will dry them next 'time with the guts in, and having 'ſtiffened their rinds in their proper 'dimenſions, then try to cleanſe 'them.' So, next morning, (for I was very eager at it) I ſet out with my

cart for another load; and having handed them over the bridge, got ſafe with them to the grotto. Theſe by proper management proved exceedingly valuable to me; anſwering, in one way or other, the ſeveral uſes of plates, bottles, pans, and divers other veſſels.

I now got a large quantity of the vegetable ram's-horn, and filled a great many of my gourds with the treacle it yielded; I alſo boiled and dried a large parcel of my cheeſes, and hung them up for uſe, for I had now for ſome time made all my bread of the latter, ſcraping and bruiſing the flour, and mixing it with my treacle and water; and this, indeed, made ſuch a ſweet and nouriſhing bread, that I could even have lived wholly upon it: but I afterwards very much improved it, by putting the milky juice of the ram's-horn, unboiled, to my flour, in a ſmall quantity, and then baking it on the hearth, covered over with embers. This detracted nothing from the ſweetneſs and mellowneſs of my bread, but made it much lighter than the treacle alone would have done.

Finding there was no fear of ſtarving, but ſo far from it, that from day to day I found out ſomething new to add to my repaſts, either in ſubſtantials or by way of deſſert, I ſet me down very well contented with my condition. I had nothing to do but to lay up ſtore againſt ſickneſs and the dark weather; which laſt I expected would ſoon be upon me, as the days were now exceeding ſhort. Indeed, though I had now been here ſix months, I had never ſeen the ſun ſince I firſt entered the gulph; and though there was very little rain, and but few clouds, yet the brighteſt day-light never exceeded that of half an hour after ſun-ſet in the ſummer-time in England, and little more than juſt reddened the ſky. For the firſt part of my time here, there was but little, if any, difference between day and night; but afterwards, what I might call the night, or leſſer degree of light, took up more hours than the greater, and went on gradually encreaſing as to time, ſo that I perceived total darkneſs approached, ſuch as I had on board my ſhip the year before.

CHAP. XIII.

THE AUTHOR LAYS IN A STORE AGAINST THE DARK WEATHER—HEARS VOICES—HIS THOUGHTS THEREON—PERSUADES HIMSELF IT WAS A DREAM—HEARS THEM AGAIN—DETERMINES TO SEE IF ANY ONE LODGED IN THE ROCK—IS SATISFIED THERE IS NOBODY—OBSERVATIONS ON WHAT HE SAW — FINDS A STRONG WEED LIKE WHIPCORD—MAKES A DRAG-NET—LENGTHENS IT—CATCHES A MONSTER—IT'S DESCRIPTION—MAKES OIL OF IT.

I Had now well ſtored my grotto with all ſorts of winter proviſions; and feeling the weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for, the total darkneſs. I went little abroad, and employed myſelf within doors, endeavouring to fence againſt the approaching extremity of the cold. For this purpoſe, I prepared a quantity of ruſhes; which being very dry, I ſpread them ſmoothly on the floor of my bed-chamber a good thickneſs, and over them I laid my mattraſs. Then I made a double ſheet of the boat's awning, or ſail, that I had brought to cover my goods; and having ſkewered together ſeveral of the jackets and cloaths I found in the cheſt, of them I made a coverlid; ſo that I lay very commodiouſly, and made very long nights of it now the dark ſeaſon was ſet in.

As I lay awake one night, or day, I know not which, I very plainly heard the ſound of ſeveral human voices, and ſometimes very loud; but though I could eaſily diſtinguiſh the articulations, I could not underſtand the leaſt word that was ſaid; nor did the voices ſeem at all to me like ſuch as I had any where heard before, but much ſofter and more muſical. This ſtartled me, and I roſe immediately, ſlipping on my cloaths, and taking my gun in my hand, (which I always kept charged, being my conſtant travelling companion) and my cutlaſs. Thus equipped, I walked into my anti-chamber, where I heard the voices much plainer, till, after ſome little time, they by degrees died quite away. After watching here, and hearkening a good while, hearing

hearing nothing, I walked back into the grotto, and laid me down again on my bed. I was inclined to open the door of my anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; beſides, I conſidered that if I did, I could diſcover nothing at any diſtance, by reaſon of the thick and gloomy wood that incloſed me.

I had a thouſand different ſurmizes about the meaning of this odd incident; and could not conceive how any human creatures ſhould be in my kingdom (as I called it) but myſelf, and I never yet ſee them, or any trace of their habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had ſurrounded the whole lake, yet I had not traced the out-bounds of the wood next the rock, where there might be innumerable grottos like mine; nay, perhaps, ſome as ſpacious as that I had ſailed through to the lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful ſpot might be very well peopled. 'But,' ſays I again, 'if there be any 'ſuch beings as I am fancying here, 'ſurely they don't ſkulk in their dens, 'like ſavage beaſts, by day-light, and 'only patrole for prey by night! if 'ſo, I ſhall probably become a deli-'cious morſel for them ere long, if 'they meet with me.' This kept me ſtill more within doors than before, and I hardly ever ſtirred out but for water or firing. At length, hearing no more voices, nor ſeeing any one, I began to be more compoſed in my mind, and at laſt grew perſuaded it was all a mere deluſion, and only a fancy of mine without any real foundation; and ſometimes, though I was ſure I was fully awake when I heard them, I perſuaded myſelf I had roſe in my ſleep, upon a dream of voices, and recollected with myſelf the various ſtories I had heard, when a boy, of walking in one's ſleep, and the ſurprizing effects of it; ſo the whole notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoyed my tranquillity above a week, before my fears were rouzed afreſh, hearing the ſame ſound of voices twice the ſame night, but not many minutes at a time. What gave me moſt pain was, that they were at ſuch a diſtance, as I judged by the languor of the ſound, that if I had opened my door, I could not have ſeen the utterers through the trees, and I was reſolved not to venture out; but then I determined, if they ſhould come again any thing near my grotto, to open the door, ſee who they were, and ſtand upon my defence, whatever came of it: 'For,' ſays I, 'my entrance is 'ſo narrow and high, that more than 'one cannot come at a time; and I 'can with eaſe diſpatch twenty of them 'before they can ſecure me, if they 'ſhould be ſavages; but if they prove 'ſenſible human creatures, it will be 'a great benefit to me to join myſelf 'to their ſociety.' Thus had I formed my ſcheme, but I heard no more of them for a great while; ſo that at length, beginning to grow aſhamed of my fears, I became tranquil again.

The day now returning, and with it my labours, I applied to my uſual callings; but my mind ran ſtrangely upon viewing the rock quite round, that is, the whole circuit of my dominions; 'For,' thinks I, 'there may 'poſſibly be an outlet through the rock 'into ſome other country, from whence 'the perſons I heard may come.' As ſoon therefore as the days grew towards the longeſt, I prepared for my progreſs. Having lived ſo well at home ſince my ſettlement, I did not care to truſt only to what I could pick up in the woods for my ſubſiſtence during this journey, which would not only take up time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; ſo I reſolved to carry a ſupply with me, proportionate to the length of my perambulation. Hereupon conſidering, that though my walk round the lake was finiſhed in two days, yet as I now intended to go round by the rock, the way would be much longer, and perhaps more troubleſome than that was; remembering alſo my journey with Glanlipze in Africa, and how much I complained of the fruits we carried for our ſubſiſtence; theſe circumſtances, I ſay, laying together, I reſolved to load the cart with a variety of food, bread and fruits eſpecially, and draw that with me.

Thus provided, I ſallied forth with great chearfulneſs, and proceeded in the main eaſily; though in ſome places I was forced to make way with my hatchet, the ground was ſo over-run with underwood. I very narrowly viewed the rock as I went, bottom and ſides, all the way, but could ſee nothing like a paſſage through it, or in-

deed any more than one opening, or inlet, which I entered for about thirty yards, but it was not above three feet wide, and terminated in the ſolid rock.

After ſome days travel, (making all the obſervations I could on the ſeveral plants, ſhrubs, and trees, which I met with, particularly where any of theſe occurred to me entirely new) finding myſelf a little faintiſh, I had a mind for a ſup of ram's-horn juice; ſo I cut me one, but upon opening it found therein only a pithy pulp, and no ways fit to taſte. I ſuppoſed by this I was too early for the milk, it being three months later the laſt year when I cut them. Hereon, ſeeing one upon another ſhrub, which by it's ruſty colour I judged might have hung all the winter, I opened that, and found it full of milk; but putting ſome of it into my mouth, it was as ſour as any vinegar I ever taſted in my life. 'So,' thinks I, (and ſaid ſo too; for, as I told you before, I always ſpoke out) 'here's ſauce 'for ſomething when I want it;' and this gave me a hint to ſtore myſelf with theſe gourds, to hang by for vinegar the next winter.

By this time I had come almoſt to my rill, when I entered upon a large plat of ground miſerably over-run with weeds, matted together very thick. Theſe choaked up my wheels in ſuch a manner that I could neither free them with my hands, nor get either backwards or forwards, they binding my cart down like ſo many cords; ſo that I was obliged to cut my way back again with my hatchet, and take a ſweep round in the wood, on the outſide of theſe weeds.

In all my life I never ſaw any thing of it's ſize, for it was no thicker than a whipcord, ſo ſtrong as this weed; and what raiſed my wonder was the length of it, for I drew out pieces of it near fifty feet long, and even they were broken at the end, ſo that it might be as long again for aught I know, for it was ſo matted and twiſted together, that it was a great trial of patience to untangle it; but that which was drieſt, and to me looked the rotteneſt and weakeſt, I found to be much the ſtrongeſt. Upon examination of it's parts, I diſcovered it to be compoſed of an infinite number of ſmall threads, ſpirally overlaying and infolding one another.

As I ſaw but few things that I could not find a uſe for, ſo this I perceived would ſerve all the common purpoſes of packthread; a thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a load of it home with me. Indeed, the difficulty of getting a quantity in the condition I deſired it, puzzled me a little; 'For,' ſays I, 'if I cut up a 'good deal of it with my hatchet, as I 'firſt deſigned, I ſhall only have ſmall 'lengths good for little, and to get 'it in pieces of any conſiderable length, 'ſo as to be of ſervice, will require 'much time and labour.' But reflecting how much I needed it, and of what benefit it would be, I reſolved to make a trial of what I could do; ſo, without more heſitation, I went to work, and cutting a fibre cloſe to it's root, I extricated that thread from all it's windings, juſt as one does an entangled whipcord. When I had thus diſengaged a ſufficient length, I cut that off; and repeating the like operation, in about three hours time, but with no little toil, I made up my load of different lengths juſt to my liking. Having finiſhed this taſk, I filled the gourd, brought for that purpoſe, with water; and having firſt viewed the whole remaining part of the rock, I returned over the ſtone-bridge home again.

This journey, though it took me up ſeveral days, and was attended with ſome fatigue, had yet given me great ſatisfaction; for now I was perſuaded I could not have one rival, or enemy, to fear in my whole dominions. And from the impoſſibility, as I ſuppoſed, of there being any, or of the ingreſs of any, unleſs by the ſame paſſage I entered at, and by which I was well aſſured they could never return, I grew contented, and blamed myſelf for the folly of my imaginary voices, as I called them then, and took it for a diſtemper of the fancy only.

The next day I looked over my load of mat-weed, having given it that name, and ſeparated the different lengths from each other. I then found I had ſeveral pieces between forty and fifty feet long, of which I reſolved to get a good number more, to make me a drag-net, that I might try for ſome fiſh in the lake. A day or two after, therefore, I brought home another load of it. Then I picked out a ſmooth level ſpot upon

upon the green-ſward, and having prepared a great number of ſhort wooden pegs, I ſtrained a line of the matweed about ten feet long, tying it at each end to a peg, and ſtuck a row of pegs along by that line, about two inches aſunder; I next ſtrained another line of the ſame length, parallel to that, at the diſtance of forty feet from it, and ſtuck pegs thereby, correſponding to the former row; and from each peg on one ſide, to the oppoſite peg on the other, I tied a like length of my matline, quite through the whole number of pegs; when the work looked like the inſide of an harpſichord; I afterwards drove pegs in like manner along the whole length of the two outermoſt longer lines, and tied ſhorter lines to them; ſo that the whole affair then repreſented the ſquares of a racket; the corners of each of which ſquares I tied very tight with ſmaller pieces of the line, till I had formed a compleat net of forty feet long and ten wide.

When I had finiſhed my net, as I thought, I wrapped ſeveral ſtones in rags, and faſtened them to the bottom to ſink it, and ſome of the ſmalleſt unſcooped dry gourds to the top, to keep that part buoyant. I now longed to begin my new trade, and carried the net to my boat with that intention; but after two or three hauls I found it would not anſwer for want of length; (though by chance I caught a blackiſh fiſh without ſcales, a little bigger than whiting, but much longer, which ſtuck by the gills in it;) ſo I left the net in the boat, reſolving to make an addition to it with all ſpeed; and returning to my grotto, I ſupped on the fiſh I had taken, and conſidered how to purſue my enterprize with better effect.

I provided me with another large parcel of line; and having brought two more lengths to perfection, I joined all together, and fixing one end on ſhore, by a pole I had cut for that purpoſe, I launched my boat, with the other end in it, taking a ſweep the length of my net round to my ſtick again, and getting on ſhore, hauled up my net by both ends together. I found now I had mended my inſtrument, and taken a proper way of applying it; for by this means, in five hauls, I caught about ſixteen fiſh of three or four different ſorts, and one ſhell-fiſh, almoſt like a lobſter, but without great claws, and with a very ſmall ſhort tail; which made me think, as the body was thrice as long as a lobſter's in proportion, that it did not ſwim backwards, like that creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having lobſter-like legs, but much ſhorter and ſtronger) and that the legs all ſtanding ſo forward, it's tail was, by it's motion, to keep the hinder part of the body from dragging upon the ground, as I obſerved it did when the creature walked on land, it then frequently ſlacking it's ſhort tail.

Theſe fiſh made me rich in proviſions. Some of them I eat freſh, and the remainder I ſalted down. But of all the kinds, my lobſter was the moſt delicious food, and made me almoſt three meals.

Thus finding there were fiſh to be had, though my preſent tackle ſeemed ſuitable enough to my family, yet could I not reſt, till I had improved my fiſhery by enlarging my net; for as it was, even with my late addition, I muſt either ſweep little or no compaſs of ground, or it would have no bag behind me. Upon this I ſet to work, and ſhortly doubled the dimenſions of it. I had then a mind to try it at the mouth of my rill; ſo taking it with me the next time I croſſed the lake for water, and faſtening it to my pole, cloſe by the right-ſide of the rill, I ſwept a long compaſs round to the left, and cloſing the ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow cut of the rill. But by the time I had gathered up two thirds of the net, I felt a reſiſtance that quite amazed me. In ſhort, I was not able to ſtand againſt the force I felt. Whereupon, ſitting down in the rill, and clapping my feet to the two ſides of it, I exerted all my ſtrength, till finally I became conqueror, and brought up ſo ſhocking a monſter, that I was juſt riſing to run for my life on the ſight of it. But recollecting that the creature was hampered, and could not make ſo much reſiſtance on the land as in the water, I ventured to drag the net up as far from the rill as my ſtrength and breath would permit me; and then running to the boat for my gun, I returned to the net, to examine my prize. Indeed, I had not inſtantly reſolution enough

enough to ſurvey it; and when at length I aſſumed courage enough to do ſo, I could not perfectly diſtinguiſh the parts, they were ſo diſcompoſed; but taking hold of one end of the net, I endeavoured to diſentangle the thing, and then drawing the net away, a moſt ſurprizing ſight preſented itſelf: the creature reared upright, about three feet high, covered all over with long black ſhaggy hair, like a bear, which hung down from his head and neck quite along his back and ſides. He had two fins, very broad and large, which, as he ſtood erect, looked like arms, and thoſe he waved and whirled about with incredible velocity; and though I wondered at firſt at it, I found afterwards it was the motion of theſe fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceaſed their motion he fell flat on his belly. He had two very large feet, which he ſtood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them, which made me in the leſs haſte to diſpatch him; and after he had ſtood upon his feet about four minutes, clapping his fins to his ſides, he fell upon his belly.

When I found he could not attack me, I was moving cloſer to him; but, upon ſight of my ſtirring, up he roſe again, and whirled his fins about as before, ſo long as he ſtood. And now I viewed him round, and found he had no tail at all, and that his hinder fins, or feet, very much reſembled a large frog's, but were at leaſt ten inches broad, and eighteen long, from heel to toe; and his legs were ſo ſhort that when he ſtood upright his breech bore upon the ground. His belly, which he kept towards me, was of an aſh-colour, and very broad, as was alſo his breaſt. His eyes were ſmall and blue, with a large black ſight in the middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long ſnout like a boar, and vaſt teeth. Thus having ſurveyed him near half an hour living, I made him riſe up once more and ſhot him in the breaſt. He fell, and giving a loud howl, or groan, expired.

I had then time to ſee what elſe I had caught; and turning over the net, found a few of the ſame fiſh I had taken before, and ſome others of a flatfiſh make, and one little lump of fleſh unformed; which laſt, by all I could make of it, ſeemed to be either a ſpawn or young one of that I had ſhot.

The great creature was ſo heavy, I was afraid I muſt have cut him in pieces to get him to the boat; but with much ado, having ſtowed the reſt, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my water-caſk, and rowed homewards. Being got to land, I was obliged to bring down my cart, to carry my great beaſt-fiſh, as I termed him, up to the grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a notion of firſt taſting, and then, if I liked his fleſh, of ſalting him down, and drying him; ſo, having flayed him, and taken out the guts and intrails, I broiled a piece of him; but it made ſuch a blaze, that moſt of the fat ran into the fire, and the fleſh proved ſo dry and rank, that I could no ways endure it.

I then began to be ſorry I had taken ſo much pains for no profit, and had endangered my net into the bargain, (for that had got a crack or two in the ſcuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large but worthleſs acquiſition.

However, as I was now prone to weighing all things, before I threw it away, I reſolved to conſider a little; whereupon I changed my mind. Says I, 'Here is a good warm ſkin, which, 'when dry, will make me a rare 'cuſhion. Again, I have for a long 'while had no light beſide that of the 'day; but now, as this beaſt's fat 'makes ſuch a blaze in the fire, and 'iſſues in ſo great a quantity from 'ſuch a ſmall piece as I broiled, why 'may not I boil a good tallow or oil 'out of it? and if I can, I have not 'made ſo bad a hand of my time as I 'thought for.'

In ſhort, I went immediately to work upon this ſubject, (for I never let a project cool after I had once ſtarted it) and boiled as much of the fleſh as the kettle would hold, and letting it ſtand to cool, I found it turned out a very good oil for burning; though, I confeſs, I thought it would rather have made tallow. This ſucceſs quickened my induſtry; and I repeated the operation till I got about ten quarts of this ſtuff, which very well rewarded my labour. After I had extracted as much oil as I could from the beaſt-fiſh, the creature having

ſtrongly

ſtrongly impreſſed my imagination, I conceived a new fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling groan at his death, I endeavoured to perſuade myſelf, and at laſt verily believed, that the voices I had ſo often heard, in the dark weather, proceeded from numbers of theſe creatures, diverting themſelves in the lake, or ſporting together on the ſhore; and this thought, in it's turn, contributed to eaſe my apprehenſions in that reſpect.

CHAP. XIV.

THE AUTHOR PASSES THE SUMMER PLEASANTLY—HEARS THE VOICES IN THE WINTER—VENTURES OUT—SEES A STRANGE SIGHT ON THE LAKE—HIS UNEASINESS AT IT—HIS DREAM—SOLILOQUY—HEARS THE VOICES AGAIN, AND PERCEIVES A GREAT SHOCK ON HIS BUILDING—TAKES UP A BEAUTIFUL WOMAN—HE THINKS HER DEAD, BUT RECOVERS HER—A DESCRIPTION OF HER—SHE STAYS WITH HIM.

I Paſſed the ſummer (though I had never yet ſeen the ſun's body) very much to my ſatisfaction; partly in the work I have been deſcribing, (for I had taken two more of the beaſt-fiſh, and had a great quantity of oil from them;) partly, in building me a chimney in my anti-chamber of mud and earth burnt on my own hearth into a ſort of brick; in making a window at one end of the aboveſaid chamber, to let in what little light would come through the trees, when I did not chuſe to open my door; in moulding an earthen lamp for my oil; and, finally, in providing and laying in ſtores, freſh and ſalt, (for I had now cured and dried many more fiſh) againſt winter. Theſe, I ſay, were my ſummer employments at home, intermixed with many agreeable excurſions. But now the winter coming on, and the days growing very ſhort, or indeed there being no day, properly ſpeaking, but a kind of twilight, I kept moſtly in my habitation, though not ſo much as I had done the winter before, when I had no light within doors, and ſlept, or at leaſt lay ſtill, great part of my time; for now my lamp was never out. I alſo turned two of my beaſt-fiſh ſkins into a rug to cover my bed, and the third into a cuſhion, which I always ſat upon, and a very ſoft and warm cuſhion it made. All this together rendered my life very eaſy, yea, even comfortable.

An indifferent perſon would now be apt to aſk, 'What would this man de-'ſire more than he had?' To this I anſwer, that I was contented while my condition was ſuch as I have been deſcribing: but a little while after the darkneſs or twilight came on, I frequently heard the voices again; ſometimes a few only at a time, as it ſeemed, and then again in great numbers. This threw me into new fears, and I became as uneaſy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite melancholy; though, otherwiſe, I never received the leaſt injury from any thing. I foolifhly attempted ſeveral times, by looking out of my window, to diſcover what theſe odd ſounds proceeded from, though I knew it was too dark to ſee any thing there.

I was now fully convinced, by a more deliberate attention to them, that they could not be uttered by the beaſt-fiſh, as I had afore conjectured, but only by beings capable of articulate ſpeech; but then, what or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

At length, one night or day, I cannot ſay which, hearing the voices very diſtinctly, and praying very earneſtly to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took courage, and arming myſelf with gun, piſtols, and cutlaſs, I went out of my grotto, and crept down the wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the compaſs they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the ſound, till I came to the verge of the wood, where I could ſee the lake very well by the dazzle of the water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a fleet of boats, covering a large compaſs, and not far from the bridge. I was ſhocked hereat beyond expreſſion. I could not conceive where they came from, or whither they would go; but ſuppoſed there muſt be ſome other paſſage to the lake than I had found in my voyage through the cavern, and that for certain they came that way,

and

and from ſome place, of which as yet I had no manner of knowledge.

Whilſt I was entertaining myſelf with this ſpeculation, I heard the people in the boats laughing and talking very merrily, though I was too diſtant to diſtinguiſh the words. I diſcerned ſoon after all the boats (as I ſtill ſuppoſed them) draw up, and puſh for the bridge; preſently after, though I was ſure no boat entered the arch, I ſaw a multitude of people on the oppoſite ſhore all marching towards the bridge; and what was the ſtrangeſt of all, there was not the leaſt ſign of a boat now left upon the whole lake. I then was in a greater conſternation than before; but was ſtill much more ſo, when I ſaw the whole poſſe of people, that as I have juſt ſaid were marching towards the bridge, coming over it to my ſide of the lake. At this my heart failed, and I was juſt going to run to my grotto for ſhelter; but taking one look more, I plainly diſcovered that the people, leaping one after another from the top of the bridge, as if into the water, and then riſing again, flew in a long train over the lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my ſight, laughing, hallooing, and ſporting together; ſo that looking back again to the bridge, and on the lake, I could neither ſee perſon nor boat, nor any thing elſe, nor hear the leaſt noiſe or ſtir afterwards for that time.

I returned to my grotto brim-full of this amazing adventure, bemoaning my misfortune in being at a place where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. 'For,' ſays I, 'if I am in a land of ſpirits, as 'now I have little room to doubt, 'there is no guarding againſt them. 'I am never ſafe, even in my grotto; 'for that can be no ſecurity againſt 'ſuch beings as can ſail on the water 'in no boats, and fly in the air on no 'wings, as the caſe now appears to 'me, who can be here and there, and 'wherever they pleaſe. What a mi'ſerable ſtate, I ſay, am I fallen to?' I ſhould have been glad to have had human converſe, and to have found inhabitants in this place; but there being none, as I ſuppoſed hitherto, I contented myſelf with thinking I was at leaſt ſafe from all thoſe evils mankind in ſociety are obnoxious to: 'But 'now, what may be the conſequence 'of the next hour I know not; nay, I 'am not able to ſay, but whilſt I ſpeak, 'and ſhew my diſcontent, they may 'at a diſtance conceive my thoughts, 'and be hatching revenge againſt me 'for my diſlike of them.'

The preſſure of my ſpirits inclining me to repoſe, I laid me down, but could get no reſt; nor could all my moſt ſerious thoughts, even of the Almighty Providence, give me relief under my preſent anxiety: and all this was only from my ſtate of uncertainty concerning the reality of what I had heard and ſeen; and from the earneſtneſs with which I coveted a ſatisfactory knowledge of thoſe beings who had juſt taken their flight from me.

I really believe, the fierceſt wild beaſt, or the moſt ſavage of mankind that had met me, and put me upon my defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that I had no ſeeming poſſibility of ever being rid of my apprehenſions: ſo, finding I could not ſleep, I got up again; but as I could not fly from myſelf, all the art I could uſe with myſelf, was but in vain to obtain me any quiet.

In the height of my diſtreſs I had recourſe to prayer, with no ſmall benefit; begging, that if it pleaſed not the Almighty Power to remove the object of my fears, at leaſt to reſolve my doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. I hereupon, as I always did on ſuch occaſions, found myſelf much more placid and eaſy, and began to hope the beſt, till I had almoſt perſuaded myſelf that I was out of danger; and then laying myſelf down, I reſted very ſweetly, till I was awakened by the impulſe of the following dream.

Methought I was in Cornwall, at my wife's aunt's; and enquiring after her and my children, the old gentlewoman informed me, both my wife and children had been dead ſome time, and that my wife, before her departure, deſired her (that is, her aunt) immediately upon my arrival to tell me, ſhe was only gone to the lake, where I ſhould be ſure to ſee her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the lake to find her. In my paſſage ſhe ſtopped me, crying, 'Whither ſo faſt, Peter?

'I am

Plate I. Published as the Act directs by Harrison & Co. Aug. 2, 1783.

'I am your wife, your Patty.' Methought I did not know her, she was so altered; but observing her voice, and looking more wistfully at her, she appeared to me as the most beautiful creature I ever beheld. I then went to seize her in my arms; but the hurry of my spirits awakened me.

When I got up, I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my door. My dream ran strangely in my head, and I had now nothing but Patty in my mind. 'Oh!' cries I, 'how happy 'could I be with her, though I had 'only her in this solitude. Oh! that 'this was but a reality, and not a 'dream.' And, indeed, though it was but a dream, I could scarce refrain from running to the lake to meet my Patty. But then I checked my folly, and reasoned myself into some degree of temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, 'What, no-'body to converse with! Nobody to 'assist, comfort, or counsel me! This 'is a melancholy situation indeed.' Thus I ran on lamenting till I was almost weary; when, on a sudden, I again heard the voices, 'Hark!' says I, 'here they come again. Well, I 'am now resolved to face them; come 'life, come death! It is not to be 'alone I thus dread; but to have com-'pany about me, and not know who 'or what, is death to me worse than I 'can suffer from them, be they who 'or what they will.'

During my soliloquy the voices increased, and then by degrees diminished as usual; but I had scarce got my gun in my hand, to pursue my resolution of shewing myself to those who uttered them, when I felt such a thump upon the roof of my anti-chamber, as shook the whole fabrick, and set me all over into a tremor; I then heard a sort of shriek, and a rustle near the door of my apartment: all which together seemed very terrible. But I, having before determined to see what and who it was, resolutely opened my door and leaped out. I saw nobody; all was quite silent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own fears a moving. I went then softly to the corner of the building, and there looking down by the glimmer of my lamp, which stood in the window, I saw something in human shape lying at my feet. I gave the word, 'Who's 'there?' Still no one answered. My heart was ready to force away through my side. I was for a while fixed to the earth like a statue. At length, recovering, I stepped in, fetched my lamp, and returning, saw the very beautiful face my Patty appeared under in my dream; and not considering that it was only a dream, I verily thought I had my Patty before me, but she seemed to be stone dead. Upon viewing her other parts, (for I had never yet removed my eyes from her face) I found she had a sort of brown chaplet, like lace, round her head, under and about which her hair was tucked up and twined; and she seemed to me to be cloathed in a thin hair-coloured silk garment, which, upon trying to raise her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was life in the body it contained. I then took her into my arms, and treading a step backwards with her, I put out my lamp; however, having her in my arms, I conveyed her through the door-way in the dark into my grotto; here I laid her upon my bed, and then ran out for my lamp.

'This,' thinks I, 'is an amazing 'adventure. How could Patty come 'here, and dressed in silk and whale-'bone too? sure that is not the reign-'ing fashion in England now? But 'my dream said she was dead. Why, 'truly,' says I, 'so she seems to be. 'But be it so, she is warm. Whether 'this is the place for persons to inha-'bit after death or not, I can't tell, '(for I see there are people here, 'though I don't know them;) but be 'it as it will, she feels as flesh and 'blood; and if I can but bring her 'to stir and act again as my wife, 'what matters it to me what she is! 'it will be a great blessing and com-'fort to me; for she never would have 'come to this very spot, but for my 'good.'

Top-full of these thoughts, I reentered my grotto, shut my door, and lighted my lamp; when going to my Patty, (as I delighted to fancy her) I thought I saw her eyes stir a little. I then set the lamp farther off, for fear of offending them if she should look up; and warming the last glass I had reserved of my Madeira, I carried it to her, but she never stirred. I now supposed the fall had absolutely killed

her, and was prodigiouſly grieved; when, laying my hand on her breaſt, I perceived the fountain of life had ſome motion. This gave me infinite pleaſure; ſo, not deſpairing, I dipped my finger in the wine, and moiſtened her lips with it two or three times, and I imagined they opened a little. Upon this I bethought me, and taking a tea-ſpoon, I gently poured a few drops of the wine by that means into her mouth. Finding ſhe ſwallowed it, I poured in another ſpoonful, and another, till I brought her to herſelf ſo well as to be able to ſit up. All this I did by a glimmering light, which the lamp afforded from a diſtant part of the room, where I had placed it, as I have ſaid, out of her ſight.

I then ſpoke to her, and aſked divers queſtions, as if ſhe had really been Patty, and underſtood me; in return of which, ſhe uttered a language I had no idea of, though in the moſt muſical tone, and with the ſweeteſt accent I ever heard. It grieved me I could not underſtand her. However, thinking ſhe might like to be on her feet, I went to lift her off the bed; when ſhe felt to my touch in the oddeſt manner imaginable: for, while in one reſpect, it was as though ſhe had been caſed up in whalebone, it was at the ſame time as ſoft and warm as if ſhe had been naked.

I then took her in my arms and carried her into my anti-chamber again; where I would fain have entered into converſation, but found ſhe and I could make nothing of it together, unleſs we could underſtand one another's ſpeech. It is very ſtrange my dream ſhould have prepoſſeſſed me ſo of Patty, and of the alteration of her countenance, that I could by no means perſuade myſelf the perſon I had with me was not ſhe; though, upon a deliberate compariſon, Patty, as pleaſing as ſhe always was to my taſte, would no more come up to this fair creature, than a coarſe ale-wife would to Venus herſelf.

You may imagine we ſtared heartily at each other, and I doubted not but ſhe wondered as much as I by what means we came ſo near each other. I offered her every thing in my grotto, which I thought might pleaſe her; ſome of which ſhe gratefully received, as appeared by her looks and behaviour. But ſhe avoided my lamp, and always placed her back toward it. I obſerving that, and aſcribing it to her modeſty in my company, let her have her will, and took care to ſet it in ſuch a poſition myſelf as ſeemed agreeable to her, though it deprived me of a proſpect I very much admired.

After we had ſat a good while, now and then, I may ſay, chattering to one another, ſhe got up, and took a turn or two about the room. When I ſaw her in that attitude, her grace and motion perfectly charmed me, and her ſhape was incomparable; but the ſtrangeneſs of her dreſs put me to my trumps, to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we ſupped together; and I ſet the beſt of every thing I had before her, nor could either of us forbear ſpeaking in our own tongue, though we were ſenſible neither of us underſtood the other. After ſupper I gave her ſome of my cordials, for which ſhe ſhewed great tokens of thankfulneſs, and often, in her way, by ſigns and geſtures, which were very far from being inſignificant, expreſſed her gratitude for my kindneſs. When ſupper had been ſome time over, I ſhewed her my bed, and made ſigns for her to go to it; but ſhe ſeemed very ſhy of that, till I ſhewed her where I meant to lie myſelf, by pointing to myſelf, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my bed. When, at length, I had made this matter intelligible to her, ſhe lay down very compoſedly; and after I had taken care of my fire, and ſet the things I had been uſing for ſupper in their places, I laid myſelf down too; for I could have no ſuſpicious thoughts, or fear of danger, from a form ſo excellent.

I treated her for ſome time with all the reſpect imaginable, and never ſuffered her to do the leaſt part of my work. It was very inconvenient to both of us only to know each other's meaning by ſigns; but I could not be otherwiſe than pleaſed to ſee, that ſhe endeavoured all in her power to learn to talk like me. Indeed, I was not behindhand with her in that reſpect, ſtriving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, ſhe never ſhewed the leaſt diſquiet at her confinement; for I kept my door ſhut at firſt, through fear of loſing her, thinking

ſhe

ſhe would have taken an opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think ſhe could fly.

CHAP. XV.

WILKINS AFRAID OF LOSING HIS NEW MISTRESS—THEY LIVE TOGETHER ALL WINTER—A REMARK ON THAT—THEY BEGIN TO KNOW EACH OTHER'S LANGUAGE—A LONG DISCOURSE BETWEEN THEM AT CROSS-PURPOSES—SHE FLIES—THEY ENGAGE TO BE MAN AND WIFE.

AFTER my new love had been with me a fortnight, finding my water run low, I was greatly troubled at the thought of quitting her any time, to go for more; and having hinted it to her, with ſeeming uneaſineſs, ſhe could not for a while fathom my meaning; but when ſhe ſaw me much confuſed, ſhe came at length, by the many ſigns I made, to imagine it was my concern for her which made me ſo; whereupon ſhe expreſſively enough ſignified I might be eaſy, for ſhe did not fear any thing happening to her in my abſence. On this, as well as I could declare my meaning, I entreated her not to go away before my return. As ſoon as ſhe underſtood what I ſignified to her, by actions, ſhe ſat down, with her arms acroſs, leaning her head againſt the wall, to aſſure me ſhe would not ſtir. However, as I had before nailed a cord to the outſide of the door, I tied that for caution's ſake to the tree, for fear of the worſt: but I believe ſhe had not the leaſt deſign of removing.

I took my boat, net, and water-caſk, as uſual; deſirous of bringing her home a freſh fiſh dinner, and ſucceeded ſo well as to catch enough for ſeveral good meals, and to ſpare. What remained I ſalted, and found ſhe liked that better than the freſh, after a few days ſalting; though ſhe did not ſo well approve of that I had formerly pickled and dried. As my ſalt grew very low, though I had been as ſparing of it as poſſible, I now reſolved to try making ſome; and the next ſummer I effected it.

Thus we ſpent the remainder of the winter together, till the days began to be light enough for me to walk abroad a little in the middle of them: for I was now under no apprehenſions of her leaving me, as ſhe had before this time had ſo many opportunities of doing ſo, but never once attempted it.

I muſt here make one reflection upon our conduct, which you will almoſt think incredible, viz. that we two, of different ſexes, not wanting our peculiar deſires, fully inflamed with love to each other, and no outward obſtacle to prevent our wiſhes, ſhould have been together, under the ſame roof, alone for five months, converſing together from morning to night, (for by this time ſhe pretty well underſtood Engliſh, and I her language) and yet I ſhould never have claſped her in my arms, or have ſhewn any farther amorous deſires to her, than what the deference I all along paid her could give her room to ſurmiſe. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know that the covering ſhe wore was not the work of art, but the work of nature; for I really took it for ſilk; though it muſt be premiſed that I had never ſeen it by any other light than of my lamp. Indeed, the modeſty of her carriage, and ſweetneſs of her behaviour to me; had ſtruck into me ſuch a dread of offending her, that though nothing upon earth could be more capable of exciting paſſion than her charms, I could have died rather than have attempted to ſalute her only without actual invitation.

When the weather cleared up a little, by the lengthening of day-light, I took courage one afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the lake; but ſhe ſweetly excuſed herſelf from it, whilſt there was ſuch a frightful glare of light, as ſhe ſaid; but, looking out at the door, told me, if I would not go out of the wood, ſhe would accompany me: ſo we agreed to take a turn only there. I firſt went myſelf over the ſtyle of the door, and thinking it rather too high for her, I took her in my arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this manner, I knew not what to make of her cloathing, it ſat ſo true and cloſe; but ſeeing her by a ſteadier and truer light in the grove, though a heavy, gloomy one, than my lamp had afforded, I begged ſhe would let me know of what ſilk or other compoſition her garment was made. She ſmiled, and aſked me if mine was not the ſame under my jacket.

'No, lady,' says I, 'I have nothing 'but my skin under my cloaths.'— 'Why, what do you mean?' replies she, somewhat tartly; 'but, indeed, I 'was afraid something was the matter, 'by that nasty covering you wear 'that you might not be seen. Are 'not you a glumm?'—'Yes,' says I, 'fair creature.' (Here, though you may conceive she spoke part English, part her own tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each other, yet I shall give you our discourse, word for word, in plain English) 'Then,' says she, 'I am afraid you must have 'been a very bad man, and have been 'crashee, which I should be very sorry 'to hear.' I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my faults had not at most exceeded other men's; but I had suffered abundance of hardships in my time; and that at last Providence having settled me in this spot, from whence I had no prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of it's mercies to bring to my knowledge and company the most exquisite piece of all his works, in her, which I should acknowledge as long as I lived. She was surprized at this discourse; and asked me, (if I did not mean to impose upon her, and was indeed an ingrashee glumm) why I should tell her I had no prospect of departing from hence. 'Have not you,' says she, 'the same 'prospect that I or any other person 'has of departing? Sir,' added she, 'you don't do well, and really I fear 'you are slit, or you would not wear 'this nasty cumbersome coat,' taking hold of my jacket-sleeve, 'if you were 'not afraid of shewing the signs of a 'bad life upon your natural cloathing.'

I could not for my heart imagine what way there was to get out of my dominions. 'But certainly,' thought I, 'there must be some or other, or she 'would not be so peremptory.' And as to my jacket, and shewing myself in my natural cloathing; I profess she made me blush; and, but for shame, I would have stripped to my skin to have satisfied her. 'But, Madam,' says I, 'pray pardon me, for you are really 'mistaken; I have examined every 'nook and corner of this new world, 'in which we now are, and can find 'no possible outlet; nay, even by the 'same way I came in, I am sure it 'is impossible to get out again.'— 'Why,' says she, 'what outlets have 'you searched for, or what way can 'you expect out, but the way you 'came in? And why is that impossible 'to return by again? If you are not 'slit, is not the air open to you? Will 'not the sky admit you to patrole in 'it, as well as other people? I tell 'you, Sir, I fear you have been slit for 'your crimes; and though you have 'been so good to me, that I can't help 'loving of you heartily for it, yet 'if I thought you had been slit, I 'would not, nay could not, stay a 'moment longer with you; no, though 'it should break my heart to leave 'you.'

I found myself now in a strange quandary, longing to know what she meant by being slit; and had a hundred strange notions in my head whether I was slit or not; for though I knew what the word naturally signified well enough, yet in what manner, or by what figure of speech she applied it to me, I had no idea of. But seeing her look a little angrily upon me, 'Pray, Ma- 'dam,' says I, 'don't be offended, if 'I take the liberty to ask you what 'you mean by the word crashee, so 'often repeated by you; for I am an 'utter stranger to what you mean by 'it.'—'Sir,' says she, 'pray answer 'me first, how you came here?'— 'Madam,' replied I, 'if you will 'please to take a walk to the verge 'of the wood, I will shew you the 'very passage,'—'Sir,' says she, 'I 'perfectly know the range of the rocks 'all round, and by the least descrip- 'tion, without going to see them, can 'tell from which you descended.'— 'In truth,' said I, 'most charming 'lady, I descended from no rock at 'all; nor would I for a thousand 'worlds attempt what could not be 'accomplished but by my destruction.' —'Sir,' says she, in some anger, 'it 'is false, and you impose upon me.' —'I declare to you,' says I, 'Ma- 'dam, what I tell you is strictly true; 'I never was near the summit of any 'of the surrounding rocks, or any 'thing like it; but as you are not far 'from the verge of the wood, be so 'good as to step a little farther, and I 'will shew you my entrance in hither.'

—'Well,'

—'Well,' says she, 'now this odious 'dazzle of light is lessened, I don't 'care if I do go with you.'

When we came far enough to see the bridge, 'There, Madam,' says I, 'there is my entrance, where the sea 'pours into this lake from yonder ca-'vern.'—'It is not possible,' says she; 'this is another untruth: and as I see 'you would deceive me, and are not 'to be believed, farewel; I must be 'gone.—But, hold,' says she, 'let me 'ask you one thing more; that is, by 'what means did you come through 'that cavern? You could not have 'used to have come over the rock!'—'Bless me, Madam!' says I, 'do you 'think I and my boat could fly!—"Come over the rock," did you say? 'No, Madam; I sailed from the great 'sea, the main ocean, in my boat, 'through that cavern into this very 'lake here.'—'What do you mean 'by your boat?' says she. 'You seem 'to make two things of your boat you 'say you sailed with and yourself.'—'I do so,' replied I; 'for, Madam, I 'take myself to be good flesh and 'blood, but my boat is made of wood 'and other materials.'—'Is it so?' says she. 'And, pray, where is this 'boat that is made of wood and other 'materials? under your jacket?'—'Lord, Madam!' says I, 'you put 'me in fear that you was angry; but 'now I hope you only joke with me. 'What, put a boat under my jacket! 'No, Madam; my boat is in the lake.'—'What, more untruths!' says she. 'No, Madam,' I replied; 'if you 'would be satisfied of what I say, '(every word of which is as true as 'that my boat now is in the lake) 'pray walk with me thither, and make 'your own eyes judges what sincerity 'I speak with.' To this she agreed, it growing dusky; but assured me, if I did not give her good satisfaction, I should see her no more.

We arrived at the lake; and going to my wet-dock, 'Now, Madam,' says I, 'pray satisfy yourself whether I 'spake true or no.' She looked at my boat, but could not yet frame a proper notion of it. Says I, 'Madam, in 'this very boat I sailed from the main 'ocean through that cavern into this 'lake; and shall at last think myself 'the happiest of all men if you con-'tinue with me, love me, and credit 'me; and I promise you I'll never de-'ceive you, but think my life happily 'spent in your service.' I found she was hardly content yet to believe what I told her of my boat to be true; till I stepped into it, and pushing from the shore, took my oars in my hand, and sailed along the lake by her, as she walked on the shore. At last, she seemed so well reconciled to me and my boat, that she desired I would take her in. I immediately did so, and we sailed a good way; and as we returned to my dock, I described to her how I procured the water we drank, and brought it to shore in that vessel.

'Well,' says she, 'I have sailed, as 'you call it, many a mile in my life-'time, but never in such a thing as 'this. I own it will serve very well 'where one has a great many things 'to carry from place to place; but to 'be labouring thus at an oar, when 'one intends pleasure in sailing, is, in 'my mind, a most ridiculous piece of 'slavery.'—'Why, pray, Madam, 'how would you have me sail? for 'getting into the boat only, will not 'carry us this way or that without 'using some force.'—'But,' says she, 'pray where did you get this boat, as 'you call it?'—'O Madam!' says I, 'that is too long and fatal a story to 'begin upon now; this boat was made 'many thousand miles from hence, 'among a people coal-black, a quite 'different sort from us; and, when I 'first had it, I little thought of seeing 'this country: but I will make a faith-'ful relation of all to you when we 'come home.' Indeed, I began to wish heartily we were there, for it grew into the night; and having strolled so far without my gun, I was afraid of what I had before seen and heard, and hinted our return; but I found my motion was disagreeable to her, and so I dropped it.

I now perceived, and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agree-able it seemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good-humour again, by seeing and sailing in my boat, I was not willing to prevent it's increase. I told her, if she pleased, we would land, and when I had dock-ed my boat, I would accompany her where and as long as she liked. As we talked and walked by the lake, she made a little run before me, and sprung

into

into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon she merrily called on me to follow her. The light was then so dim, as prevented my having more than a confused sight of her when she jumped in; and looking earnestly after her, I could discern nothing more than a small boat on the water, which skimmed along at so great a rate that I almost lost sight of it presently; but, running along the shore for fear of losing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely lost sight of the boat upon the lake.—'This,' says she, accosting me with a smile, 'is my way of sailing, which, 'I perceive, by the fright you were 'in, you are altogether unacquainted 'with; and, as you tell me, you came 'from so many thousand miles off, it 'is possible you may be made different-'ly from me: but, surely, we are the 'part of the creation which has had 'most care bestowed upon it; and I 'suspect, from all your discourse, to 'which I have been very attentive, it 'is possible you may no more be able 'to fly than to sail as I do.'—'No, 'charming creature,' says I, 'that I 'cannot, I'll assure you.' She then stepping to the edge of the lake, for the advantage of a descent before her, sprung up into the air, and away she went, farther than my eyes could follow her.

I was quite astonished. 'So,' says I, 'then all is over! all a delusion which 'I have so long been in! a mere phantom! Better had it been for me never 'to have seen her, than thus to lose 'her again! But what could I expect 'had she staid? For it is plain she is 'no human composition.—But,' says I, 'she felt like flesh, too, when I lifted 'her out at the door!' I had but very little time for reflection; for, in about ten minutes after she had left me in this mixture of grief and amazement, she alighted just by me on her feet.

Her return, as she plainly saw, filled me with a transport not to be concealed; and which, as she afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed, I was some moments in such an agitation of mind from these unparalleled incidents; that I was like one thunderstruck; but coming presently to myself, and clasping her in my arms with as much love and passion as I was capable of expressing, and for the first time with any desire, 'Are you re-'turned again, kind angel,' said I, 'to bless a wretch who can only be 'happy in adoring you! Can it be, 'that you, who have so many advan-'tages over me, should quit all the 'pleasures that nature has formed you 'for, and all your friends and rela-'tions, to take an asylum in my arms! 'But I here make you a tender of all 'I am able to bestow—my love and 'constancy.'—'Come, come,' says she, 'no more raptures; I find you are 'a worthier man than I thought I had 'reason to take you for, and I beg 'your pardon for my distrust, whilst I 'was ignorant of your imperfections; 'but now I verily believe all you have 'said is true; and I promise you, as 'you have seemed so much to delight in 'me, I will never quit you till death, 'or other as fatal accident shall part 'us. But we will now, if you chuse, 'go home; for I know you have been 'some time uneasy in this gloom, 'though agreeable to me: for, giv-'ing my eyes the pleasure of looking 'eagerly on you, it conceals my blushes 'from your sight.'

In this manner, exchanging mutual endearments and soft speeches, hand in hand, we arrived at the grotto; where we that night consummated our nuptials, without farther ceremony than mutual solemn engagements to each other; which are, in truth, the essence of marriage, and all that was there and then in our power.

CHAP. XVI.

THE AUTHOR'S DISAPPOINTMENT AT FIRST GOING TO BED WITH HIS NEW WIFE—SOME STRANGE CIRCUMSTANCES RELATING THERETO—SHE RESOLVES SEVERAL QUESTIONS HE ASKS HER, AND CLEARS UP HIS FEARS AS TO THE VOICES—A DESCRIPTION OF SWANGEANS.

EVERY calm is succeeded by a storm, as is every storm by it's calm; for, after supper, in order to give my bride the opportunity of undressing alone, which I thought might be most agreeable the first night, I withdrew into the anti-chamber till I thought she was laid; and then, having first

disposed

diſpoſed of my lamp, I moved ſoftly towards her, and ſtepped into bed too; when, on my nearer approach to her, I imagined ſhe had her cloaths on. This ſtruck a thorough damp over me; and aſking her the reaſon of it, not being able to touch the leaſt bit of her fleſh but her face and hands, ſhe burſt out a laughing; and, running her hand along my naked ſide, ſoon perceived the difference ſhe before had made ſuch doubt of between herſelf and me. Upon which ſhe fairly told me, that neither ſhe, nor any perſon ſhe had ever ſeen before, had any other covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with but with their lives. This ſhocked me terribly; not from the horror of the thing itſelf, or any diſtaſte I had to this covering, (for it was quite ſmooth, warm, and ſofter than velvet or the fineſt ſkin imaginable) but from an apprehenſion of her being ſo wholly incaſed in it, that, though I had ſo fine a companion, and now a wife, yet I ſhould have no conjugal benefit from her, either to my own gratification, or the increaſe of our ſpecies.

In the height of my impatience, I made divers eſſays for unfolding this covering, but unſucceſsfully. 'Surely,' ſays I, 'there muſt be ſome way 'of coming at my wiſhes! or why 'ſhould ſhe ſeem ſo ſhy of me at firſt, 'and now we are under engagements 'to each other, meet me half way 'with ſuch a yielding compliance?' I could, if I had had time to ſpare, have gone on, ſtarting objections and anſwering them, in my own breaſt, a great while longer, (for I now knew not what to make of it;) but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling, as tenderly as poſſible, upon her boſom, for the folds or plaits of her garment, ſhe lying perfectly ſtill, and perceiving divers flat broad ledges, like whalebone, ſeemingly under her covering, which cloſely infolded her body, I thought it might be all laced on together ſomewhat like ſtays, and felt behind for the lacing. At length, perceiving me ſo puzzled, and beyond conception vexed at my diſappointment, of a ſudden, leſt I ſhould grow outrageous, (which I was almoſt come to) ſhe threw down all thoſe ſeeming ribs flat to her ſide ſo imperceptibly to me, that I knew nothing of the matter, though I lay cloſe to her; till putting forth my hand again to her boſom, the ſofteſt ſkin, and moſt delightful body, free from all impediment, preſented itſelf to my wiſhes, and gave up itſelf to my embraces.

I ſlept very ſoundly till morning, and ſo did ſhe; but at waking I was very ſolicitous to find out what ſort of being I had had in my arms, and with what qualities her garment was endued, or how contrived, that, notwithſtanding all my fruitleſs attempts to uncover her, ſhe herſelf could ſo inſtantaneouſly diſpoſe of it, undiſcerned by me. 'Well,' thought I, 'ſhe is my wife, I will be ſatisfied in 'every thing; for, ſurely, ſhe will 'not now refuſe to gratify my cu-'rioſity.'

We roſe with the light; but, ſurely, no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up firſt, lighted the fire, and prepared breakfaſt of ſome fiſh-ſoup, thickened with my cream-cheeſe; and then calling her, I kept my eye towards the bed to ſee how ſhe dreſſed herſelf; but throwing aſide the cloaths, ſhe ſtepped out ready dreſſed, and came to me. When I had kiſſed her, and wiſhed her a good day, we ſat down to breakfaſt; which being ſoon over, I told her I hoped every minute of our lives would prove as happy as thoſe we ſo lately paſſed together; which ſhe ſeemed to wiſh with equal ardour. I then told her, now ſhe was my wife, I thought proper to know her name, which I had never before aſked, for fear of giving uneaſineſs; for, as I added, I did not doubt ſhe had obſerved in my behaviour, ever ſince I firſt ſaw her, a peculiar tenderneſs for her, and a ſedulous concern not to offend, which had obliged me hitherto to ſtifle ſeveral queſtions I had to aſk her whenever they would be agreeable to her. She then bid me begin; for, as ſhe was now my wife, whilſt I was ſpeaking, it became her to be all attention, and to give me the utmoſt ſatisfaction ſhe could in all I ſhould require, as ſhe herſelf ſhould have ſo great an intereſt in every thing for the future which would oblige me.

Compliments (if, in compliance with old cuſtom, I may call them ſo, for they were by us delivered from the heart)

heart) being a little over on both ſides, I firſt deſired to know what name ſhe went by before I found her: 'For,' ſays I, 'having only hitherto called 'you Madam, and my Lady, beſides 'the future expreſſion of my love to 'you in the word dear, I would know 'your original name, that ſo I might 'join it with that tender epithet.'— 'That you ſhall,' ſays ſhe, 'and alſo 'my family at another opportunity; 'but as my name will not take up 'long time to repeat at preſent, it is 'YOUWARKEE.—And, pray,' ſays ſhe, 'now gratify me with the know-'ledge of yours.'—'My dear You-'warkee,' ſays I, 'my name was PE-'TER WILKINS when I heard it laſt; 'but that is ſo long ago, I had almoſt 'forgot it.—And now,' ſays I, 'there 'is another thing you can give me a 'pleaſure in.'—'You need, then, only 'mention it, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe. 'That is,' ſays I, 'only to tell me, 'if you did not, by ſome accident, 'fall from the top of the rock over 'my habitation, upon the roof of it, 'when I firſt took you in here; and 'whether you are of the country upon 'the rocks?' She, ſoftly ſmiling, anſwered, 'My dear Peter, you run your 'queſtions too thick; as to my coun-'try, which is not on the rocks, as 'you ſuppoſe, but at a vaſt diſtance 'from hence, I ſhall leave that, till I 'may hereafter, at more leiſure, ſpeak 'of my family, as I promiſed you be-'fore; but as to how I came into this 'grotto, I knew not at firſt, but ſoon 'perceived your humanity had brought 'me in, to take care of me, after a 'terrible fall I had; not from the 'rock, as you ſuppoſe, for then I 'muſt not now have been living to 'enjoy you, but from a far leſs con-'ſiderable height in the air. I'll tell 'you how it happened. A parcel of 'us young people were upon a merry 'ſwangean round this arkoe, which 'we uſually divert ourſelves with at 'ſet times of the year, chacing and 'purſuing one another, ſometimes 'ſoaring to an extravagant height, 'and then ſhooting down again with 'ſurprizing precipitancy, till we even 'touch the trees; when of a ſudden 'we mount again and away. I ſay, 'being of this party, and purſued by 'one of my comrades, I deſcended 'down to the very trees, and ſhe after 'me; but as I mounted, ſhe over-'ſhooting me, bruſhed ſo ſtiffly againſt 'the upper part of my graundee, that 'I loſt my bearing; and being ſo near 'the branches, before I could recover 'it again, I ſunk into the tree, and 'rendered my graundee uſeleſs to me; 'ſo that down I came, and that with 'ſo much force, that I but juſt felt 'my fall, and loſt my ſenſes. Whe-'ther I cried out or no upon my com-'ing to the ground I cannot ſay; but 'if I did, my companion was too far 'gone by that time to hear or take 'notice of me; as ſhe, probably, in 'ſo ſwift a flight, ſaw not my fall. 'As to the condition I was in, or 'what happened immediately after-'wards, I muſt be obliged to you for 'a relation of that: but one thing I 'was quickly ſenſible of, and never 'can forget, viz. that I owe my life 'to your care and kindneſs to me.'

I told her ſhe ſhould have that part of her ſtory from me another time: 'But,' ſays I, 'there is ſomething ſo 'amazing in theſe flights, or ſwan-'geans, as you call them, that I muſt, 'as the queſtions for this day, beg 'you would let me know what is the 'method of them. What is the na-'ture of your covering?' (which was at firſt ſuch an obſtacle to my wiſhes) 'How you put it on? And how you 'uſe it in your ſwangean?'

'Surely, my deareſt Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'but that I can deny you nothing, 'ſince you are my barkatt, which you 'ſeem ſo paſſionately to deſire, the 'latter of your queſtions would not 'be anſwered, for it muſt put me to 'the bluſh. As to our method of 'flight, you ſaw ſomewhat of that laſt 'night, though in a light hardly ſuf-'ficient for you; and for the nature 'of my covering, you perceive that 'now: but to ſhew you how it is put 'on, as you call it, I am afraid it will 'be neceſſary, as far as I can, to put 'it off, before I can make you com-'prehend that; which having done, 'the whole will be no farther a myſ-'tery. But, not to be tedious, is it 'your command that I uncover? Lay 'that upon me, it ſhall be done.' Here I was at a plunge whether to proceed or drop the queſtion. Thinks I, 'If 'my curioſity ſhould be fatal to me, as 'I may ſee ſomething I can never bear 'hereafter, I am undone. She waits

'the

'the command!—Why so?—I know 'not the consequence!—What shall I 'do?' At last, somewhat resolutely, I asked her whether her answer either way to my command would cause her to leave me, or me to love her less. She seeing my hesitation, and perceiving the cause, was so pleased, that she cried out, 'No, my dear Peter, nor 'that, nor all the force on earth, shall 'ever part me from you. But I con-'ceive you are afraid you shall disco-'ver something in me you may not 'like: I fear not that; but an im-'modest appearance before you I can-'not suffer myself to be guilty of, 'but under your own command.'

'My lovely Youwarkee,' says I, 'delay then my desires no longer; and 'since you require a warrant from me, 'I do command you to do it.' Immediately her graundee flew open, (discovering her naked body just to the hip, and round the rim of her belly) and expanding itself was near six feet wide. Here my love and curiosity had a hard conflict; the one to gain my attention to the graundee, and the other to retain my eyes and thoughts on her lovely body, which I had never beheld so much of before. Though I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not easily dismiss so charming a sight. I attentively viewed her lovely flesh, and examined the case that enshrined it: but as I shall give you a full description of this graundee hereafter, in a more proper place, I will mention it no farther here, than to tell you that when I had narrowly surveyed the upper part of it, she in a moment contracted it round her so close that the nicest eye could not perceive the joining of the parts.

'Indeed, my dear Youwarkee,' says I, 'you had the best of reasons for 'saying you was not fearful I should 'discover any thing in you displeasing; for if my bosom glowed with 'love before, you have now therein 'raised an ardent flame which neither 'time, nor aught else, will ever be 'able to extinguish. I now almost 'conceive how you fly; though yet I 'am at a loss to know how you extend and make use of the lower part 'of your graundee, which rises up 'and meets the upper; but I will rather guess at that by what I have 'seen, than raise the colour higher in 'those fair cheeks which are, how-'ever adorned with blushes.' Then running to her, and taking her in my arms, I called her the gift of Heaven; and left off farther interrogatories till another opportunity.

CHAP. XVII.

YOUWARKEE CANNOT BEAR A STRONG LIGHT—WILKINS MAKES HER SPECTACLES WHICH HELP HER—A DESCRIPTION OF THEM.

YOUWARKEE and I having no other company than one another's, we talked together almost from morning to night, in order to learn each other's dialect. But how compliable soever she was in all other respects, I could not persuade her to go out with me to fetch water, or to the lake, in the day-time. It being now the light season, I wanted her to be more abroad; but she excused herself, telling me her people never came into those luminous parts of the country during the false glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their light was more moderate and steadier; and that the place where I resided was not frequented by them for half the year, and at other times only upon parties of pleasure, it not being worth while to settle habitations where they could not abide always. She said, Normnbdsgrsutt was the finest region in the world, where her king's court was, and a vast kingdom. I asked her twice or thrice more to name the country to me, but not all the art we could use, her's in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me conqueror of that poor monosyllable, (for as such it sounded from her sweet lips;) so I relinquished the name to her; telling her, whenever she had any more occasion to mention the place, I desired it might be under the stile of Doorpt Swangeanti, which she promised; but wondered, as she could speak the other so glibly, as she called it, I could not do so too.

I told her, that the light of my native country was far stronger than any I had seen since my arrival at Graundevolet, (for that, I found by her, was the name my dominions went by;)

and that we had a ſun, or ball of fire, which rolled over our heads every day with ſuch a light and ſuch a heat, that it would ſometimes almoſt ſcorch one it was ſo hot, and was of ſuch brightneſs that the eye could not look at it without danger of blindneſs. She was heartily glad, ſhe ſaid, ſhe was not born in ſo wretched a land; and ſhe did not believe there was any other ſo good as her own. I thought no benefit could ariſe from my combating theſe innocent prejudices, ſo I let them alone.

She had often lamented to me the difference of our eye-ſight, and the trouble it was to her that ſhe could not at all times go about with me, till it gave me a good deal of uneaſineſs to ſee her concern. At laſt I told her, that though I believed it would be impoſſible to reduce my ſight to the ſtandard of her's, yet I was perſuaded I could bring her's to bear the ſtrongeſt light I had ever ſeen in this country. She was mightily pleaſed with the thought of that, and ſaid ſhe wiſhed I might, for ſhe was ſenſible of no grief like being obliged to ſtay at home when I went abroad on my buſineſs, and was reſolved to try my experiment if I pleaſed, and in the mean time ſhould heartily pray for the ſucceſs. I hit on the following invention.

I rummaged over all my old things, and by good luck found an old crape hatband. This I tried myſelf, ſingle, before my own eyes, in the ſtrongeſt light we had; but believing I had not yet obſcured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it ſhould not, I trebled it, and then it ſeemed too dark for eyes like mine to diſcover objects through it, and ſo I judged it would ſuit her's; for I was determined to produce ſomething, if poſſible, that would do at firſt, without repetition of trial, which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper method for fixing it on her, and this I thought would be eaſily effected, but had much more difficulty in it than I imagined. At firſt I purpoſed to tie the crape over her eyes, but trying it myſelf I found it very rough and fretting: I then deſigned fixing it to an old crown of a hat that held my fiſh-hooks and lines, and ſo let it hang down before her face, but that alſo had it's inconveniences, as it would flap her eyes in windy weather, and would be not only uſeleſs but very troubleſome in flight; ſo that I was ſcarce ever more puzzled before. At laſt I thought of a method that anſwered exceedingly well, the hint of which I took from ſomewhat I had ſeen with my maſter when I was at ſchool, which he called goggles, and which he uſed to tie round his head to ſkreen his eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that plan was compoſed of old hat, pieces of ram's-horn, and the abovementioned crape.

When I had finiſhed the whole apparatus, I tried it firſt upon myſelf, and finding great reaſon to believe it would perfectly anſwer the intention, I ran directly to Youwarkee. 'Come,' ſays I, 'my dear, will you go with 'me to the water-rill; for I muſt fetch 'ſome this morning?' She ſhook her head, and with tears in her eyes wiſhed ſhe could. 'But,' ſays ſhe, 'let me 'ſee how light it is abroad.'—'No,' ſays I, 'my love, you muſt not look 'out till you go.'—'Indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'if it did not affect my eyes and 'head you ſhould not aſk me twice.'—'Well,' ſays I, 'my Youwarkee, I 'am now come to take you with me; 'and that you may not ſuffer by it, 'turn about, and let me apply the re-'medy I told you of for your ſight.' She wanted much to ſee firſt what it was, but I begged her to forbear till ſhe tried whether it would be uſeful or not. She told me ſhe would abſolutely ſubmit to my direction, ſo I adjuſted the thing to her head. 'Now,' ſays I, 'you have it on, let us go out and try 'it, and let me know the moment you 'find the light offenſive, and take par-'ticular notice how you are affected.' Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no complaint in all our walk to the lake.

'Now, my dear Youwarkee,' ſays I, when we got there, 'what do you 'think of my contrivance? Can you 'ſee at all?'—'Yes, very well,' ſays ſhe. 'But, my dear Peter, you have 'taken the advantage oft he twilight, 'I know, to deceive me; and I had ra-'ther have ſtayed at home than have 'ſubjected you to return in the night 'for the ſake of my company.' I then aſſured her it was mid-day, and no later, which pleaſed her mightily; and,

and, to satisfy her, I untied the string behind; and just let her be convinced it was so. When I had fixed the shade on her head again, she put up her hands and felt the several materials of which it consisted; and after expressing her admiration of it, 'So, my dear Peter,' says she, 'you have now encumbered 'yourself with a wife indeed, for since 'I can come abroad in a glaring light 'with so much ease, you will never 'henceforward be without my com-'pany.'

Youwarkee being thus in spirits, we launched the boat, watered, took a draught of fish, and returned; passing the night at home, in talking of the spectacles, (for that was the name I told her they must go by) and of the fishing, for that exercise delighted her to a great degree: but, above all, the spectacles were her chief theme; she handled them and looked at them again and again, and asked several rational questions about them; as how they could have that effect on her eyes, enabling her to see, and the like. She ventured out with them next day by herself; and, as she threatened, she was as good as her word, for she scarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myself, but accompanied me every where freely, and with delight.

CHAP. XVIII.

YOUWARKEE WITH CHILD—WILKINS'S STOCK OF PROVISIONS—NO BEAST OR FISH IN YOUWARKEE'S COUNTRY—THE VOICES AGAIN—HER REASON FOR NOT SEEING THOSE WHO UTTERED THEM—SHE BEARS A SON—A HARD SPEECH IN HER LYING-IN—DIVERS BIRDS APPEAR—THEIR EGGS GATHERED—HOW WILKINS KEPT ACCOUNT OF TIME.

ABOUT three months after we were married, as we called it, Youwarkee told me she believed she was breeding, and I was mightily pleased with it, for though I had had two children before by Patty, yet I never had seen either of them, so that I longed to be a father. I sometimes amused myself with whimsical conjectures, as whether the child would have a graundee or not; which of us it would be most like; how we should do without a midwife; and what must become of the infant, as we had no milk, in case Youwarkee could not suckle it. Indeed, I had leisure enough for indulging such reveries; for having laid in our winter stores, my wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy ourselves over a good fire, prattling and toying together, making as good cheer as we could; and truly that was none of the worst, for we had as fine bread as need to be eaten; we had pears preserved; all sorts of dried fish; and once a fortnight, for two or three days together, had fresh fish; we had vinegar, and a biting herb, I had found, for pepper; and several sorts of nuts; so there was no want.

It was at this time, after my return from watering one day, where Youwarkee had been with me, that, having taken several fish, and amongst them some I had not before seen, I asked her, as we were preparing and salting some of them, how they managed fish in her country, and what variety they had of them there; she told me, she neither ever saw nor heard of a fish in her life till she came to me. 'How!' says I, 'no fish amongst you! why 'you want one of the greatest dainties 'that can be set upon a table. Do 'you wholly eat flesh,' says I, 'at 'Doorpt Swangeanti?'—'Flesh!' says she, laughingly, 'of what?'—'Nay,' says I, 'you know best what the beasts 'of your own country are; we have 'in England, where I was born and 'bred, oxen, very large hogs, sheep, 'lambs, and calves; these make our 'ordinary dishes: then we have deer, 'hares, rabbits, and these are reck-'oned dainties; besides numberless 'kinds of poultry, and fish without 'stint.'—'I never heard of any of 'these things in my life,' says Youwarkee; 'nor did I ever eat any thing 'but fruits and herbs, and what is 'made from them at Normnbdsgrsutt.' —'You will speak that crabbed word,' says I, 'again.'—'I beg your par-'don, my dear,' says she; 'at Doorpt 'Swangeanti I say, nor I, nor any 'one else, to my knowledge, ever eat 'any such thing: but seeing you eat 'fish, as you call them, I made no 'scruple of doing so too, and like 'them very well, especially the salted

'ones, for I never tasted what you call 'salt neither till I came here.'—'I 'cannot think,' says I, 'what sort of 'a country yours is, or how you all 'live there.'—'O,' says she, 'there is 'no want; I wish you and I were 'there.' I was afraid I had talked too much of her country already, so we called a new cause.

Soon after winter had set in, as we were in bed one night, I heard the voices again: and though my wife had told me of her country-folks, Swangeans, in that place, I being frighted a little waked her; and she hearing them too, cried out, 'There they are! 'it is ten to one but my sister or some 'of our family are there: hark! I be-'lieve I hear her voice.' I myself hearkened very attentively; and by this time understanding a great deal of their language, I not only could distinguish different speakers, but knew the meaning of several of the words they pronounced.

I would have had Youwarkee have gotten up and called to them. 'Not 'for the world,' says she. 'Have you 'a mind to part with me? Though I 'have no intent to leave you, as I am 'with child, if they should try to 'force me away without my consent, I 'may receive some injury, to the dan-'ger of my own life, or at least of 'the child's.' This reason perfectly satisfying me, endeared the loving creature to me ten times more, if possible, than ever.

The next summer brought me a yacom as fair as alabaster. My wife was delivered without the usual assistance, and had as favourable a labour as could be. The first thing I did, after giving her some fish-soup, made as skilfully as I was able, and a little cordial, was to see if my yacom had the graundee or not: finding it had, 'So,' says I to Youwarkee, 'you 'have brought me a legitimate heir to 'my dominions, whose title sure can-'not be disputed, being one of you.' Though I spoke this with as much pleasure, and in as endearing a way as ever I spoke in my life, and quite innocently, the poor Youwarkee burst into tears to such excess there was no pacifying her. I asked her the reason of her grief, begged and intreated her to let me know what disturbed her, but all in vain; till, seeing me in a violent passion, such as I had never before appeared to be in, she told me she was very sorry I should question her fidelity to me. She surprized me in saying this, as I never had any such apprehension. 'No, my dearest wife,' says I, 'I never had any such suspicion as 'you charge me with, I can safely af-'firm; nor can I comprehend your 'meaning by imputing such a thing to 'me.'—'Oh!' says she, 'I am sure 'you have no cause for it! but you 'said the poor child was one of us; as 'much as to intimate, that had it been 'your own it would have been born as 'you were, without the graundee: 'which thought I cannot bear; and 'if you continue to think so it must 'end me; therefore take away my life 'now, rather than let me live to see 'my farther misery.'

I was heartily sorry for what I had said, when I saw the effects of it, though I did not imagine it could have been perverted to such a contrary meaning. But considering her to be the faithfullest and most loving creature upon earth, and that true love cannot bear any thing that touches upon or can be applied (though with ever so forced a construction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous meaning, I attributed her groundless resentment to her excess of fondness only for me; and falling upon the bed by her, and bathing her face in my tears, I assured her the interpretation she had put on my words was altogether foreign from the view they were spoken with; professing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the least cause of jealousy. On my confirming this absolute confidence in her virtue by the strongest asseverations, she grew fully convinced of her error, and acknowledged she had been too rash in censuring me; and growing pleased at my fresh professions of love to her, we presently were reconciled, and became again very good friends.

When Youwarkee had gathered strength again, she proved an excellent nurse to my Pedro, (for that was the name I gave him) so that he soon grew a charming child, able to go in his twelfth month, and spoke in his twentieth. This and two other lovely boys I had by her within three years; every one of which she brought up with the breast, and they thrived delicately.

I do not mention the little interven-

ing

ing occurrences which happened during this period; they conſiſting chiefly of the old rota of fiſhing, watering, providing in the ſummer for the winter, and in managing my ſalt-work; which all together kept me at full employment, comfortably to maintain an increaſing family.

In this time I had found out ſeveral new ſorts of eatables. I had obſerved, as I ſaid before, abundance of birds about the wood and lake in the ſummer months. Theſe, by firing at them two or three times on my firſt coming, I had almoſt cauſed to deſert my dominions. But as I had for the laſt two or three years given no diſturbance at all to them, they were now in as great plenty as ever; and I made great profit of them by the peace they enjoyed; and yet my table never wanted a ſupply, freſh in the ſummer, or ſalted and pickled in winter.

I took notice it was about October theſe birds uſed to come; and moſt of the month of November they were buſy in laying their eggs, which I uſed at that time to find in great plenty along the banks of the lake in the reeds, and made great collections of them; I uſed alſo to find a great many in the woods amongſt the ſhrubs and underwood. Theſe furniſhed our table various ways; for with my cream-cheeſe flour, and a little mixture of rams-horn juice, I had taught my wife to make excellent puddings of them; abundance of them alſo we eat boiled or fried alone, and often as ſauce to our fiſh. As for the birds themſelves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual means of taking them otherwiſe by nets, which I ſet between the trees, and alſo very large pitfal nets, with which I uſed to catch all ſorts, even from the ſize of a thruſh to that of a turkey. But as I ſhall ſay more of theſe when I come to ſpeak of my ward bye and bye, and of my poultry, I ſhall omit any farther mention of them here.

You may perhaps wonder how I could keep an account of my time ſo preciſely, as to talk of the particular months. I will tell you. At my coming from America, I was then exact; for we ſet ſail the fourteenth of November, and ſtruck the firſt or ſecond day of February. So far I kept perfect reckoning. But after that I was not ſo exact; though I kept it as well as my perplexity would admit even then, till the days ſhortening upon me, prevented it.

Hereupon I ſet about making a year for myſelf. I found the duration of the comparative darkneſs, or what might with me be termed night, in the courſe of the twenty four hours or day, gradually increaſed for ſix months; after which it decreaſed reciprocally for an equal time, and the lighter part of the day took it's turn, as in our parts of the world, only inverſely: ſo that as the light's decreaſe became ſenſible about the middle of March, it was at the greateſt pitch the latter end of Auguſt, or beginning of September; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreaſing to the cloſe of February, when I had the longeſt portion of light. Hereupon, dividing my year into two ſeaſons only, I began the winter half in March, and the ſummer half in September. Thus my winter was the ſpring and ſummer quarters of us in Europe, and my ſummer thoſe of our autumn and winter.

From my ſettling this matter I kept little account of days or weeks, but only reckoned my time by ſummer and winter; ſo that I am pretty right as to the revolutions of theſe; though the years, as to their notation, I kept no account of, nor do I know what year of the Lord it now is.

CHAP. XIX.

WILKINS'S CONCERN ABOUT CLOATHING FOR PEDRO HIS ELDEST SON—HIS DISCOURSE WITH HIS WIFE ABOUT THE SHIP—HER FLIGHT TO IT—HIS MELANCHOLY REFLECTIONS TILL HER RETURN—AN ACCOUNT OF WHAT SHE HAD DONE, AND OF WHAT SHE BROUGHT—SHE CLOATHS HER CHILDREN, AND TAKES A SECOND FLIGHT.

AS my boy Pedro grew up, though, as I ſaid before, he had the graundee, yet it was of leſs dimenſions than it ought to have been to be uſeful to him; ſo that it was viſible he could never fly, for it would ſcarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from ſide to ſide both ways.

This

This pleaſed my wife to the heart; for now ſhe was ſure, whatever I had done before, I could not ſuſpect her. Be that as it will, the boy's graundee not being a ſufficient veſtment for him, it became neceſſary he ſhould be cloathed.

I turned over my hoard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at leaſt, that we knew how to fit him with. I had deſcribed my own country veſt for lads to Youwarkee, and ſhe formed a tolerable idea of it, but we had no tackle to alter any thing with. 'O my dear,' ſays I, 'had I 'but been born with the graundee, I 'need not be now racking my brains 'to get my child cloaths.'—'What do 'you mean by that?' ſays ſhe.—'Why,' ſays I, 'I would have flown 'to my ſhip,' (for I had long before related to her all my ſea-adventures, till the veſſel's coming to the magnetical rock) 'and have brought ſome 'ſuch things from thence, as you, not 'wanting them in this country, can 'have no notion of.' She ſeemed mighty inquiſitive to underſtand how a ſhip was made, what it was moſt like to, how a perſon who never ſaw one might know it only by the deſcription, and how one might get into it; with abundance of the like queſtions. She then enquired what ſort of things thoſe needles and ſeveral other utenſils were, which I had at times been ſpeaking of; and in what part of a ſhip they uſually kept ſuch articles. And I, to gratify her curioſity, as I perceived ſhe took a pleaſure in hearing me, anſwered all her queſtions to a ſcruple; not then conceiving the ſecret purpoſe of all this inquiſitiveneſs.

About two days after this, having been out two or three hours in the morning, to cut wood; at coming home I found Pedro crying, ready to break his heart, and his little brother Tommy hanging to him, and crawling about the floor after him: the youngeſt, pretty baby! was faſt aſleep upon one of the beaſt-fiſh ſkins, in a corner of the room. I aſked Pedro for his mother, but the poor infant had nothing farther to ſay to the matter, than 'Mammy run away, I cry! Mammy 'run away, I cry!' I admired where ſhe was gone, never before miſſing her from our habitation. However, I waited patiently till bed-time, but no wife. I grew very uneaſy then. Yet, as my children were tired and ſleepy, I thought I had beſt go to bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their ſuppers, we lay down together. They ſlept; but my mind was too full to permit the cloſure of my eyes. A thouſand different chimeras ſwam in my imagination relating to my wife. One while I fancied her carried away by her kinsfolks; then, that ſhe was gone of her own accord to make peace with her father. But that thought would not fix, being put aſide by her conſtant tenderneſs to her children, and regard to me; whom I was ſure ſhe would not have left without notice. 'But, alas!' ſays I, 'ſhe may even now be near me, but 'taken ſo ill ſhe cannot get home, or 'ſhe may have died ſuddenly in the 'wood.' I lay tumbling and toſſing in great anxiety, not able to find out any excuſable occaſion ſhe could have of ſo long abſence. 'And then,' thinks I, 'if ſhe ſhould either be dead, 'or have quite left me, which will be of 'equally bad conſequence to me, what 'can I do with three poor helpleſs in-'fants? If they were a little more 'grown up, they might be helpful to 'me, and to each other; but at their 'age how ſhall I ever rear them with-'out the tenderneſs of a mother? And 'to ſee them pine away before my 'face, and not know how to help them, 'will diſtract me.'

Finding I could neither ſleep nor lie ſtill, I roſe, intending to ſearch all the woods about, and call to her, that if any accident had prevented ſight of her, ſhe might at leaſt hear me. But upon opening the door, and juſt ſtepping out, how agreeably was I ſurprized to meet her coming in, with ſomething on her arm. 'My dear 'Youwarkee,' ſays I, 'where have 'you been? What has befallen you to 'keep you out ſo long? The poor chil-'dren have been at their wit's end to 'find you; and I, my dear, have been 'inconſolable, and was now, almoſt 'diſtracted, coming in ſearch of you.'

Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what concern ſhe had given me and the children. 'My deareſt Peter,' ſays ſhe, (kiſſing me) 'pray forgive 'me the only thing I have ever done 'to offend you, and the laſt cauſe you 'ſhall ever have, by my good will, to 'complain of me; but walk within

'doors,

'doors, and I will give you a farther 'account of my abſence. Don't you 'remember what delight I took the 'other day to hear you talk of your 'ſhip?'—'Yes,' ſays I, 'you did ſo; 'but what of that?'—'Nay, pray,' ſays ſhe, 'forgive me, for I have been 'to ſee it.'—'That's impoſſible,' ſays I: and truly this was the firſt time I ever thought ſhe went about to deceive me. 'I do aſſure you,' ſays ſhe, 'I 'have; and a wonderful thing it is! 'But if you diſtruſt me, and what I 'ſay, I have brought proof of it; ſtep 'out with me to the verge of the wood, 'and ſatisfy yourſelf.'—'But pray,' ſays I, 'who preſented you with this 'upon your arm?'—'I vow,' ſays ſhe, 'I had forgot this; yes, this will, 'I believe, confirm to you what I have 'ſaid.' I turned it over and over; and looking wiſtfully upon her, ſays I, 'This waiſtcoat, indeed, is the very 'fellow to one that lay in the captain's 'locker in the cabbin.'—'Say not the 'very fellow,' ſays ſhe, 'but rather 'ſay the very ſame, for I'll aſſure 'you it is ſo; and had you been with 'me, we might have got ſo many 'things for ourſelves and the chil-'dren, we ſhould never have wanted 'more, though we lived theſe hundred 'years; but as it is, I have left ſome-'thing without the wood for you to 'bring up.' When we had had our talk out, ſhe hearing the children ſtir, took them up, and was going, as ſhe always did, to get their breakfaſts. 'Hold,' ſays I, 'this journey muſt 'have fatigued you too much already, 'lay yourſelf to reſt, and leave every 'thing elſe to me.'—'My dear,' ſays ſhe, 'you ſeem to think this flight 'tireſome, but you are miſtaken; I 'am more weary with walking to the 'lake and back again, than with all 'the reſt. Oh,' ſays ſhe, 'if you had 'but the graundee, flying would reſt 'you, after the greateſt labour; for 'the parts which are moved with ex-'erciſe on the earth, are all at reſt in 'flight; as, on the contrary, the parts 'uſed in flight are when on earthly 'travel. The whole trouble of flight 'is in mounting from the plain ground, 'but when once you are upon the 'graundee, at a proper height, all the 'reſt is play, a mere trifle; you need 'only think of your way, and incline 'to it, your graundee directs you as 'readily as your feet obey you on the 'ground, without thinking of every 'ſtep you take; it does not require la-'bour, as your boat does, to keep you 'a going.'

After we had compoſed ourſelves, we walked to the verge of the wood, to ſee what cargo my wife had brought from the ſhip. I was aſtoniſhed at the bulk of it; and ſeeing, by the outſide, it conſiſted of cloaths, I took it with much ado upon my ſhoulders, and carried it home. But upon opening it I found far more treaſure than I could have imagined; for there was a ham-mer, a great many ſpikes and nails, three ſpoons, about five plates of pew-ter, four knives and a fork, a ſmall china punch-bowl, two chocolate-cups, a paper of needles, and ſeveral of pins, a parcel of coarſe thread, a pair of ſhoes, and abundance of ſuch other things as ſhe had heard me wiſh for and deſcribe; beſides as much linen and woollen, of one ſort or another, as made a good package for all the other things; with a great tin porridge-pot, of about two gallons, tied to the out-ſide; and all theſe as nicely ſtowed as if ſhe had been bred a packer.

When I had viewed the bundle, and poiſed the weight; 'How was it poſſi-'ble, my dear Youwarkee,' ſaid I, 'for you to bring all this? You could 'never carry them in your hands.'—'No, no,' replied ſhe, 'I carried them 'on my back.'—'Is it poſſible,' ſays I, 'for your graundee to bear yourſelf 'and all this weight too in the air, and 'to ſuch an height as the top of theſe 'rocks?'—'You will always,' replies ſhe, 'make the height a part of your 'difficulty in flying; but you are de-'ceived; for as the firſt ſtroke (I have 'heard you ſay often) in fighting is 'half the battle, ſo it is in flying; get 'but once fairly on the wind, nothing 'can hurt you afterwards. My me-'thod, let me tell you, was this; I 'climbed to the higheſt part of the 'ſhip, where I could ſtand clear, hav-'ing firſt put up my burden, which 'you have there; and then getting that 'on my back near my ſhoulders, I 'took the two cords you ſee hang looſe 'to it in my two hands, and extend-'ing my graundee, leaped off flatwiſe 'with my face towards the water; 'when

'when instantly playing two or three 'good strokes with my graundee, I 'was out of danger; now, if I had 'found the bundle too heavy to make 'my first strokes with, I should di-'rectly have turned on my back, drop-'ped my bundle, and floated in my 'graundee to the ship again, as you 'once saw me float on the lake.' Says I, 'you must have flown a prodigious 'distance to the ship, for I was several 'days sailing, I believe three weeks, 'from my ship before I reached the 'gulph; and after that could be little 'less than five weeks (as I accounted 'for it) and at a great rate of sailing 'too under the rock, before I reached 'the lake; so that the ship must be a 'monstrous way off.'—'No, no,' says she, 'your ship lies but over yon cliff, 'that rises as it were with two points; 'and as to the rock itself, it is not 'broader than our lake is long; but 'what made you so tedious in your 'passage was, many of the windings 'and turnings in the cavern returning 'into themselves again; so that you 'might have gone round and round 'till this time if the tide had not 'luckily struck you into the direct 'passage: this,' says she, 'I have 'heard from some of my countrymen, 'who have flown up it, but could 'never get quite through.'

'I wish with all my heart,' says I, 'fortune had brought me first to light 'in this country; or (but for your 'sake I could almost say) had never 'brought me into it at all; for to be 'a creature of the least significancy 'of the whole race about one, is a me-'lancholy circumstance.'—'Fear not,' says she, 'my love, for you have a 'wife will hazard all for you, though 'you are restrained; and as my incli-'nations and affections are so much 'yours, that I need but know your 'desires to execute them as far as my 'power extends; surely you, who can 'act by another, may be content to 'forego the trouble of your own per-'formance. I perceive, indeed,' continued she, 'you want mightily to go 'to your ship, and are more uneasy 'now you know it is safe, than you 'was before; but that being past my 'skill to assist you in, if you will com-'mand your deputy to go backwards 'and forwards in your stead, I am 'ready to obey you.'

Thus ended our conversation about the ship for that time. But it left not my mind so soon; for a stronger hankering after it pursued me now than ever since my wife's flight, but to no purpose.

We sat us down, and sorted out our cargo, piece by piece; and having found several things proper for the children, my wife longed to enter upon some piece of work towards cloathing Pedro in the manner she had heard me talk of, and laid hard at me to shew her the use of the needles, thread, and other things she had brought. Indeed, I must say she proved very tractable; and from the little instruction I was able to give her, soon outwrought my knowledge; for I could only shew her that the thread went through the needle, and both through the cloth to hold it together; but for any thing else I was as ignorant as she. In much less time than I could have imagined, she had cloathed my son Pedro, and had made a sort of mantle for the youngest. But now seeing us so smart, (for I took upon me sometimes to wear the green waistcoat she had brought under my dirty jacket) she began to be ashamed of herself, as she said, in our fine company; and afterwards (as I shall soon acquaint you) got into our fashion.

Seeing the advantages of her flight to the ship, and that so many conveniences arose from it, she was frequently at me to let her go again. I should as much have wished for another return of goods as she, but I could by no means think of parting with my factor; for I knew her eagerness to please me, and that she would stick at nothing to perform it; 'And,' thinks I, 'should any accident happen to her, 'by over loading, or otherwise, and I 'should lose her, all the other com-'modities of the whole world put to-'gether would not compensate her 'loss.' But as she so earnestly desired it, and assured me she would run no hazards, I was prevailed on at length, by her incessant importunities, to let her go; though under certain restrictions, which she promised me to comply with. As first, I insisted upon it that she should take a tour quite round the rock, setting out the same way I had last gone with my boat; and, if possible, find out the gulph, which I told her she could not mistake, by reason

reaſon of the noiſe the fall of the water made; and deſired her to remark the place, ſo as I might know within-ſide where it was without. And then I told her ſhe might review and ſearch every hole in the ſhip as ſhe pleaſed; and if there were any ſmall things ſhe had a mind to bring from it, ſhe was welcome, provided the bundle ſhe ſhould make up was not above a fourth part either of the bulk or weight of the laſt. All which ſhe having engaged punctually to obſerve, ſhe bid me not expect her till I ſaw her, and ſhe would return as ſoon as poſſible. I then went with her to the confines of the wood, (for I told her I deſired to ſee her mount) and ſhe, after we had embraced, bidding me to ſtand behind her, took her flight.

CHAP. XX.

THE AUTHOR OBSERVES HER FLIGHT—A DESCRIPTION OF A GLUMM IN THE GRAUNDEE—SHE FINDS OUT THE GULPH, NOT FAR FROM THE SHIP—BRINGS HOME MORE GOODS; MAKES HER A GOWN BY HER HUSBAND'S INSTRUCTION.

I Had ever ſince our marriage been deſirous of ſeeing Youwarkee fly, but this was the firſt opportunity I had of it; and indeed the ſight was worthy of all the attention I paid it; for I deſired her ſlowly to put herſelf in proper order for it, that I might make my obſervation the more accurately; and ſhall now give you an account of the whole apparatus, though ſeveral parts of the deſcription were taken from ſubſequent views; for it would have been impoſſible to have made juſt remarks of every thing at that once, eſpecially as I only viewed her back parts then.

I told you before, I had ſeen her graundee open, and quite extended, as low as her middle; but that being in the grotto by lamp-light, I could not take ſo juſt a ſurvey as now, when the ſort of light we ever had was at the brighteſt.

She firſt threw up two long branches or ribs of the whale-bone, as I called it before, (and indeed for ſeveral of it's properties, as toughneſs, elaſticity, and pliableneſs, nothing I have ever ſeen can ſo juſtly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper-bone of the ſpine, and which, when not extended, lie bent over the ſhoulders on each ſide of the neck forwards, from whence, by nearer and nearer approaches, they juſt meet at the lower rim of the belly in a ſort of point; but when extended they ſtand their whole length above the ſhoulders, not perpendicularly, but ſpreading outwards, with a web of the ſofteſt and moſt pliable and ſpringy membrane that can be imagined, in the interſtice between them, reaching from their root or joint on the back up above the hinder part of the head, and near half-way their own length; but when cloſed the membrane falls down in the middle upon the neck, like an handkerchief. There are alſo two other ribs riſing as it were from the ſame root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not ſo long as the others. Theſe are filled up in the interſtice between them and the upper ones with the ſame membrane; and on the lower ſide of this is alſo a deep flap of the membrane, ſo that the arms can be either above or below it in flight, and are always above it when cloſed. This laſt rib, when ſhut, flaps under the upper one, and alſo falls down with it before to the waiſt, but is not joined to the ribs below. Along the whole ſpine-bone runs a ſtrong, flat, broad, griſly cartilage, to which are joined ſeveral other of theſe ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the interſtices with the above membrane, and are jointed to the ribs of the perſon juſt where the plane of the back begins to turn towards the breaſt and belly; and, when ſhut, wrap the body round to the joints on the contrary ſide, folding neatly one ſide over the other. At the lower ſpine are two more ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the hips, and long enough to meet the joint on the contrary ſide croſs the belly; and from the hip-joint, which is on the outermoſt edge of the hip-bone, runs a pliable cartilage quite down the outſide of the thigh and leg to the ancle; from which there branch out divers other ribs horizontally alſo when open, but when cloſed they encompaſs the whole thigh and leg, rolling inwards croſs the back of the leg

and thigh, till they reach and juſt cover the cartilage. The interſtices of theſe are alſo filled up with the ſame membrane. From the two ribs which join to the lower ſpine-bone there hangs down a ſort of ſhort apron, very full of plaits, from hip-joint to hip-joint, and reaches below the buttocks, half way or more to the hams. This has alſo ſeveral ſmall limber ribs in it. Juſt upon the lower ſpine-joint, and above the apron, as I call it, there are two other long branches, which, when cloſe, extend upon the back from the point they join at below to the ſhoulders, where each rib has a claſper, which reaching over the ſhoulders, juſt under the fold of the uppermoſt branch or ribs, hold up the two ribs flat to the back like a V, the interſtices of which are alſo filled up with the aforeſaid membrane. This laſt piece, in flight, falls down almoſt to the ancles, where the two claſpers lapping under each leg within-ſide, hold it very faſt; and then alſo the ſhort apron is drawn up, by the ſtrength of the ribs in it, between the thighs forward, and covers as far as the rim of the belly. The whole arms are covered alſo from the ſhoulders to the wriſt with the ſame delicate membrane, faſtened to ribs of proportionable dimenſions, and jointed to a cartilage on the outſide in the ſame manner as on the legs.

It is very ſurprizing to feel the difference of theſe ribs when open and when cloſed; for cloſed they are as pliable as the fineſt whalebone, or more ſo; but when extended, are as ſtrong and ſtiff as a bone. They are tapering from the roots, and are broader or narrower, as beſt ſuits the places they occupy, and the ſtreſs they are put to, up to their points, which are almoſt as ſmall as a hair. The membrane between them is the moſt elaſtick thing I ever met with, occupying no more ſpace, when the ribs are cloſed, than juſt from rib to rib, as flat and ſmooth as poſſible; but when extended in ſome poſtures, will dilate itſelf ſurprizingly. This will be better comprehended by the plates, where you will ſee ſeveral glumms and gawreys in different attitudes, than expreſſed by words.

As ſoon as my wife had expanded the whole graundee, being upon plain ground, ſhe ſtooped forward, moving with a heavy wriggling motion at firſt, which put me into ſome pain for her; but after a few ſtrokes, beginning to riſe a little, ſhe cut through the air like lightning, and was ſoon over the edge of the rock, and out of my ſight.

It is the moſt amazing thing in the world to obſerve the large expanſion of this graundee when open; and, when cloſed, (as it all is in a moment upon the party's deſcent) to ſee it ſit ſo cloſe and compact to the body, as no taylor can come up to it; and then the ſeveral ribs lie ſo juſtly diſpoſed in the ſeveral parts, that inſtead of being, as one would imagine, a diſadvantage to the ſhape, they make the body and limbs look extremely elegant; and by the different adjuſtment of their lines on the body and limbs, the whole, to my fancy, ſomewhat reſembles the dreſs of the old Roman warriors in their buſkins; and, to appearance, ſeems much more noble than any factitious garb I ever ſaw, or can frame a notion of to myſelf.

Though theſe people in height, ſhape, and limb, very much reſemble the Europeans, there is yet this difference, that their bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their limbs, though as long and well-ſhaped, are ſeldom ſo thick as ours: and this I obſerved generally in all I ſaw of them during a long time among them afterwards; but their ſkin, for beauty and fairneſs, exceeds ours very much.

My wife having now taken her ſecond flight, I went home, and never left my children till her return: this was three days after our parting. I was in bed with my little ones when ſhe knocked at the door. I ſoon let her in, and we received each other with a glowing welcome. The news ſhe brought me was very agreeable. She told me ſhe firſt went and pried into every nook in the ſhip, where ſhe had ſeen ſuch things, could we get at them, as would make us very happy. Then ſhe ſet out the way I told her to go, in order to find the gulph. She was much afraid ſhe ſhould not have diſcovered it, though ſhe flew very ſlow, that ſhe might be ſure to hear the water-fall, and not over-ſhoot it. It was long ere ſhe came at it; but when ſhe did, ſhe perceived ſhe might have ſpared moſt of her trouble, had ſhe ſet out the other way; for, after ſhe had flown

almoſt

almoſt round the iſland, and not before, ſhe began to hear the fall, and, upon coming up to it, found it to be not above ſix minutes flight from the ſhip. She ſaid the entrance was very narrow, and, ſhe thought, lower than I repreſented it; for ſhe could ſcarce diſcern any ſpace between the ſurface of the water and the arch-way of the rock. I told her that might happen from the riſe or fall of the ſea itſelf. But I was glad to hear the ſhip was no farther from the gulph; for my head was never free from the thoughts of my ſhip and cargo. She then told me ſhe had left a ſmall bundle for me without the wood, and went to look after her children. I brought up the bundle; and though it was not near ſo large as the other, I found ſeveral uſeful things in it, wrapped up in four or five yards of dark blue woollen-cloth, which I knew no name for, but which was thin and light, and about a yard wide. I aſked her where ſhe met with this ſtuff: ſhe anſwered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our bed, in a cloth like our ſheet, which ſhe cut open, and took it out of.—'Well,' ſays I, 'and what will you 'do with this?'—'Why, I will make 'me a coat, like yours,' ſays ſhe; 'for I don't like to look different from 'my dear huſband and children.'—'No, Youwarkee,' replied I, 'you 'muſt not do ſo: if you make ſuch a 'jacket as mine, there will be no diſ'tinction between glumm and gawrey; 'the gowren praave, in my country, 'would not on any account go dreſſed 'like a glumm; for they wear a fine 'flowing garment called a gown, 'that ſits tight about the waiſt, and 'hangs down from thence in folds, 'like your barras, almoſt to the 'ground, ſo that you can hardly diſ'cern their feet, and no other part of 'their body but their hands and face, 'and about as much of their necks 'and breaſts as you ſee in your graun'dee.'

Youwarkee ſeemed highly delighted with this new-fancied dreſs, and worked day and night at it againſt the cold weather. Whilſt ſhe employed herſelf thus, I was buſied in providing my winter ſtores; which I was forced to do alone now, herſelf and children taking up all my wife's time. About a fortnight after ſhe had began mantua-making, ſhe preſented herſelf to me one day as I came from work in her new gown: and, truly, conſidering the ſcanty deſcription I had given her of ſuch a garment, it appeared a good comely dreſs. Though it had not one plait about the body, it ſat very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a counteſs; for ſhe would have put it all in (all the ſtuff ſhe had) had there been as much more of it. I could ſee no opening before, ſo aſked her how ſhe got it on. She told me ſhe laid along on the ground, and crept through the plaits at the bottom, and ſewed the body round her after ſhe had got her hands and arms through the ſleeves. I wondered at her contrivance; and, ſmiling, ſhewed her how ſhe ſhould put it on, and alſo how to pin it before: and after ſhe had done that, and I had turned up about half a yard of ſleeve, which then hung down to her fingers ends, I kiſſed her, and called her my country-woman, of which and her new gown ſhe was very proud for a long time.

CHAP. XXI.

THE AUTHOR GETS A BREED OF POULTRY, AND BY WHAT MEANS—BUILDS THEM AN HOUSE—HOW HE MANAGED TO KEEP THEM IN WINTER.

ONE day, as I was traverſing the woods to view my bird-traps, looking into the underwood among the great trees on my right-hand, I ſaw a wood-hen (a bird I uſed to call ſo, from it's reſemblance in make to our Engliſh poultry) come out of a little thicket. I know not whether my ruſtling or what had diſturbed it; but I let her paſs, and ſhe ran away before me. When ſhe was fairly out of ſight, I ſtepped up, and found ſhe had a neſt and ſixteen eggs there. I exactly marked the place; and taking away one of the eggs, I broke it, at ſome diſtance from the neſt, to ſee how forward they were; and I had no ſooner broke the ſhell but out came a young chicken. I then looked into the neſt again, and taking up more of the eggs, I found them all juſt ſplintered in the ſhell, and ready for hatching. I had immediately a deſire to ſave them, and bring them up tame;

but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little ſtrengthened under the hen, they would all die; ſo I let them remain till next day. In the mean while I prepared ſome ſmall netting of ſuch a proper ſize as I conceived would do; and with this I contrived, by faſtening it to ſtakes which I fixed in the ground, to ſurround the neſt, and me on the outſide of it. All the while I was doing this the hen did not ſtir, ſo that I thought ſhe had either been abſent when I came, or had hatched and gone off with the young ones. As to her being gone I was under no concern; for I had no deſign to catch her, but only to confine the chickens within my net if they were hatched. But, however, I went nearer, and peeping in, found ſhe ſat ſtill, ſqueezing herſelf as flat to the ground as ſhe could. I was in twenty minds whether to take her firſt, and then catch the chickens, or to let her go off, and then clap upon them; but as I propoſed to let her go, I thought if ſhe would ſit ſtill till I had got the chickens, that would be the beſt way; ſo I ſoftly kneeled down before her, and ſliding my hand under her, I gently drew out two, and put them in a bag I had in my left-hand. I then dipped again and again, taking two every turn; but going a fourth time, as I was bringing out my prize, the hen jumped up, flew out, and made ſuch a noiſe, that, though I the minute before ſaw ſix or ſeven more chicks in a lump where ſhe had ſat, and kept my eye upon them, yet, before I could put the laſt two I had got into my bag, theſe were all gone, and in three hours ſearch I could not find one of them, though I was ſure they could not paſs my net, and muſt be within the compaſs of a ſmall room, my toils incloſing no more. After tiring myſelf with looking for them, I marched home with thoſe eight I had got.

I told Youwarkee what I had done, and how I intended to manage the little brood, and, if I could, to bring them up tame. We kept them ſome days very warm by the fire, and fed them often, as I had ſeen my mother do with her early chickens; and in a fortnight's time they were as ſtout and familiar as common poultry. We kept them a long while in the houſe; and when I fed them I always uſed them to a particular whiſtle, which I alſo taught my wife, that they might know both us and their feeding time; and in a very ſhort while they would come running, upon the uſual ſound, like barn-door fowls to the name of Biddy.

There happened in this brood to be five hens and three cocks; and they were now ſo tame that, having cut their wings, I let them out, when the weather favoured, at my door, where they would pick about in the wood, and get beſt part of their ſubſiſtence; and having uſed them to rooſt in a corner of my anti-chamber, they all came in very regularly at night, and took their places. My hens, at the uſual ſeaſon, laid me abundance of eggs, and hatched me a brood or two each of chickens; ſo that now I was at a loſs to know what to do with them, they were become ſo numerous. The anti-chamber was no longer a proper receptacle of ſuch a flock, and therefore I built a little houſe, at a ſmall diſtance from my own, on purpoſe for their reception and entertainment. I had by this time cleared a ſpot of ground on one ſide of my grotto, by burning up the timber and underwood which had covered it: this I incloſed, and within that incloſure I raiſed my aviary; and my poultry thrived very well there, ſeemed to like their habitation, and grew very fat.

My wife and I took much delight in viſiting and feeding them, and it was a fine diverſion alſo to my boys; but at the end of ſummer, when all the other birds took their annual flight, away went every one of my new-raiſed brood with them, and one of my old cocks, the reſt of the old ſet remaining very quiet with me all the winter. The next ſummer, when my chicks of that year grew up a little, I cut their wings, and by that means preſerved all but one, which I ſuppoſe was either not cut ſo cloſe as the reſt, or his wings had grown again. From this time I found, by long experience, that not two out of a hundred that had once wintered with me would ever go away, though I did not cut their wings; but all of the ſame ſeaſon would certainly go off with the wild ones, if they could any ways make a ſhift to fly. I afterwards got a breed of black-necks, which was a name I gave them from the peculiar blackneſs of their necks,

let

let the reſt of their bodies be of what colour they would, as they are indeed of all colours. Theſe birds were as big or bigger than a turkey, of a delicious flavour, and were bred from turkey eggs hatched under my own wood-hens in greaty plenty. I was forced to clip theſe as I did the other young fowl, to keep them; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every night during the dark ſeaſon. The greateſt difficulty now was to get meat for all theſe animals in the winter, when they would ſit on the rooſt two days together, if I did not call and feed them, which I was ſometimes forced to do by lamp-light, or they would have ſtarved in cloudy weather. But I overcame that want of food by an accidental diſcovery; for I obſerved my black-necks in the woods jump many times together at a ſort of little round heads or pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a ſhrub that grew in great abundance there. I cut ſeveral of theſe heads, and carrying them home with me broke them, and took out a ſpoonful or more from each head of ſmall yellow ſeeds; which giving to my poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I ſoon laid in a ſtock for twice my number of mouths, ſo that they never after wanted. I tried ſeveral times to raiſe a breed of water-fowl by hatching their eggs under my hens; but not one in ten of the ſorts, when hatched, were fit to eat; and thoſe that were would never live and thrive with me, but got away to the lake, I having no ſort of water nearer me; ſo I dropped my deſign of water-fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my land-fowl ſo conſtantly in my farm-yard, I never wanted of that ſort at my table, where we eat abundance of them; for my whole ſide of the lake in a few years was like a farm-yard, ſo full of poultry that I never knew my ſtock; and upon the uſual whiſtle they would flock round me from all quarters. I had every thing now but cattle, not only for the ſupport but convenience and pleaſure of life; and ſo happily ſhould I have fared here, if I had had but a cow and bull, a ram and ſheep, that I would not have changed my dominions for the crown of England.

CHAP. XXII.

REFLECTIONS ON MANKIND—THE AUTHOR WANTS TO BE WITH HIS SHIP—PROJECTS GOING, BUT PERCEIVES IT IMPRACTICABLE—YOUWARKEE OFFERS HER SERVICE, AND GOES—AN ACCOUNT OF HER TRANSACTIONS ON BOARD—REMARKS ON HER SAGACITY—SHE DISPATCHES SEVERAL CHESTS OF GOODS THROUGH THE GULPH TO THE LAKE—AN ACCOUNT OF A DANGER SHE ESCAPED—THE AUTHOR HAS A FIT OF SICKNESS.

STRANGE is the temper of mankind; who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any return from my ſhip, I reſted tolerably eaſy, and but ſeldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her, thinking myſelf happy in what I had, and compleatly ſo ſince my union with my dear wife: but after I had got what I could never have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the reſt, and thought I ſhould never enjoy true happineſs while even a plank of the ſhip remained. My head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wiſhed for her in the lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I ſhould be an emperor: and though I wanted for nothing to maintain life, and had ſo good a wife and five children I was very fond of, yet the one thing I had not, reduced the comfort of all the reſt to a ſcanty pattern, even ſo low as to deſtroy my whole peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the cavern again, but was reſtrained from the attempt by the certain impracticableneſs of it. Then I thought Youwarkee ſhould make another trip to the ſhip: 'But what can 'ſhe bring from it,' ſays I to myſelf, 'in reſpect of what muſt be left be-'hind? Her whole life will not ſuffice 'to clear it in, at the rate ſhe can fetch 'the loading hither in parcels.' At laſt a project ſtarted, that as there were ſo many cheſts on board, Youwarkee ſhould fill ſome of them, and ſend them through the gulph to take their chance for the lake. This at firſt ſight ſeemed feaſible; but then I conſidered how

how they could be got from the ſhip to the gulph; and again, that they would never keep out the water, and if they filled with a lading in them they would ſink; or, if this did not happen, they might be daſhed to pieces againſt the craggs in the cavern. Theſe apprehenſions ſtopped me again; till, unwilling to quit the thought, 'True,' ſays I, 'this may happen to ſome; but 'if I get but one in five, it is better 'than nothing.' Thus I turned and wound the affair in my mind; but objections ſtill ſtarted too obſtinate to be conquered.

In the height of my ſoliloquy in comes Youwarkee; and ſeeing my dejected look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly that I could get no reſt from day to day ever ſince ſhe firſt went to the ſhip, to think ſuch a number of good things lay there to be a prey to the ſea, as the ſhip waſted, when they might be of ſuch infinite ſervice here; and that, ſince her laſt flight, I had ſuffered the more, when I thought how near the gulph was to the ſhip; ſo that could I but get thither myſelf with my boat, I would contrive to pack up the goods in the cheſts that were on board, and, carrying them in the boat, drop them near the draft of the water, which of itſelf would ſuck them under the rock down the gulph; and when they were paſſed through the cavern, I might take them up in the lake. 'Well,' ſays ſhe, 'Peter, and why cannot I 'do this for you?'—'No,' ſays I, 'even this has it's objections.' Then I told her what I feared of their taking water, or daſhing againſt the rock, and twenty other ways of fruſtrating my views: 'But, above all,' ſays I, 'how can you get ſuch large and 'weighty things to the gulph without 'a boat? There is another impoſſibility! it won't do.'

Youwarkee eyed me attentively.—'Pr'ythee, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'ſet your heart at reſt about that. 'I can only try: if no good is to 'be done, you ſhall ſoon know it, 'and muſt reſt contented under the 'diſappointment.' I told her if I was there, I could take all the things out of the cheſt, and then melt ſome pitch and pour into every crack, to keep out the water when they were ſet afloat. 'Pitch!' ſays ſhe, 'what's that!'—'Why,' ſays I, 'that is a naſty, hard, 'black ſticking thing, that ſtands in 'tubs in the ſhip, and which being put 'over the fire in any thing to melt, will 'grow liquid, and when it is cold be 'hard again, and will reſiſt the water 'and keep it out.' Says ſhe, 'How 'can I put this pitch within-ſide of the 'cheſt-lid when I have tied it up?'—'It is to no manner of purpoſe,' ſays I, 'to talk of it; ſo there's an end of 'it.'—'But,' ſays ſhe, 'ſuppoſe your-'ſelf there, what things would you 'bring firſt?' I then entered into a long detail of particulars; ſaying, I would have this and that, and ſo on, till I had ſcarce left out a thing I either knew of or could ſuppoſe to be in the ſhip; and, for fear I had not mentioned all, ſays I, at laſt, 'If I 'was there, I believe I ſhould leave 'but little portable behind me.'

'So, ſo, my dear,' ſays Youwarkee, 'you would roll in riches, I 'find; but you have mentioned never 'a new gown for me.'—'Why, aye!' ſays I, 'I would have that too.'—'But how would you melt the pitch?' ſays ſhe. 'O,' ſays I, 'there is a tin-'der-box and matches in a room be-'low, upon the ſide of the fire-hearth.' And then I let her ſee one I had brought with me, and ſhewed her the uſe of the flint and ſteel. 'Well, my dear,' ſays ſhe, 'will you once more truſt 'me?' I told her, her going would be of little more uſe than to get a ſecond gown, or ſome ſuch thing; but if ſhe was deſirous, I would let her make another flight on her promiſe to be back as ſoon as poſſible.

In the evening ſhe ſet out, and ſtaid two days, and till the night of the third. I would here obſerve, that though it was much lighter and brighter on the outſide of the rock where the ſhip lay, than with us at Graundevolet, yet having always her ſpectacles with her, I heard no more complaint of the glare of light ſhe uſed to be ſo much afraid of: indeed, ſhe always avoided the fire and lamp at home as much as ſhe could, becauſe ſhe generally took off her ſpectacles within doors; but when at any time ſhe had them on, ſhe could bear both well enough.

Upon her return again, ſhe told me

ſhe

ſhe had ſhipped ſome goods to ſea for me, which ſhe hoped would arrive ſafe, (for by this time ſhe had had my ſea-faring terms ſo often over, ſhe could apply them very properly) and that they were in ſix cheſts, which ſhe had pitched after my directions. 'Aye!' ſays I, 'you have pitched them into 'the ſea, perhaps; but, after my di-'rections, I am ſatisfied, was beyond 'your ability.'—'You glumms,' ſays ſhe, 'think us gawreys very ignorant; 'but I'll ſatisfy you we are not ſo 'dull of apprehenſion as you would 'make us. Did not you ſhew me one 'day how your boat was tarred and 'caulked, as you call it?'—'I did,' ſays I; 'what then?'—'I'll tell you,' ſays ſhe. 'When I had emptied the 'firſt cheſt, and ſet it properly, I 'looked about for your pitch, which 'at laſt I found by it's ſticking to my 'fingers; I then put a good piece in-'to a ſort of a little kettle, with a 'long handle, that lay upon the pitch.' —'O, the pitch-ladle!' ſays I. 'I 'know not what you call it,' ſays ſhe; 'but then I made a fire, as you told 'me, and melted that ſtuff; after-'wards turning up the cheſt ſide-ways, 'and then end-ways, I poured it into 'it, and let it ſettle in the cracks, and 'with an old ſtocking, ſuch as yours, 'dipped into the pitch, I rubbed every 'place where the boards joined. I 'then ſet the cheſt on the ſide of the 'ſhip, and when the pitch was cold 'and hardened in it, filled it top-full 'of things: but when I had done 'thus, and ſhut the lid, I found that 'would not come ſo cloſe but I could 'get the blade of a knife through any 'where between it and the cheſt; 'whereupon I cut ſome long ſlips of 'the cloth I was packing up, and 'fitting them all round the edge of the 'cheſt, I dipped them into the pitch, 'and laid them on hot; and where one 'ſlip would not do, I put two; and 'ſhutting the lid down cloſe upon 'them, I nailed it, as I had ſeen you 'do ſome things, quite round; then 'tying a rope to the handle, I tipped 'the cheſt into the ſea, holding the 'rope. I watched it ſome time, and 'ſeeing it ſwim well, I took flight 'with the rope in my hand, and drew 'the cheſt after me to the gulph, when 'letting go the rope, away it went. I 'ſerved five more in the ſame manner; 'and now, my deareſt, I am here to 'tell you I hope you will be able to 'ſee at leaſt ſome of them, one time 'or other, in the lake.'

I admired in all this at the ſagacity of the gawreys. 'Alas!' thinks I, 'what narrow-hearted creatures are 'mankind? Did I not heretofore look 'upon the poor blacks in Africa as 'little better than beaſts, till my friend 'Glanlipze convinced me, by diſ-'abling the crocodile, the paſſage of 'the river, and ſeveral other atchieve-'ments, that my own excellences 'might have periſhed in a deſart with-'out his genius; and now what could 'I, or almoſt any of us maſter-pieces 'of the creation, (as we think our-'ſelves) and Heaven's peculiar fa-'vourites, have done in this preſent 'caſe, that has been omitted by this 'woman, (for I may juſtly ſtile her 'ſo in an eminent degree) and that in 'a way to which ſhe was bred an utter 'ſtranger.'

After what I had heard from Youwarkee, I grew much more chearful; which ſhe, poor creature, was remarkably pleaſed with. She went with me conſtantly once, and ſometimes twice, a day, for ſeveral days together, to ſee what ſucceſs at the lake; till at length ſhe grew very impatient, for fear, as ſhe afterwards told me, I ſhould either think ſhe had not done what ſhe ſaid, or had done it in an ineffectual manner. But one day, walking by the lake, I thought I ſaw ſomething floating in the water at a very great diſtance. 'Youwarkee,' ſays I, 'I ſpy 'a ſail!' Then running to my boat, and taking her in, away we went, plying my oars with all my might; for I longed to ſee what it was. At nearer view I perceived it to be one of my wife's fleet. But what added to my ſatisfaction was to ſee Youwarkee ſo pleaſed, for ſhe could ſcarcely contain herſelf.

When we came cloſe to it, up ſhe ſtarted: 'Now, my dear Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'torment yourſelf no more about 'your goods on board; for if this 'will do, all ſhall be your own.' She then lent me a hand to take it in; but we had both work enough to compaſs it, the wood had ſoaked in ſo much water. We then made the beſt of our way homewards to my wet-dock; when, juſt as we had landed our treaſure,

ſure, we ſaw two more boxes coming down the ſtream both together; whereupon we launched again, and brought them in one by one; for I did not care to truſt them both on one bottom, my boat being in years, and growing ſomewhat crazy.

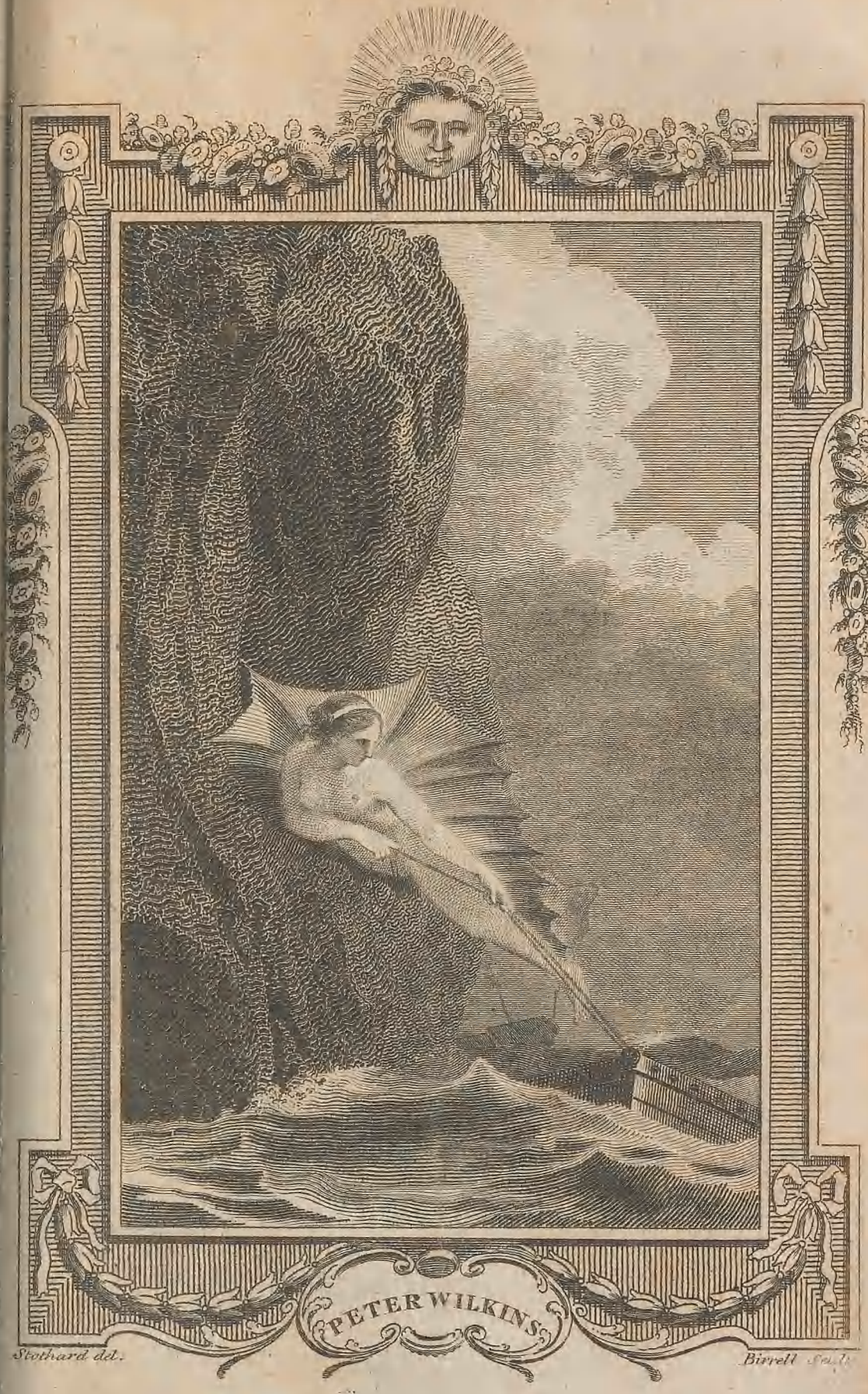
We had now made a good day's work of it; ſo, mooring the boat, we went home, intending to be out next morning early with the cart, to convey our imports to the grotto.

After ſupper, Youwarkee looking very earneſtly at me, with tears juſt glittering in her eyes, broke out in theſe words—'What ſhould you have 'thought, Peter, to have ſeen me come 'ſailing, drowned, through the ca-'vern, tied to one of your cheſts?'—'Heaven forbid ſuch a thought, my 'charmer!' ſays I. 'But, as you 'know I muſt have been rendered the 'moſt miſerable of all living creatures 'by ſuch a ſight, or any thing elſe 'that would deprive me of you, pray 'tell me how you could poſſibly have 'ſuch a thought in your head?' She ſaw ſhe had raiſed my concern, and was very ſorry for what ſhe had ſaid. 'Nothing, nothing,' ſays ſhe, 'my 'dear! it was only a fancy juſt come 'into my head.'—'My dear Youwee,' ſays I, 'you muſt let me know what 'you mean; I am in great pain till 'you explain yourſelf; for I am ſure 'there is ſomething more in what you 'ſay than fancy; therefore, pray, if 'you love me, keep me on the rack 'no longer.'—'Ah, Peter!' ſays ſhe, 'there was but a ſpan between me and 'death not many days ago; and when 'I ſaw the line of the laſt cheſt we 'took up juſt now, it gave me ſo much 'horror, I could ſcarce keep upon my 'feet.'—'My dear Youwee, proceed,' ſays I; for I cannot bear my torment 'till I have heard the worſt.'—'Why, 'Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'now the danger 'is over, I ſhall tell you my eſcape 'with as much pleaſure as I gueſs 'you will take in hearing of it.—'You muſt know, my life,' ſays ſhe, 'that having caſt that cheſt into the 'ſea, as I was tugging it along by 'that very line, it being one of the 'heavieſt, and moving but ſlowly, I 'twiſted the ſtring ſeveral times round 'my hand, one fold upon another, 'the eaſier to tow it; when, drawing 'it rather too quick into the eddy, it 'pulled ſo hard againſt me, towards 'the gulph, and ſo quick, that I 'could no way looſen or diſengage 'the cord from my fingers, but was 'dragged thereby to the very rock, 'againſt which the cheſt ſtruck vio-'lently. My laſt thought, as I ſup-'poſed it, was of you, my dear,' (on which ſhe claſped me round the neck, in ſenſe of her paſt agony;) 'when, 'taking myſelf for loſt, I forbore far-'ther reſiſtance; at which inſtant the 'line, ſlackening by the rebound of 'the cheſt, fell from my hand of it-'ſelf; and the cheſt, returning to the 'rock, went down the current. I 'took a turn or two round on my 'graundee to recollect my paſt dan-'ger, and went back to the ſhip, fully 'reſolved to avoid the like ſnare for 'the future. Indeed I did not eaſily 'recover my ſpirits, and was ſo terri-'fied with the thought, that I had half 'a mind to have left the two remain-'ing cheſts behind me; but as danger 'overcome gives freſh reſolution, I 'again ſet to work, and diſcharged 'them alſo down the gulph, as I hope 'you will ſee in good time.'

My heart bled within me all the while ſhe ſpoke, and I even felt ten times more than ſhe could have ſuffered by the gulph. 'My deareſt Youwee,' ſays I, 'why did not you tell me this 'adventure ſooner?'—'It is too ſoon 'I fear now!' ſays ſhe; for ſhe then ſaw the colour forſake my lips, my eyes grow languid, and myſelf dropping into her arms. She ſcreamed out, and ran to the cheſt, where all was empty; but turning every bottle up, and from the remaining drops in each collecting a ſmall quantity of liquor, and putting it by little and little to my lips, and rubbing my wriſts and temples, ſhe brought me to myſelf again; but I continued ſo extremely ſick for ſome days after, that it was above a week before I could get down with my cart to fetch up my cheſts.

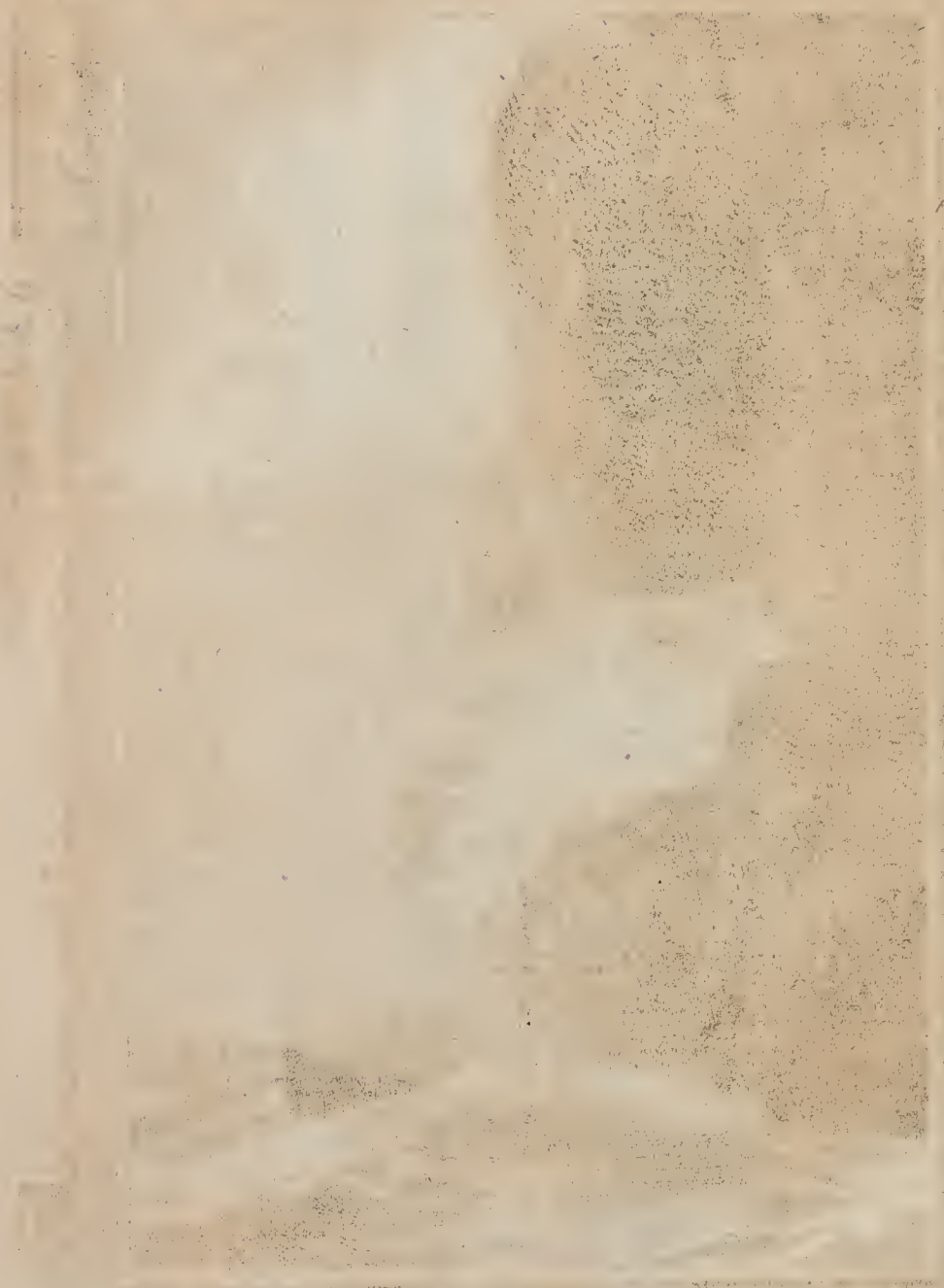
When I was able to go down, Youwarkee would not venture me alone, but went herſelf with me. We then found two more of the cheſts, which we landed; and I had work ſufficient for two or three days in getting them all up to the grotto, they were ſo heavy, and all the way through the wood being up hill.

We had five in hand, and watched



Stothard del. Birrell Sculp.

Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & Co. Aug. 23, 1783.



ſeveral days for the ſixth, when ſeeing nothing of it we gave it over for loſt: but one day, as I was going for water, Youwarkee would go with me, and urged our carrying the net, that we might drag for ſome fiſh; accordingly we did ſo; and now having taken what we wanted, we went to the rill, and puſhing in the head of the boat, (as I uſually did, for by that means I could fill the veſſel as I ſtood on board) the firſt thing that appeared was my ſixth cheſt. Youwarkee ſpied it firſt, and cried, pointing thereto, 'O, Pe-'ter, what we have long wiſhed for, 'and almoſt deſpaired of, is come at 'laſt! let us meet and welcome it.' I was pleaſed with the gaiety of her fancy. I did as ſhe deſired; we got it into the boat, after merrily ſaluting it, and ſo returned home. It took us up ſeveral day's time in ſearching, ſorting, and diſpoſing our cargo, and drying the cheſts; for the goods themſelves were ſo far from being wetted or ſpoiled, that even thoſe in the laſt cheſt, which had lain ſo long in the water, had not taken the leaſt moiſture.

Youwarkee was quite alert at the ſucceſs of her packing, but left me to ring her praiſes, which I did not fail of doing more than once at unpacking each cheſt, and could ſee her eyes glow with delight to ſee ſhe had ſo pleaſed me.

She had been ſo curious as to examine almoſt every thing in the ſhip; and as well of things I had deſcribed, and ſhe did know, as of what ſhe did not, brought me ſomething for a ſample; but, above all, had not forgot the blue ſtuff, for the moment ſhe had ſeen that ſhe deſtined it to the uſe of herſelf and children.

CHAP. XXIII.

THE RELIGION OF THE AUTHOR'S FAMILY.

YOUWARKEE and I having fixed ourſelves, by degrees, into a ſettled rota of action, began to live like Chriſtians, having ſo great a quantity of moſt ſorts of neceſſaries about us. But I ſay we lived like Chriſtians on another account, for you muſt not think, after what I have ſaid before, that I and my family lived like heathens: no, I will aſſure you, they by degrees knew all I knew, and that, with a little artificial improvement, and a well-regulated diſpoſition, I hoped, and did not doubt, would carry them all to Heaven. I would many a time have given all my intereſt in the ſhip's cargo for a Bible; and a hundred times grieved that I was not maſter of a pocket-one, which I might have carried every where about me. I never imagined there was one aboard, and if there were, and Youwarkee ſhould find it, I ſuppoſed it would be in Portugueſe, which I knew little of; ſo it would be of ſmall ſervice to me if I had it.

Since I am upon the topick of religion, it may not be amiſs, once for all, to give you a ſmall ſketch of my religious proceedings after coming into my new dominions. I have already told you that from my firſt ſtop at the rock I had prayed conſtantly morning and evening, but I cannot ſay I did it always with the ſame efficacy. However, my imperfect devotions were not without good effect; and I am confident, wherever this courſe is purſued with a right view, ſooner or later the iſſue will prove the ſame to others as I found it to myſelf; I mean, that mercies will be remembered with more gratitude, and evils be more diſregarded, and become leſs burdenſome: and ſurely the perſon whoſe caſe this is, muſt neceſſarily enjoy the trueſt reliſh of life. As daily prayer was my practice, in anſwer to it I obtained the greateſt bleſſing and comfort my ſolitude was capable of receiving; I mean my wife, whoſe character I need not farther attempt to blazon in any faint colours of my own, after what has been already ſaid; her acts having ſpoken her virtues beyond all verbal deſcription.

After we were married, as I call it, that is, after we had agreed to become man and wife, I frequently prayed before her, and with her, (for by this time ſhe underſtood a good deal of my language;) at which, though contrary to my expectation, ſhe did not ſeem ſurprized, but readily kneeled by and joined with me. This I liked very well: and upon my aſking her one day after prayer, if ſhe underſtood what I had been doing, (for I had a notion ſhe did not) 'Yes, verily,' ſays ſhe,

'you have been making petitions to 'the image of the great Collwar.'—'Pray,' says I, (willing gently to lead her into a juſt ſenſe of a Supreme Being) 'who is this Collwar? and 'where does he dwell?'—'He it is,' ſays ſhe, 'that does all good and evil 'to us.'—'Right,' ſays I, 'it is in 'ſome meaſure ſo; but he cannot of 'himſelf do evil, abſolutely and pro-'perly as his own act.'—'Yes,' ſays ſhe, 'he can; for he can do all that 'can be done, and as evil can be done 'he can do it.' So quick a reply ſtartled me. Thinks I, 'She will 'run me aground preſently; and from 'being a doctor, as I fancied myſelf, 'I ſhall become but a pupil to my own 'ſcholar.' I then aſked her where the great Collwar dwelt: ſhe told me, 'In 'heaven, in a charming place.'—'And 'can he know what we do?' ſays I. 'Yes,' replied ſhe, 'his image tells 'him every thing; and I have prayed 'to his image, which I have often 'ſeen; and it is filled with ſo much 'virtue that it is his ſecond ſelf: for 'there is only one of them in the 'world who is ſo good, he gives ſeve-'ral virtues to other images of him-'ſelf, which are brought to him, and 'put into his arms to breathe upon; 'and the only thing I have ever re-'gretted ſince I knew you is, that I 'have not one of them here to comfort 'and bleſs us and our children.'

Though I was ſorry for the oddity of her conceptions, I was almoſt glad to find her ſo ignorant, and pleaſed myſelf with thinking that as ſhe had already a confuſed notion of a Supreme Power, I ſhould ſoon have the ſatisfaction of bringing her to a more rational knowledge of him.

'Pray, Youwee,' ſays I, 'what is 'your God made of?'—'Why of 'clay,' ſays ſhe, 'finely painted, and 'looks ſo terrible he would make you 'tremble to behold him.'—'Do you 'think,' ſays I, 'that is the true 'Collwar's real ſhape, if you could 'ſee himſelf?' She told me, 'Yes;' for that ſome of his beſt ſervants had ſeen him, and took the repreſentation from himſelf. 'And pray, do you 'think he loves his beſt ſervants, as 'you call them, and is kind to them?' —'You need not doubt it,' ſays ſhe. 'Why, then,' replied I, 'how came 'he to look ſo terrible upon them 'when they ſaw him, as you ſay they 'did? for I can ſee no reaſon how ter-'rible ſoever he looks to others, why 'he ſhould ſhew himſelf ſo to thoſe he 'loves. I ſhould rather think, as 'you ſay he is kind to them, that he 'ſhould have two images, a placid 'one for his good, and a terrible one 'for his bad ſervants; or elſe, who 'by ſeeing him can tell whether he is 'pleaſed or angry? for even you your-'ſelf, Youwee, when any thing pleaſes 'you, have a different look from that 'you have when you are angry; and 'little Pedro can tell whether he does 'well or ill by your countenance: 'whereas, if you made no diſtinction, 'but looked with the ſame face on all 'his actions, he would as readily 'think he did well as ill in committing 'a bad action.' Youwarkee could not tell what to ſay to this, the fact ſeeming againſt her.

I then aſked her, if ſhe thought the image itſelf could hear her petitions. She replied, 'Yes.'—'And can he,' ſays I, 'return you an anſwer?' She told me, he only did that to his beſt ſervants. 'Did you ever hear him do 'it?' ſays I. 'For unleſs he can 'ſpeak too, I ſhould much ſuſpect his 'hearing; and you being one of his 'beſt ſervants, ſeeing you love him, 'and pray heartily to him, why ſhould 'you not hear him as ſoon as others?' —'No,' ſays ſhe, 'there are a great 'number of glumms on purpoſe to 'ſerve him, pray for us to him, and 'receive his anſwers.'—'But to what 'purpoſe then,' ſays I, 'is your pray-'ing to him if their prayers will ſerve 'your turn?'—'O,' ſays ſhe, 'the 'image hears them ſooner than us, 'and ſends the petitions up to the 'great Collwar, and lets him know 'who makes them, and deſires him to 'let them have what they want.'—'But ſuppoſe,' ſays I, for argument ſake, 'that you could ſee the great 'Collwar, or know where he was, 'and ſhould pray to himſelf, without 'going about to his image firſt, do 'you think he could not hear you?'—'I cannot tell that,' ſays ſhe. 'But 'how then,' ſays I, 'can he tell what '(if it could ſpeak) his image ſays, 'which is as far from him as you are? 'And, pray, do you think he can hear

'an

'an image which he did not make, 'which could not make itself, and 'which can neither hear, nor see, nor 'speak, better than he can hear a 'glumm whom he did make, and who 'made that image, and who himself 'can hear, and see, and speak to him?' She paused here a good while. At last, says she, 'Why, truly, I cannot 'think but he might as well, or bet-'ter, hear me than the image.'— 'Why, then,' said I, 'don't you 'make your petitions to himself, and 'not to the image? It is for the rea-'son I have given you, my dear You-'warkee, that I pray to him, and not 'to his image, or any representation 'of him upon earth; and, conse-'quently, am more sure of being heard 'and answered.'—'Indeed,' says she, 'I never thought of that before, for 'our ragans always charged me to 'pray to the image, or to let them 'know what I wanted, and they 'would pray to him for me; and they 'have had many a roppin of me for so 'doing, and sometimes two or three, 'when they told me I should have 'what I wanted: but you have con-'vinced me it is better to pray to him-'self, and I shall always do it here-'after.'

Having conducted my scholar thus far, I left off, thinking I had now laid a solid basis, that I need be in no fear for my superstructure; and as the slower you build, the firmer it settles, I thought fit to let this first work settle into a firm principle before I raised any farther doctrine upon it, which, as occasion offered, I determined to pursue. I propagated no theological notions in my children till they were capable of conceiving the truth of them from principles of reason; but only inculcated on them justice, truth, and love to myself, their mother, and each other. Having brought my wife firmly to believe in a Supreme Being, (let her call him what she would) who could hear our prayers, see our actions, and answer our petitions as he sees fit, and to an assurance that his love to us is so great that he will do what is most beneficial for us, though it should not always prove what we think so; the great truths concerning his dispensations in our creation and redemption, and our duty towards him, followed of course, as direct consequences of such his love and knowledge of us, and she easily came into them. Accordingly, I opened the doctrine of the creation to her as well as I could. I am sorry to say my explication of this great point was not so just, so particular, and clear, as it might have been if I had had a Bible, any more than was the succeeding history of our redemption; however, in general, I explained both so effectually, that though it required time to ground her in the full practical faith of it, yet the opinion she had of me, and my fidelity to her, with the reasons I was able to urge for what I taught her, persuaded her I was in the right, and disposed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous application, with God's grace, soon brought her to a firm belief in it, and a suitable temper and conduct with respect to God and man.

After I had began with my children, I frequently referred their farther instruction to their mother, for I have always experienced that a superficial knowledge, with a desire of becoming a teacher, is, in some measure, equivalent to better knowledge; for it not only excites every principle one has to the utmost, but makes matters more clear and conspicuous even to one's self.

By these means, and the Divine blessing thereon, in a few years, I may fairly say, I had a little Christian church in my own house, and in a flourishing way too, without a Schismatick or Heretick amongst us.

CHAP. XXIV.

THE AUTHOR'S ACCOUNT OF HIS CHILDREN — THEIR NAMES — THEY ARE EXERCISED IN FLYING—HIS BOAT CRAZY—YOUWARKEE INTENDS A VISIT TO HER FATHER, BUT FIRST TAKES ANOTHER FLIGHT TO THE SHIP —SENDS A BOAT AND CHESTS THROUGH THE GULPH — CLOATHS HER CHILDREN — IS WITH CHILD AGAIN, SO HER VISIT IS PUT OFF—AN INVENTORY OF THE LAST FREIGHT OF GOODS—THE AUTHOR'S METHOD OF TREATING HIS CHIL-

DREN—YOUWARKEE, HER SON TOMMY, WITH HER DAUGHTERS PATTY AND HALLYCARNIE, SET OUT TO HER FATHER'S.

I Had now lived here almoſt fourteen years; and beſides the three ſons before-mentioned, had three girls and one boy. Pedro, my eldeſt, had the graundee, but too ſmall to be uſeful; my ſecond ſon Tommy had it compleat; ſo had my three daughters; but Jemmy and David, the youngeſt ſons, none at all. My eldeſt danghter I named Patty, becauſe I always called my firſt wife ſo; I ſay my firſt wife, though I had no other knowledge of her death than my dream; but am from that as verily perſuaded if ever I reach England I ſhall find it ſo, as if I had heard it from her aunt's own mouth. My ſecond daughter my wife deſired might be called by her ſiſter's name Hallycarnie; and my youngeſt I named Sarah, after my mother. I put you to the trouble of writing down the names, for as I ſhall hereafter have frequent occaſion to mention the children ſeverally, it will be pleaſanter for myſelf and you to call them by their ſeveral names of diſtinction, than to call them my ſecond ſon, or my eldeſt daughter, and ſo-forth.

My wife now took great delight in exerciſing Tommy and Patty (who were big enough to be truſted) in flight, and would often ſkim round the whole iſland with them before I could walk half through the wood. And ſhe would teach them alſo to ſwim or ſail; I know not which to call it, for ſometimes you ſhould ſee them dart out of the air as if they would fall on their faces into the lake, when coming near the ſurface they would ſtretch their legs in an horizontal poſture, and in an inſtant turn on their backs, and then you could ſee nothing from the bank, to all appearance, but a boat ſailing along, the graundee riſing at their head, feet, and ſides, ſo like the ſides and ends of a boat, that you could not diſcern the face or any part of the body. I own I often envied them this exerciſe, which they ſeemed to perform with more eaſe than I could only ſhake my leg, or ſtir an arm.

Though we had perpetually Swangeans about us, and the voices as I uſed to call them, I could never once prevail on my wife to ſhew herſelf, or to claim any acquaintance with her country-folks. And what is very remarkable in my children is, that my three daughters and Tommy, who had the full graundee, had exactly their mother's ſight, Jemmy and David had juſt my ſight, and Pedro's ſight was between both, though he was never much affected with any light; but I was obliged to make ſpectacles for Tommy and all my daughters when they came to go abroad.

I had in this time twice enlarged my dwelling, which the increaſe of my family had rendered neceſſary. The laſt alteration I was enabled to do in a much better manner, and with more eaſe, than the firſt; for by the return of my flota, I had gotten a large collection of uſeful tools; ſeveral of iron, where the handles or wood-work preponderated the iron; but ſuch as were all, or greateſt part of that metal had got either to the rock, or were ſo faſt fixed to the head of the ſhip, that it was difficult to remove them; ſo that my wife could get comparatively few of this latter ſort, though ſome ſhe did. It was well, truly, I had theſe inſtruments, which greatly facilitated my labours, for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making proviſion for us all; and my ſons Pedro and Tommy commonly aſſiſted. I had alſo had another importation of goods through the gulph, which ſtill added to my convenience. But my boat made me ſhudder every time I went into her; ſhe had leaked again and again, and I had patched her till I could ſcarce ſee a bit of the old wood. She was of unſpeakable uſe to me, and yet I could not venture myſelf in her, but with the utmoſt apprehenſion and trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had ſuch helps to build a new one, but had been diverted by one avocation or other.

About this time Youwarkee, who was now upwards of thirty-two years of age, the fondeſt mother living, and very proud of her children, had formed a project of taking a flight to Arndrumnſtake, a town in the kingdom of Doorpt Swangeanti, as I called it, where her father, if living, was a colamb under Georigetti, the prince of that country. She imparted her deſire

to

to me, aſking my leave; and ſhe told me, if I pleaſed, ſhe would take Patty and Tommy along with her. I did not much diſlike the propoſal, becauſe of the great inclination I had for a long time to a knowledge of, and familiarity with, her countrymen and relations; and now I had ſo many of her children with me, I could not think ſhe would ever be prevailed on, but by force, to quit me and her offspring, and be contented to loſe ſix for the ſake of having two with her; eſpecially as ſhe had ſhewed no more love for them than the reſt: ſo I made no heſitation, but told her ſhe ſhould go.

I expected continually I ſhould hear of her departure; but ſhe ſaying no more of it, I thought ſhe had dropped her deſign, and I did not chuſe to mention it. But one day as we were at dinner, looking mighty ſeriouſly, ſhe ſaid, 'My dear, I have conſidered of 'the journey you have conſented I 'ſhould take, but in order thereto it 'is neceſſary that I prepare ſeveral 'things for the children, eſpecially 'thoſe who have no graundee, and I 'am reſolved to finiſh them before I 'go, that we may appear with de-'cency, both here and at Arndrumn-'ſtake; for I am ſure my father, whoſe 'temper I am perfectly acquainted 'with, will, upon ſight of me and my 'little ones, be ſo overjoyed, that he 'will forgive my abſence and mar-'riage, provided he ſees reaſon to be-'lieve I have not matched unworthily, 'unbecoming my birth; and after 'keeping me and the children with 'him, it may be two or three months, 'will accompany me home again him-'ſelf with a great retinue of ſervants 'and relations; or, at leaſt, if he is 'either dead or unable for flight, my 'other relations will come or ſend a 'convoy to take care of me and the 'children: and, my dear, as I ſhall 'give them all the encomiums I can 'of you, and of my ſituation with 'you, while I am among them, I 'would have them a little taken with 'the elegance of our domeſtick condi-'tion when they come hither, that they 'may think me happy in you and my 'children; for I would not only put 'my family into a condition to appear 'before them, but to ſurprize the old 'gentleman and his company, who 'never in their lives ſaw any part of 'mankind with another covering than 'the graundee.' When ſhe had done, I expreſſed my approbation of her whole ſyſtem, as altogether prudent; and ſhe proceeded immediately to put it in execution. To work ſhe went, opened every cheſt, and examined their contents. But while ſhe was upon the hunt, and ſelecting ſuch things as ſhe thought fit for her purpoſe, ſhe recollected ſeveral articles ſhe had obſerved in the ſhip, which ſhe judged far more for her turn than any ſhe had at home. Hereupon ſhe prayed me to let her take another trip to the veſſel, and to carry Tommy with her.

After ſo many trials, and ſuch happy experience of her wiſe and fortunate conduct, I conſented to her flight, and away went ſhe and her ſon. Upon their return, which was in a few days, ſhe told me what they had been doing, and ſaid, as ſhe ſo often heard me complain of the age of my boat, and fear to ſail in her, ſhe had fitted me out a little ſhip, and hoped it would in due time arrive ſafely. As ſhe paſſed quickly on to other things, I never once thought of aſking her what ſhe meant by the little ſhip ſhe ſpoke of; but muſt own, that, like a fooliſhly fond parent, I was more intent on her telling me how Tommy had found a hoard of playthings, which he had packed up for his own uſe.

As to this laſt particular, I learned by the ſequel of the ſtory, when the ſpark, proud of his acquiſition, came to me, that he had been peeping about in the cabbin whilſt his mother was packing the cheſts, and ſeeing a ſmall braſs knob in the wainſcot, took it for a plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little door of a cupboard, where he had found ſome very pretty toys, that he poſitively claimed for himſelf; among which were a ſmall plain gold ring, and a very fine one ſet with diamonds, which he ſhewed me upon two of his fingers. I wondered how the child, who had never before ſeen ſuch things, or the uſe of them, ſhould happen to apply theſe ſo properly; but he told me in playing with this, meaning the diamond ring about his fingers, it ſlipped over his middle finger joint, and he could not get it off again, ſo he put the other upon another finger to keep it company.

We watched daily, as uſual on ſuch occaſions,

occaſions, for the arrival of our fleet. It was ſurprizing that none of the cheſts which Youwarkee ſhot down the gulph were ever half ſo long in their paſſage as I was myſelf, but ſome came in a week, ſome in a few days more, and even ſome in leſs; which I attributed to their following directly the courſe of the water, ſhooting from ſhelf to ſhelf as the tide ſat; and I believe my keeping the boat I ſailed in ſo ſtrictly and conſtantly in the middle of the ſtream, was the reaſon of my being detained there ſo long. In leſs than a fortnight every thing came ſafe but one cheſt, which, as we never heard of it, I ſuppoſe was either ſunk or bulged.

Being one day upon ſhore, watching to ſee if any thing more was come through the cavern, I ſpied at a diſtance ſomewhat looking very black and very long, and by the colour and ſhape thereof I took it for a young whale. Having obſerved it ſome time making very little way, I took my old boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, leſt a ſtroke with it's tail (which I then fancied I ſaw move) might endanger my boat and myſelf too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and ſeeing it did not ſtir, I believed it to be dead; whereupon, taking courage, I drew ſo cloſe, that at length I plainly perceived it was the ſhip's ſecond boat turned upſide-down. It is not eaſy to expreſs the joy I felt on this diſcovery. It was the very thing I was now, as I have ſaid, in the greateſt want of. I preſently laid hold of it and brought it aſhore; and it was no ſmall pleaſure to find, on examining, that though it had lain ſo long dry, it was yet quite ſound, and all it's chinks filled up in it's paſſage; and it proved to me afterwards the moſt beneficial thing I could have had from the ſhip.

I got all my goods home from the lake to my grotto, by means of the cart, as uſual. My wife and daughters waited with impatience for me to unpack, that they might take poſſeſſion of ſuch things as would be needful for rigging out the family againſt the ſuppoſed reception of the old glumm, and had ſet all the cheſts in the order they deſired they might be opened in. But Tommy running to me, with a 'Pray, daddy, open my cheſt 'firſt! pray, give me my play-things 'firſt!' it was, to ſatisfy him, concluded in favour of his demand. So, he pointing to the cheſt which he regarded as his property, I opened it whilſt his eyes were ready to pierce through it, till I came to his treaſure. 'There, 'there they are, daddy!' ſays he, as ſoon as I had uncovered them. And indeed, when I ſaw them I could not but much commend the child for his fancy; for the firſt things that appeared were a ſilver punch or wine-cann and a ladle, then a gold watch, a pair of ſciſſars, a ſmall ſilver chafing-diſh and lamp, a large caſe of mathematical inſtruments, a flagellet, a terrella, or globular load-ſtone, a ſmall globe, a dozen of large ſilver ſpoons, and a ſmall caſe of knives and forks and ſpoons; in ſhort, there was, I believe, the greateſt part of the Portugueſe captain's valuable effects.

Theſe Tommy claiming as his own proper chattels, I could not help interpoſing ſomewhat of my authority in the affair. 'Hold, hold, ſon!' ſays I, 'theſe things are all mine; but as I 'have ſeveral of you who will all be 'equally pleaſed with them, though, 'as the firſt finder, you may be enti'tled to the beſt ſhare, you are not to 'graſp the whole, you muſt all have 'ſomething like an equality; and as 'to ſome things which may be equally 'uſeful to us all, they muſt be ſet up 'to be uſed upon occaſion, and are to 'be conſidered as mine and your mo'ther's property.' I thereupon gave each of them a large ſilver ſpoon, and with a fork I ſcratched the initials of their names reſpectively on them, and divided ſeveral of the trifles amongſt them equally. 'And now, Tommy,' ſays I, 'you for your pains ſhall have this 'more than the reſt,' offering him the flagellet. Tommy looked very gloomy; and though he durſt not find fault, his diſſatisfaction was very viſible by coolly taking it, toſſing it down, and walking gravely off. 'I thought,' ſays I, 'Tommy, I had made a good 'choice for you; but, as I find you 'deſpiſe it—here Pedro, do you take 'that pretty thing, ſince your brother 'ſlights it.' Tommy replied, (ſpeaking but half out, and a little ſurly, more than I ever obſerved before) 'Let 'him take it if he will, I can get bits 'of ſticks enough in the wood.'

My method had always been to avoid either beating or ſcolding at my children,

dren, for preferring their own opinion to mine; but I ever let things turn about ſo, that from their own reaſon they ſhould perceive they had erred in oppoſing my ſentiments; by which means they grew ſo habituated to ſubmit to my advice and direction, that for the moſt part my will was no ſooner known to them than it became their own choice; but then I never willed according to fancy only, but with judgment, to the beſt of my ſkill.

Tommy, therefore, (as I ſaid before) having ſhewn a diſapprobation of my doings; to convince him of his miſtake, I took the flagellet from Pedro, 'And now, Pedro,' ſays I, 'let me 'teach you how to manage this piece 'of wood, as Tommy calls it, and 'then let me ſee if in all the grove he 'can cut ſuch another.' On this I clapped it to my mouth, and immediately played ſeveral country-dances and hornpipes on it; for though my mother had ſcarce taught me to read, I had learnt muſick and dancing, being, as ſhe called them, gentleman-like accompliſhments. My wife and children, eſpecially Tommy, all ſtared as if they were wild, firſt on me, then on one another, whilſt I played a country-dance; but I had no ſooner ſtruck up an hornpipe, than their feet, arms, and heads, had ſo many twitchings and convulſive motions, that not one quiet limb was to be ſeen amongſt them; till having exerciſed their members as long as I ſaw fit, I almoſt laid them all to ſleep with Chevy Chace, and ſo gave over.

They no ſooner found themſelves free from this enchantment, than the children all huſtled round me in a cluſter, all ſpeaking together, and reaching out their little hands to the inſtrument. I gave it Pedro. 'There,' ſays I to him, 'take this ſlighted 'favour as no ſuch contemptible pre-'ſent.'

Poor Tommy, who had all this while looked very ſimple, burſt into a flood of tears at my laſt words, as if his heart would have broke; and running to me, fell on his knees, and begged my pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and kiſſing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more children to give any thing to which either of the reſt deſpiſed, it was equal to me who had it, ſo it was thankfully received. I found that did not ſatisfy; ſtill in tears, he ſaid, might he not have the ſtick again, as I gave it to him firſt. 'Tommy,' ſays I, 'you know I gave it to you 'firſt; but you diſapproving my kind-'neſs, I have now given it Pedro, 'who, ſhould I againſt his will take it 'from him, would have that reaſon to 'complain which you have not, who 'parted with it by your own conſent; 'and therefore, Tommy, as I am de-'termined to acquaint you as near as 'I can with the ſtrict rules of juſtice, 'there muſt no more be ſaid to me of 'this matter.' Such as this was my conſtant practice amongſt them; and they having always found me inflexible from this rule, we ſeldom had any long debates.

Though I ſay the affair ended ſo with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not ſo with Tommy; for though he knew he had no hopes of moving me, he ſet all his engines at work to recover his ſtick (as he called it) by his mother's and ſiſter's intereſt. Theſe ſolicited Pedro very ſtrongly to gratify him. At length Pedro (he being a boy of a moſt humane diſpoſition) granted their deſire, if I would give leave; and I having ſignified, that the cauſe being now out of my hands, he might do as he pleaſed, he generouſly yielded it. And indeed he could not have beſtowed it more properly; for Tommy had the beſt ear for muſick I ever knew; and in leſs than a twelvemonth could far outdo me, his inſtructor, in ſoftneſs and eaſineſs of finger; and was alſo maſter of every tune I knew, which were neither inconſiderable in number, nor of the loweſt rate.

Yonwarkee, with her daughters, ſat cloſe to work, and had but juſt compleated her whole deſign for the family cloathing when ſhe told me ſhe found herſelf with child again. As that circumſtance ill-ſuited a journey, ſhe deferred her flight for about fifteen months; in which time ſhe was brought to bed, and weaned the infant, which was a boy, whom I named Richard, after my good maſter at the academy. The little knave thrived amain, and was left to my farther nurſing during it's

it's mammy's abſence; who, ſtill firm to her reſolution, after ſhe had equipped herſelf and companions with whatever was neceſſary to their travelling, and locked up all the apparel ſhe had made till her return, becauſe ſhe would have it appear new when her father came, ſet out with her ſon Tommy and my two daughters Patty and Hallycarnie; the laſt of which by this time being big enough alſo to be truſted with her mother.

CHAP. XXV.

YOUWARKEE'S ACCOUNT OF THE STAGES TO ARNDRUMNSTAKE—THE AUTHOR UNEASY AT HER FLIGHT—HIS EMPLOYMENT IN HER ABSENCE, AND PREPARATIONS FOR RECEIVING HER FATHER — HOW HE SPENT THE EVENINGS WITH THE CHILDREN.

MY wife was now upon her journey to her father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impoſſible for me to conceive by her deſcription of the way; for ſhe diſtinguiſhed it not by miles or leagues, but by ſwangeans, and names of rocks, ſeas and mountains, which I could neither comprehend the diſtance of from each other, nor from Graundevolet where I was. I underſtood by her, indeed, there was a great ſea to be paſſed, which would take her up almoſt a day and night, having the children with her, before ſhe reached the next arkoe; though ſhe could do it herſelf ſhe ſaid, and ſtrain hard, in a ſummer's night; but if the children ſhould flag by the way, as there was no reſting-place between us and Battringdrigg, the next arkoe, it might be dangerous to them; ſo ſhe would take the above time for their ſakes. After this I found by what ſhe ſaid there was a narrow ſea to paſs, and a prodigious mountain, before ſhe reached her own country; and that her father's was but a little beyond that mountain. This was all I could know in general about it. At their departure ſhe and the children had taken each a ſmall proviſion for their flight, which hung about their necks in a ſort of purſe.

I cannot ſay, notwithſtanding this journey was taken with my concurrence and conſent, that I was perfectly eaſy when they were gone; for my affection for them all would work up imaginary fears too potent for my reaſon to diſpel, and which at firſt ſat with no eaſy preſſure upon my mind. This my pretty babies at home perceiving, uſed all the little winning arts they could to divert and keep up my ſpirits; and from day to day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with and amuſing them at home, I grew more and more perſuaded that all would go right with the abſent, and that in due time I ſhould ſee them return again.

But as the winter ſet in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourſelves within doors in preparing ſeveral things which might not only be uſeful and ornamental, if the old glumm ſhould come to ſee us, but might alſo divert us, and make the time paſs leſs tediouſly. The firſt thing I went upon was a table, which, as my family conſiſted of ſo many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that view I broke up a couple of cheſts; and, taking the two ſides of one of them, I nailed them edge to edge by ſtrong thick pieces underneath at each end and in the middle; then I took two cheſt-lids with their hinges, nailing one to each ſide of my middle piece, which made two good flaps; after this, with my tools, of which I had now a cheſt-full, I chopped out of new ſtuff and planed four ſtrong legs quite ſquare, and nailed them ſtrongly to each corner of my middle board; I then nailed pieces from one leg to the other, and nailed the bed likewiſe to them; then I faſtened a border quite round within ſix inches from the bottom, from foot to foot, which held all faſt together. When all this was done, ſtill my table was imperfect, I could not put up the flaps, having no proper ſupport. To remedy this I ſawed out a broad ſlip from a cheſt-ſide, and boring a large hole through the center, I ſpiked it up to the under-ſide of the table's bed, with a ſpindle I contrived juſt looſe enough to play round the head of the ſpike, filing down that part of the ſpindle which paſſed through the bed of the table, and rivetting it cloſe; ſo that when

when my flaps were ſet up, I pulled the ſlip croſswiſe of the table, and when the flaps were down, the ſlip turned under the top of the table lengthwiſe: next, under each flap, I nailed a ſmall ſlip lengthwiſe of the flaps, to raiſe them on a level, when up, with the top of the table. When I had thus compleated the ſeveral parts of this needful utenſil, I ſpent ſome time and pains, by ſcraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the ſucceſs ſo well anſwered my wiſh, that I was not a little proud of the performance: and what rendered my work thereon a ſtill more agreeable taſk, was my pretty infants company, who ſtood by, expreſſing their wonder and approbation at every ſtroke.

Now I had gotten a table, I wanted chairs to it; for as yet we had only ſat round the room upon cheſts, which formed a bench of the whole circumference, they ſtood ſo thick. There was no moving of them without a monſtrous trouble every time I might have occaſion to ſet out my table; beſides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for ſeats; ſo I reſolved to make ſome chairs and ſtools alſo, that might be manageable. I will not trouble you with the ſteps I took in the formation of theſe; only, in general, you muſt know, that ſome more cheſts I broke up to that purpoſe ſerved me for timber, out of which I framed ſix ſizeable handſome chairs, and a competent number of ſtools.

But now that I was turned joiner I had another convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to incloſe things, and preſerve them from duſt, except the cheſts; and they were quite unfit for holding liquors, victuals, and ſuch-like matters, in open ſhells, as moſt of my veſſels were. Wherefore, having ſeveral boards now remaining of the boxes I had broken up for chairs and ſtools, I bethought me of ſupplying this great deficiency; ſo of theſe ſpare boards, in a workmanlike way, (for by this time I was become a tolerable mechanick) I compoſed a very tight cloſet, holding half a dozen broad ſhelves, ſhut up by a good pair of doors, with a lock and key to faſten them.

Theſe jobbs took me up almoſt three months, and I thought I had not employed them idly, but for the credit and ſervice of my family. I was now again at leiſure for farther projects. I was uncertain as to my wife's return, how ſoon ſhe might be with me, or how much longer ſhe might ſtay; but I was ſure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful than increaſing, by all means in my power, the accommodations of my houſe; for the more polite as well as convenient reception of her father, or any elſe who might accompany her home in the way of a retinue, as ſhe talked of. I ſaw plainly I had not room for lodging them, and that was a circumſtance of main importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long apartment to one of my outer-rooms, to range againſt the ſide of the rock; but reflecting that ſuch a thing would be quite uſeleſs, unleſs I could finiſh it in time, ſo as to be compleat when my gueſts came, and not knowing how ſoon that might be, I reſolved to quit this deſign; and I fell upon another which might do as well, and required much leſs labour and fewer days to perfect.

I remembered, that amongſt thoſe things my wife had packed up on board the ſhip, and which came home through the gulph, there were two of the largeſt ſails, and a couple of ſmaller ſize. Theſe I carried to the wood, and tried them in ſeveral places to ſee where they might be diſpoſed to moſt advantage in the nature of a tent; and having found a convenient ſpot to my purpoſe, I cut divers poles for ſupporters, and making ſtraining-lines of my matweed, I pitched a noble one, ſufficient to cover or entertain a numerous company, and ſo tight every where as to keep out the weather. The front of this new apartment I hung with blue cloth, which had a very genteel effect. I had almoſt forgotten to tell you that I contrived (by hanging one of the ſmaller ſails acroſs, juſt in the middle, which I could let down or raiſe up at pleaſure) to divide the tent occaſionally into two diſtinct rooms.

When I had proceeded thus far, there were ſtill wanting ſeats for this additional building, as I may call it; and though I could ſpare ſome cheſts to ſit on, I found they would not half do.

For a ſupplement, then, I took my axe, and felled a couple of great trees, one from each ſide of the tent, ſawed off the tops, and cut each of the trunks in two about the middle: theſe huge cylinders I rolled into the tent with a good deal of toil and difficulty; two of them I thruſt into the inner diviſion, and left two in the outer; I placed them as benches on both ſides; then, with infinite pains, I ſhaved the upper face of each ſmooth and flat, and pared off all the little knots and roughneſſes of the front; ſo that they were fitted to ſit on, and their own weight fixed them in the place where I intended them to be. At the upper-end of the farther chamber I ſet three cheſts lengthwiſe for ſeats, or any other uſe I might ſee fit to put them to.

During theſe operations we were all hard at it, and no hand idle but Dicky in arms, and Sally, whom he kept in full employ; but Pedro, being a ſturdy lad, could drive a nail, and lift or carry the things I wanted; and Jemmy and David, though ſo young, could pick up the chips, hold a nail, or the lamp, or be ſome way or other uſeful: for I always preached to them the neceſſity of earning their bread before they eat it, and not think to live on mine and their brother's labour.

The nights being pretty long, after work was over, and Sarah had fed her brother and laid him in his hammock, we uſed to ſit all down to enjoy ourſelves at a good meal; for we were never regular at that till night; and then, after ſupper, my wife being abſent, one or other of the young ones would begin with ſomething they had before heard me ſpeak of, by ſaying, 'Daddy, how 'did you uſe to do this or that in 'England?' Then all ears were immediately open to catch my anſwer, which certainly brought on ſomething elſe done either there or elſewhere; and by their little queſtions and my anſwers they would ſometimes draw me into a ſtory of three hours long, till, perhaps, two out of three of my audience were falling aſleep, and then we all went to bed.

I verily believe my children would, almoſt any of them, from the frequent repetition of theſe ſtories, have given a ſufficient account of England to have gained a belief from almoſt any Engliſhman of their being natives there.

I frequently obſerved, that when we had begun upon Cornwall, and traverſed the mines, the ſea-coaſt, or talked of the fine gentlemen's ſeats, and ſuch things, one would ſtart up, and, if the diſcourſe flagged ever ſo little, would cry, 'Aye, but daddy, 'what did you do when the crocodile 'came after you out of the water?' And another, before that ſubject was half-ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they ſtarted) would be impatient for the ſtory of the lion; and I always took notice that the part each had made the moſt reflections on, was always moſt acceptable to the ſame perſon: but poor Sally would never let the converſation drop without ſome account of the muletto, it was ſuch a pretty, gentle creature, ſhe ſaid.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE AUTHOR'S CONCERN AT YOUWARKEE'S STAY—REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION—HEARS A VOICE CALL HIM—YOUWARKEE'S BROTHER QUANGROLLART VISITS HIM WITH A COMPANION—HE TREATS THEM AT THE GROTTO—THE BROTHER DISCOVERS HIMSELF BY ACCIDENT—WILKINS PRODUCES HIS CHILDREN TO HIM.

MY head, as well as my hands, had now been employed for five months in adjuſting all things in the moſt ſuitable manner for the reception of Youwarkee and her friends; but nobody coming, and light days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneaſy, and had formed divers imaginations of what might occaſion her ſtay. Thought I, 'I am afraid all 'the pains I have been taking will 'be to no purpoſe; for either her fa-'ther will not let her return, or ſhe 'has of herſelf come to ſuch a reſo-'lution: for ſhe knows I cannot fol-'low her, and had rather, perhaps, 'live and enjoy the three children ſhe 'has with her, amidſt a number of her 'friends and acquaintance, than ſpend 'the remainder of her days with me 'and all our offspring in this ſolitude.' —But then I reflected ſhe choſe it herſelf, or at leaſt declared herſelf perfectly ſatisfied, yea, delighted therewith!— 'And here are her children with me, the

'major

'major part of them: yet, what can I 'think? since her return is put off till 'the swangeans are over at this arkoe, 'she will never bring her relations 'now in this unseasonable time for 'flight; therefore I must think, if she 'intended to return at all, it would 'have been before now: and as the case 'is not so, my fear of losing her entirely 'prevails greatly.—O!' says I, 'that 'we had but a post here as we have in 'England; there we can communicate 'our thoughts at a distance to each 'other without any trouble, and for 'little charge! What a country is 'this to live in! and what an impro-'per creature am I to live in it! Had 'I but the graundee, I would have 'found her out by this time, be she 'where she would; but, whilst every 'one about me can pass, repass, and 'act as they please, I am fixed here 'like one of my trees, bound to the 'spot, or, upon removal, to die in the 'attempt. Alas! why did I beget 'children here, but to make them as 'wretched and inconsolable as myself! 'Some of them are so formed, indeed, 'as to shift for themselves; but they 'owe it to their mother, not to me. 'What! am I a father of children who 'will be bound one day to curse me! '—Severe reflection!—Yet I never 'thought of this till now. But am 'I the only father in such a case? No, 'surely! for am not I as much bound 'to curse my father as my children are 'to curse me? He might have left me 'happy if he would; I would them 'if I could. Again, are there not 'others who, by improper junction 'with persons diseased in body, or 'vicious in mind, have entailed greater 'misery upon their posterity than I 'have on mine? My children are all 'healthy, strong, and sound, both in 'body and mind; and is not that the 'greatest blessing that can be bestowed 'on our beings? But they are impri-'soned in this arkoe!—What then!—'With industry, here is no want; and 'as they increase they may settle in 'communities, and be helpful to each 'other. I have lived well here nigh 'sixteen years, and it was God's plea-'sure I should be here; and can I think 'I was placed here with an injunction 'contrary to the great command, "*In-*'*crease and multiply?*" If that were 'so, can it be possible I should have re-'ceived the only means of propagat-'ing, as it were from Heaven itself? 'No, it was certainly as much my 'Maker's will that I should have pos-'terity here as that I myself should at 'first be brought hither. This is a 'large and plentiful spot, and capable 'of great improvement, when there 'shall be hands sufficient. How many 'petty states are less than these my do-'minions! I have here a compass of 'near twenty miles round, and how 'many thousands grow voluntarily 'grey in a far less circuit!'

I had hardly finished my reflections (for I was sitting by myself in my tent upon one of the trees I had turned into benches) when I heard a musical voice call—'Peter! Peter!' I started; 'What's this?' says I. 'It is not You-'warkee's voice! What can this mean!' Listening, I heard it again, but at so great a distance I could but just perceive the sound. 'Be it where it will,' says I, 'I will face it!' Thus speaking, I went out of the tent, and hearkened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then ran for my gun, and walked through the wood as fast as I could to the plain; but still I neither saw nor heard any thing. I was then in hopes of seeing somebody on the lake, but no one appeared; for I was fully determined to make myself known to whomsoever I should meet; and, if possible, to gain some intelligence of my wife. But after so much fruitless pains, my hopes being at an end, I was returning, when I heard 'Peter! 'Peter!' again, at a great distance, the sound coming from a different quarter than at first. Upon this I stopped, and heard it repeated; and it was as if the speaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I stepped out of the wood, (for I had just re-entered it upon my return home) when I saw two persons upon the swangean just over my head. I cried out, 'Who's 'that?' And they immediately called again, 'Peter! Peter!'—'Ors clam 'gee,' says I; that is, 'Here am I.' On this they directly took a small sweep round, (for they had overshot me before they heard me) and alighted just by me: when I perceived them to be my wife's countrymen, being dressed like her, with only broader chaplets about their heads, as she had told me the glumms all wore. After a short

obeiſance, they aſked me if I was the glumm Peter, barkatt to Youwarkee. I anſwered, I was. They then told me they came with a meſſage from Pendlehamby, colamb of Arndrumnſtake, my goppa, and from Youwarkee, his daughter. I was vaſtly rejoiced to ſee them, and to hear only the name of my wife. But though I longed to know their meſſage, I trembled to think of their mentioning it, as one of them was juſt going to do, for fear of hearing ſome things very diſpleaſing; ſo I begged them to go through the wood with me to the grotto, where we ſhould have more leiſure and convenience for talk, and where, at the ſame time, they might take ſome refreſhment. But though I had thus put off their meſſage, I could not forbear enquiring by the way after the health of my goppo and my wife and children, how they got to Arndrumnſtake, and how they found their relations and friends. They told me all were well; and that Youwarkee, as ſhe did on me, deſired I would think on her with true affection. I found this was the phraſe of the country. As for the reſt, I hoped it would turn out well at laſt, though I dreaded to hear it.

Being arrived at the grotto, I deſired my gueſts to ſit down, and take ſuch refreſhment as I could prepare them. When they were ſeated, I went to work in order to provide them a repaſt. Seeing my fire piled up very high, and burning fierce, and the children about it, they wondered where they were got, and who they had come to, and turned their faces from it; but I ſetting ſome chairs, ſo that the light might not ſtrike on their eyes, they liked the warmth well enough; though, I remarked, the light did not affect them ſo much as it had done Youwarkee.

Whilſt I was cooking, the poor children got all up in a corner, and ſtared at the ſtrangers, not being able to conceive where they came from; and by degrees crept all backwards into the bed-chamber, and hid themſelves; for they had never before ſeen any body but my own family.

I obſerved that one of my gueſts paid more than ordinary reſpect to the other; and though their graundees made no diſtinction between them, yet there was ſomething, I thought, much more noble in the addreſs and behaviour of the latter; and taking notice that he was alſo the chief ſpokeſman, I judged it proper to pay my reſpects to him in a ſomewhat more diſtinguiſhing manner, though ſo as not to offend the other if I ſhould happen to be miſtaken.

I firſt preſented a cann of my Madeira, and took care, as if by accident, to give it to Mr. Uppermoſt, as I thought him, who drank half of it, and would have given the remainder to his companion; but I begged him to drink it all up, and his friend ſhould be ſerved with ſome preſently: he did ſo, and thanked me by lifting his hand to his chin. I then gave the other a cann of the ſame liquor, which he drank, and returned thanks as his companion had before. I then took a cann myſelf, and telling them I begged leave to uſe the ceremony of my own country to them, I drank, wiſhing their own health, and that of all relations at Arndrumnſtake. He that I took for the ſuperior fell a laughing heartily: 'Ha, ha, ha!' ſays he, 'this is the very way my ſiſter 'does every day at Arndrumnſtake.'—'Your ſiſter, Sir!' ſays I, 'Pray, has 'ſhe ever been in Europe or in Eng-'land?'—'Well!' ſays he, 'I have 'plainly diſcovered myſelf, which I did 'not intend to do yet; but, truly, bro-'ther Peter, I mean none other than 'your own wife Youwarkee.'

The moment I knew who he was, I roſe up, and taking him by the right-hand, lifted it to my lips and kiſſed it. He likewiſe immediately ſtood up, and we embraced each other with great tenderneſs. I then begged him, as I had ſo worthy and near a relation of my wife's with me, that he would not delay the happineſs I hoped for, in a narrative from his mouth, how it fared with my father, wife, and children, and all their kinsfolks and friends, whom I had ſo often heard mentioned by my deareſt Youwarkee, and ſo earneſtly deſired to ſee.

My brother Quangrollart (for that he told me was his name) was preparing to gratify my impatience; but ſeeing I had ſet the entertainment on the table, which conſiſted chiefly of bread, ſeveral ſorts of pickles and preſerves, with ſome cold ſalted fiſh, he ſaid that eating would but interrupt the thread

of

of his diſcourſe; and therefore, with my leave, he would defer the relating of what I deſired for a little while; which we all thinking moſt proper, I deſired him and his friend (who might be another brother for aught I knew) to refreſh themſelves with the poor modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilſt my brother Quangrollart was looking upon and handling his plate, being what he had never before ſeen, his friend had got the handle of one of the knives in his mouth, biting it with all his force; but finding he could make nothing of that end, he tried the other, and got champing the blade. Perceiving what he was at, though I could not help laughing, I roſe, and begging pardon, took the knife from him; telling him I believed he was not acquainted with the uſe of that inſtrument, which was one of my country implements; and that the deſign of it, which was called a knife, and of that other, (pointing to it) called a fork, was the one to reduce the food into pieces proper for chewing, and the other to convey it to the mouth without daubing the fingers, which muſt happen in handling the food itſelf: and I then ſhewed him what uſe I put them to, by helping each of them therewith to ſomewhat, and by cutting a piece for myſelf, and putting it to my mouth with the fork.

They both ſmiled, and looked very well pleaſed; and then I told them that the plate was the only thing that need be daubed, and when that was taken away, the table remained clean. So, after I had helped each of them for the firſt time, I deſired them to help themſelves where they liked beſt; and, to ſay the truth, they did ſo more dextrouſly than I could have expected.

During our repaſt, we had frequent ſketches of the obſervations they made in their flight, and of the places where they had reſted; and I could plainly ſee that neither of them had ever been at this arkoe before, by hinting that if they had not taken ſuch a courſe they had miſſed me.

I took particular notice which part of my entertainment they eat moſt of, that I might bring a freſh ſupply of that when wanted; and I found, that though they eat heartily of my bread and preſerves, and taſted almoſt of every thing elſe, they never once touched the fiſh; which put me upon deſiring I might help them to ſome. At this they looked upon each other, which I readily knew the meaning of, and excuſed themſelves, expreſſing great ſatisfaction in what they had already gotten. I took however a piece of fiſh on my own plate, and eating very heartily thereof, my brother deſired me to give him a bit of it; I did ſo, taking care to cut it as free from bones as I could, and for greater ſecurity cautioning him, in caſe there ſhould be any, to pick them out, and not ſwallow them. He had no ſooner put a piece in his mouth, but, 'Roſig,' ſays he to his friend, 'this is padſi.' I thought indeed I had puzzled my brother when I gave him the fiſh, but by what he ſaid of it, he puzzled me; for I knew not what he meant by padſi, my wife having told me they had no fiſh: or elſe I ſhould have taken that word for their name of it. However, I cut Roſig a ſlice; and he agreeing it was padſi, they both eat heartily of it.

While we were at dinner, my brother told me he thought he ſaw ſome of my children juſt now; for his ſiſter had informed him ſhe had five more at home; and he aſked me why they did not appear, and eat with us. I excuſed their coming, as fearing they would only be troubleſome; and ſaid, when we had done they ſhould have ſome victuals. But he would not be put off, and entreated me to admit them. So I called them by their names, and they came, all but Dicky, who was aſleep in his hammock. I told them, that the gentleman, pointing to Quangrollart, was their uncle, their mamma's brother, and ordered them to pay their obeiſance to him, which they ſeverally did. I then made them ſalute Roſig. This laſt would have had them ſit down at table; but I poſitively forbade that; and giving each of them a little of what we had before us, they carried it to the cheſts, and eat it there.

When we had done, the children helped me to clear the table, and were retiring out of the room; but then I recalled them, and deſired their uncle to excuſe their ſtay: for as he had promiſed me news of their mammy and her family, it would be the height of pleaſure to them to hear him. He

ſeemed

ſeemed very much pleaſed with this motion, deſiring by all means they might be preſent while he told his ſtory. Whereupon I ordered them to the cheſts again, while Quangrollart delivered his narrative.

CHAP. XXVII.

QUANGROLLART'S ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S JOURNEY, AND RECEPTION AT HER FATHER'S.

HAVING ſet on the table ſome brandy and Madeira, and each of us taken one glaſs of both, I ſhewed, by the attentiveneſs of my aſpect and poſture, how deſirous I was he ſhould proceed to what he had promiſed. Obſerving this, he went on in the following manner. 'Brother 'Peter,' ſays he, 'my ſiſter Youwarkee, as I don't doubt you will 'be glad to hear of her firſt, arrived 'very ſafe at Arndrumnſtake, the 'third day after ſhe left you, and 'after a very ſevere flight to the dear 'little Hallycarnie, who was a full 'day and a night on her graundee; and 'at laſt would not have been able to 'have reached Battringdrigg but for 'my ſiſter's aſſiſtance, who, taking 'her ſometimes on her back for a 'ſhort flight, by thoſe little refreſh-'ments enabled her to perform it; 'but from Battrindrigg, after ſome 'hours reſt, they came with pleaſure 'to the White Mountains, from 'whence, after a ſmall ſtay, they ar-'rived at Arndrumnſtake.

'They alighted at our coovett, but 'were oppoſed at their entrance by the 'guards, to whom they did not chuſe 'to diſcover themſelves, till notice 'was given to my father; who, upon 'hearing that ſome ſtrangers deſired 'admittance to him, ſent me to introduce them, if they were proper 'for his preſence, or elſe give orders 'for ſuch other reception as was ſuitable to them.

'When I came to the guard, I 'found three gawreys and a glummboſs, whoſe appearance and behaviour, I muſt own, prejudiced me 'very much in their favour. I then 'aſked from whence they came, and 'their buſineſs with the colamb. 'Youwarkee told me they came not 'about buſineſs of publick concern, re-'lating to the colamb's office, but out 'of a dutiful regard, as relations, to 'kiſs his knees. "My father," ſaid 'I, "ſhall know it immediately; but "firſt, pray inform me of your name?" "Your father!" replied Youwarkee, "are you my brother Quangrollart?" "My name is ſo," ſays I, "but I have "only one ſiſter, now with my father, "and how I can be your brother, I "am not able to gueſs."—"Have "you never had another ſiſter?" ſays 'ſhe. "Yes," ſays I, "but ſhe is "long ſince dead; her name was "Youwarkee." At my mentioning 'her name ſhe fell upon my neck in 'tears, crying, "My dear brother, I "am that dead ſiſter Youwarkee, and "theſe with me are ſome of my chil-"dren, for I have five more; but "pray how does my father and ſiſter?" 'I ſtarted back at this declaration, to 'view her and the children, fearing 'it was ſome groſs impoſition, not in 'the leaſt knowing or remembering 'any thing of her face, after ſo long 'an abſence; but I deſired them to 'walk in, till I told my father.

'The guard, obſerving the ſeveral 'paſſages between us, were amazed 'to think who it could be had ſo familiarly embraced me; eſpecially as 'they plainly ſaw I only played a 'paſſive part in it.

'When I went in, I did not think 'proper directly to inform my father 'what had happened; but calling my 'ſiſter Hallycarnie, I let her into the 'circumſtances of this odd affair, and 'deſired her advice what to do: "For, 'ſays I, "ſurely this muſt be ſome "impoſtor; and as my father has "ſcarce ſubdued his ſorrow for my "ſiſter's loſs, if this gawrey ſhould "prove a deceiver, it will only revive "his affliction, and may prove at this "time extremely dangerous to him: "therefore let's conſider what had "beſt be done in the matter."

'Hallycarnie, who had attentively 'weighed all I ſaid, ſeemed to think 'it was ſome cheat, as well as I did; 'for we could neither of us conceive 'that any thing but death, or being ſlit, 'could have kept Youwarkee ſo long 'from the knowledge of her relations; 'and that neither of them could be 'the caſe was plain, if the perſon attending was Youwarkee. "Beſides, "brother,"

" brother," says Hallycarnie, " she " cannot surely be so much altered in " fifteen years, but you must have " known her: and yet, now I think, " it is possible, you being so much " younger, may have forgot her; but " whilst we have been talking of her, " I have so well recollected her, that " I think I could hardly be imposed " upon by any deceiver."

' I then desired her to go with me ' to the strangers, and see if she could ' make any discovery. She did so, ' and had no sooner entered the abb, ' but Youwarkee called out, " My " dear sister Hallycarnie!" and she as ' readily recollecting Youwarkee, they ' in transport embraced each other; ' and then your wife presenting to us ' her three children, it proved the ten- ' derest scene, except the following, I ' ever saw.

' My father having kept his cham- ' ber some time with a fever, and ' though he was pretty well recovered, ' having not yet been out of it, we ' consulted how we might introduce ' our sister and her children to him, ' with as little surprize as might be, ' for fear of a relapse by too great a ' hurry of his spirits. At length we ' concluded, I should go tell him ' that some strangers had arrived, de- ' siring to see him; but, on inquiry, ' finding their business was too trifling ' to trouble him upon, I had dispatch- ' ed them: I was then to say, how ' like one of them was to my sister ' Youwarkee; and whilst I was ' speaking, Hallycarnie was to enter, ' and keep up the discourse, till we ' should find a proper opportunity of ' discovery. I went in, therefore, as ' had been agreed; and, upon men- ' tioning the name of Youwarkee, my ' father fetched a deep sigh, and ' turned away from me in tears. ' At ' that instant Hallycarnie came in as ' by accident; " Sir," says she, " what makes you so sad? are you " worse to-day?"—" O!" says he, " I " have heard a name that will never " be out of my heart, till I am in " hoximo."—" What, I suppose my " sister?"—" 'Tis true," replied he, " the same." Says she, " I fancied " so; for I have just seen a stranger " as like her as two doors could be, " and would have sworn it was she, if " that had been possible. I thought " my brother had been so imprudent " as to mention her to you; and I " think he did not do well to rip up " an old sore he knew was almost " healed, and make it break out a- " fresh."—" Ah! no, child," says " my father, " that sore never has, " nor can be healed. O Great Image! " why can't I by some means or other " be ascertained what end she came " to?"

" Sir," says my sister, " I think you " are much to blame for these excla- " mations, after so long absence: for, " if she be dead, what use are they of? " and if she be not, all may be well, " and you may still see her again."— " O never, never!" says my father; " but could I be sure she was alive, I " would take a swangean, and never " close my graundee, till I found her, " or dropt dead in the search."—" And " suppose you could meet with her, " Sir," says I, " the very sight would " overcome you, and be dangerous."— " No, believe me, boy," says he, " I " should then be fully easy and com- " posed; and were she to come in this " moment, I should suffer no surprize, " but pleasure." — " No surprize, " Sir?" says I. " Not if she were alive " and well," says he. " Then, Sir," ' says Hallycarnie, " will you excuse " me if I introduce her?" and went ' out directly without staying for an ' answer.

' When she was gone, " Quangrol- " lart," says my father, sternly, " what is the meaning of yours and " your sister's playing thus upon my " weakness? It is what I can upon no " account forgive. It looks as if you " were weary of me, and wanted to " break my heart. To what purpose " is all this prelude of yours, to in- " troduce to me somebody who, by " her likeness to my daughter, may " expose me to your scoff and raillery? " This is a disobedience I never ex- " pected from either of you."

" The Great Image attend me!" ' says I, " Sir, you have much mistaken " me; but I will not leave you in " doubt, even till Hallycarnie's re- " turn, you shall see Youwarkee with " her; for all our discourse, I'll assure " you, has but been concerted to pre- " pare you for her reception, with " three of her children."—" And am " I then," says he, in a transport,

" still

" ſtill to be bleſſed?"—" You are, " Sir," ſays I; " aſſure yourſelf you " are."

' By this time we heard them coming; but my poor father had not ' power to go to meet them: and upon ' Youwarkee's nearer approach, to ' fall at his knees, his limbs failing ' him, he ſunk, and without ſpeaking a word, fell backwards on a ' couch, which ſtood behind him; ' and being quite motionleſs, we concluded him to be ſtone-dead. On ' this the women became entirely helpleſs, ſcreaming only, and wringing ' their hands in extravagant poſtures. ' But I, having a little more preſence ' of mind, called for the callentar; ' who, by holding his noſe, pinching ' his feet, and other applications, in a ' little time brought him to his ſenſes ' again.

' You may more eaſily conceive than ' I deſcribe, both the confuſion we ' were all in during my father's diſorder, and the congratulations upon ' his recovery; ſo, as I can give you ' but a defective account of theſe, I ' ſhall paſs them by, and come to our ' more ſerious diſcourſe, after my father and your wife had, without ' ſpeaking a word, wept themſelves ' quite dry on each other's necks.

' My father then looking upon the ' three children, (who were alſo crying to ſee their mammy cry) " And " who are theſe?" ſays he. " Theſe, " Sir," ſays Youwarkee, " are three " of eight of your grand-children." —" And where is your barkatt?" ſays ' he. " At home with the reſt, Sir," ' replied ſhe, " who are ſome of them " too ſmall to come ſo far yet: but " Sir," ſays ſhe, " pray excuſe my " anſwering you any more queſtions, " till you are a little recovered from " the commotion I perceive my preſence has brought upon your ſpirits; " and as reſt, the callentar ſays, will " be exceedingly proper, I will retire " with my ſiſter till you are better able " to bear company." My father was ' with much difficulty prevailed with ' to part with her out of his ſight; but ' the callentar preſſing it, we were all ' diſmiſſed, and he laid down to reſt.'

My brother would have gone on, but I told him, as it grew near time for repoſe, and he and Roſig muſt needs be fatigued with ſo long a flight, if they pleaſed, (as I had already heard the moſt valuable part of all he could ſay, in that my father had received my wife and children ſo kindly, and that he left them all well) we would defer his farther relation till the next day: which they both agreeing to, I laid them in my own bed, myſelf ſleeping in a ſpare hammock.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A DISCOURSE ON LIGHT—QUANGROLLART EXPLAINS THE WORD CRASHEE—BELIEVES A FOWL IS A FRUIT—GIVES A FARTHER ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S RECEPTION BY HER FATHER, AND BY THE KING—TOMMY AND HALLYCARNIE PROVIDED FOR AT COURT—YOUWARKEE AND HER FATHER VISIT THE COLAMBS, AND ARE VISITED—HER RETURN PUT OFF TILL NEXT WINTER, WHEN HER FATHER IS TO COME WITH HER.

THE next day I prepared again of the beſt of every thing for my new gueſts. I killed three fowls, and ordered Pedro (who was as good a cook almoſt as myſelf) to get them ready for boiling, whilſt we took a walk to the lake. Though we went out in the cleareſt part of the morning, I heard no complaint of the light. I took the liberty to aſk my brother, if the light did not offend him; for I told him my wife could not bear ſo much without ſpectacles. ' What is ' that ſpectacle?' ſays he. ' Some' thing I made your ſiſter,' ſays I, ' to ' prevent the inconvenience of too ' much light upon her eyes.' He ſaid the light was ſcarce at all troubleſome to him, for he had been in much greater, and was uſed to it; and that the glumms, who travelled much abroad, could bear more light than the gawreys, who ſtaid much at home: theſe ſtirring but little out, unleſs in large companies, and that of one another, and very rarely admitted glumms amongſt them before marriage. For his own part, he ſaid, he had an office at Craſhdoorpt, which, though he executed chiefly by a deputy, obliged him to reſide there ſometimes for a long ſeaſon together; and that being a more luminous country than Arndrumnſtake,

ſtake, light was become familiar to him; for it was very obſervable, that ſome who had been uſed to it young, though they might in time overcome it, yet at firſt it was very uneaſy.

I was upon the tenter whilſt he ſpoke, leſt, before he had done, a queſtion I had a thouſand times thought to have aſked my wife, ſhould ſlip out of my head, as it had ſo often done before, and was what I had for years deſired to be reſolved in; viz. what the meaning of the word ſlit was, when applied to a man. So, on his pauſing, I ſaid, that his mention of Craſhdoorpt reminded me of enquiring what craſhee meant, when applied to a glumm or gawrey. It would be no hard taſk, he ſaid, to ſatisfy me in reſpect of that, as I already underſtood the nature of the graundee; whereupon he went on thus—'Slitting is the only puniſhment 'we uſe to incorrigible criminals: 'our method is, where any one has 'committed a very heinous offence, 'or, which is the ſame thing, has 'multiplied the acts of offence, he 'has a long ſtring tied round his neck, 'in the manner of a cravat; and then 'two glumms, one at each end, take 'it in their hands, ſtanding ſide by 'ſide with him; two more ſtand be'fore him, and two behind him; all 'which in that manner take flight, ſo 'that the ſtring keeps the criminal in 'the middle of them: thus they con'duct him to Craſhdoorpt, which lies 'farther on the other ſide of Arn'drumnſtake than this arkoe does on 'this ſide of it, and is juſt ſuch an 'arkoe as ours, but much bigger with'in the rocks. When they come to 'the coovett they alight, where my de'puty immediately orders the male'factor to be ſlit, ſo that he can never 'more return to Normnbdſgrſutt, or 'indeed by any means get out of that 'arkoe, but muſt end his days there. 'The method of ſlitting is thus: the 'criminal is laid on his back with his 'graundee open, and after a recapitu'lation of his crimes and his condem'nation, the officer with a ſharp ſtone 'ſlits the gume between each of the 'filuſes of the graundee, ſo that he can 'never fly more. But what is ſtill 'worſe to new comers, if they are 'not very young, is, the light of the 'place, which is ſo ſtrong, that it is 'ſome years before they can overcome 'it, if ever they do.'

This diſcourſe gave me a great plea-ſure; thereupon I repeated the dia-logue that had paſſed between me and Youwarkee about my being ſlit, and how we had held an argument a long time, without being able to come at one another's meaning. 'But pray, 'brother,' ſays I, 'how comes that 'light country to agree ſo well with 'you?'—'Why,' ſays he, 'the co-'lambat of Craſhdoorpt is reckoned 'one of the moſt honourable employ-'ments in the ſtate, by reaſon of the 'hazard of it, and the perſon accept-'ing it muſt be young; it was, by my 'father's intereſt at court, given to 'me at nine years of age; my friend 'Roſig has followed my fortune in it 'ever ſince, being much about my 'age, and has a poſt under me there: 'in ſhort, by being obliged to be ſo 'much there, and from ſo tender an 'age too, I have pretty well enured 'myſelf to any light.'

By this time we had got home again to dinner, which Pedro had ſet out as elegantly as my country could afford, conſiſting of pickles and preſerves, as uſual, a diſh of hard eggs, and boiled fowls with ſpinage.

My gueſts, as I expected, ſtared at the fowls, but never offered to touch them, or ſeemed in the leaſt inclined to do ſo. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a wing on each of their plates, and a leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to ſee how I ma-naged it, I ſtuck in my fork, cut off a ſlice, dipped it in the ſalt, and put it in my mouth. Juſt as I did they did, and appeared very well pleaſed with the taſte. 'I never in my life,' ſays Roſig, 'ſaw a crullmott of this 'ſhape before;' and laid hold of a leg, (taking it for a ſtick I had thruſt in, as he told me afterwards) intend-ing to pull it out; but finding it grew there, 'Mr. Peter,' ſays he, 'you 'have the oddeſt-ſhaped crullmotts 'that ever I ſaw; pray, what part of 'the woods do they grow in?'—'Grow in?' ſays I. 'Aye,' ſays he, 'I mean whether your crullmott-trees 'are like ours or not?'—'Why,' ſays I, 'theſe fowls are about my yard and 'the wood too.'—'What,' ſays he,

'is it a running plant like a bott?'—'No, no,' says I, 'a bird that I keep 'tame about my house; and these,' (shewing him the eggs) 'are the eggs 'of these birds, and the birds grow 'from them.'—'Pr'ythee,' says Quangrollart, 'never let's enquire what 'they are till we have dined; for my 'brother Peter will give us nothing 'we need be afraid of.'

It growing into the night by that time we rose from table, I set a bowl of punch before them, made with my treacle and sour rams-horn juice, which they pulled off plentifully. After some bumpers had gone round, I desired my brother to proceed where he left off, in the account of my wife's reception with her father.

'When my father,' says he, 'had 'recovered himself by some hours re-'pose, the first thing he did was to 'order my sister Youwarkee to be 'called; who coming into his pre-'sence, he took her from her knees, 'kissed her, and ordered all to depart 'but myself and Hallycarnie. Then 'bidding us sit down, says he to your 'wife, "Daughter, your appearance, "whom I have so long lamented as "dead, has given me the truest cor-"dial I could have received, and I "hope will add both to my health and "years. I have heard, you suspect my "anger for some part of your past "conduct," (for she had hinted so to 'her sister and me) "which you just-"ly enough imagine may be censured; "but, my dear life, I am this day, "what I did not expect any more to "be, a father of a new-born child; "and not of one only, but of many; "and this day, I say, daughter, shall "not be spent in sorrow and excuses, "or any thing to interrupt our mu-"tual felicity; neither will I ever "hereafter permit you to beg my for-"giveness, or attempt to palliate any "of your proceedings; for know, "child, that a benevolence freely be-"stowed, is better than twice it's va-"lue obtained by petition: I there-"fore, as in presence of the Great "Image, your brother and sister, at "this instant, erase from my mind "for ever what thoughts I may have "had prejudicial to the love I ever "bore you, as I will have you to do "all such as may cloud the unreserv-"ed complacency you used to appear "with before me—and now, Quan-"grollart," says he, "let the guard "be drawn out before my coovett, and "let the whole country be entertain-"ed for seven days; proclaim li-"berty to all persons confined; and "let not the least sorrow appear in "any face thoughout my colambat."

'I retired immediately, and gave 'the necessary orders for the speedy 'dispatch of my father's commands; 'which indeed were performed to the 'utmost; and nothing for seven days 'was to be heard through the whole 'district of Arndrumnstake, but joy 'and the name of Youwarkee.

'My father, so soon as he had dis-'patched the above orders, sent for 'the children before him, whom he 'kissed and blessed, frequently lifting 'up his eyes in gratitude to the Great 'Image, for the unexpected happiness 'he enjoyed on that occasion; and then 'he ordered Youwarkee to let him 'know what had befallen her in her 'absence, and where she lived, and 'with whom.

'Youwarkee was setting out with 'some indirect excuses; but my fa-'ther absolutely forbid her, and 'charged her only to mention plain 'facts, without flourishes. So she 'began with her swangean, and the ac-'cidental fall she had, your taking her 'in after it, and saving her life. She 'told him, your continued kindness 'so wrought upon her, that she found 'herself incapable of diseesteeming 'you, but never shewed her affection, 'till, having examined every parti-'cular of your life, and finding you 'a worthy man, she could not avoid 'becoming your wife; and she said, 'the reason why she always declined 'being seen by her friends, in their 'swangeans, was, for fear she should 'be forced from you, though she 'longed to see us; and that at last, 'she was come by your consent; and, 'that had it rested there only, she might 'have come much sooner; for that 'you would often have had her shew 'herself to her friends, when you 'heard them, having strong desires 'yourself to be known to them.

'My father, upon hearing this, was 'so charmed with your tenderness and 'affection to his daughter, that you 'already rival his own issue in his 'esteem, and he is persuaded he can

'never

'never do enough for you or your chil-
'dren.

'The noiſe of Youwarkee's return,
'and my father's rejoiceing, ſoon
'ſpread over all Normnbdſgrſutt; and
'King Georigetti ſent expreſs to my
'father, to command him to attend
'with your wife and children at Bran-
'dleguarp, his capital. Thither ac-
'cordingly we all went, with a grand
'retinue, and ſtaid twenty days. The
'king took great delight, as well as
'the ladies of the court, to hear You-
'warkee and her children talk Engliſh,
'and in being informed of you and
'your way of life; and ſo fond was
'Yaccombourſe (who, though not
'the king's wife, is inſtead of one) of
'my nephew Tommy, that, upon my
'father's return, ſhe took him to her-
'ſelf, and aſſured my ſiſter he ſhould
'continue near her perſon till he was
'qualified for better preferment. The
'king's ſiſter Jahamel would alſo
'have taken Patty into her ſervice;
'but ſhe begged to be permitted to at-
'tend her mother to Arndrumnſtake;
'ſo Hallycarnie her ſiſter, who choſe
'to continue with Jahamel, was re-
'ceived in her room.

'Upon my father's return to Arn-
'drumnſtake, he found no leſs than
'fifteen expreſſes from ſeveral co-
'lambs, deſiring to rejoice with him
'on the return of his daughter, with
'particular invitations to him and her
'to ſpend ſome time with them. My
'father, though he hates more pomp
'than is neceſſary to ſupport dignity,
'could do no leſs than ſeverally viſit
'them, with Youwarkee, attended
'by a grand retinue, ſpending more
'or leſs days with each; hoping when
'that was over, he ſhould have ſome
'little time to ſpend in retirement with
'his daughter before her departure,
'who now began to be uneaſy for
'you, who, ſhe ſaid, would ſuffer the
'greateſt concern in her abſence; but,
'upon their return from thoſe viſits,
'at about the end of four months
'progreſs, they found themſelves in
'as little likelihood of retirement as
'the firſt day; for the inferior co-
'lambs were continually poſting away,
'one after another, to perform their
'reſpects to my father, and all the in-
'ferior magiſtrates of ſmaller diſtricts
'ſending to know when they might
'be permitted to do the ſame. Poor
'Youwarkee, who ſaw no end of it,
'expreſſed her concern for you in ſo
'lively a manner to my father, that,
'finding he could by no means put a
'ſtop to the good-will of the people,
'and not bearing the thoughts of
'Youwarkee's departure till ſhe had
'now received all their compliments,
'he reſolved to keep her with him till
'the next winter ſet in, in theſe parts,
'and then to accompany her himſelf to
'Graundevolet. In the mean while,
'that you might not remain in an un-
'eaſy ſuſpenſe what was become of
'my ſiſter, he ordered me to diſpatch
'meſſengers expreſs to inform you of
'the reaſons of her ſtay; but I told
'him, if he pleaſed, I would execute
'that office myſelf, with my friend
'Roſig, with which he was very well
'pleaſed, and enjoined me to aſſure
'you of his affection, and that he
'himſelf was debtor to you for the
'love and kindneſs you had ſhewn his
'daughter.

'Thus, brother,' ſays Quangrol-
lart, 'I hope I have acquitted myſelf
'of my charge to your ſatisfaction,
'and it only now remains that I re-
'turn you my acknowledgments for
'your hearty welcome to myſelf and
'friend; which (with concern I ſpeak
'it) I am afraid I ſhall not have an
'opportunity to return at Arndrumn-
'ſtake, the diſtance being ſo immenſe-
'ly great, and you not having the
'graundee. To-morrow morning my
'friend and I will ſet out on our re-
'turn home.'

Quangrollart having done, I told him I could not but bluſh at the load of undeſerved praiſes he had laid on me; but, as he had received his notion of my merits from a wife, too fond to let my character ſink for want of her ſupport, it would be ſufficient if himſelf could conceive of, and alſo repreſent me at his return, in no worſe a light than other men; and though it gave me pain to think of loſing my wife ſo long, yet his account of her health, and the company he aſſured me ſhe would return in, would doubly compenſate my loſs; and I begged of him, if it might be with any convenience, he would let ſome meſſenger come the day before her, to give me notice of their approach. As to their departure on the morrow, I told them I could by no means think of that, as

I had propoſed to catch them a dinner of freſh fiſh in the lake, and to ſhew them my boat, and how and where I came into this arkoe; believing, by what I had obſerved, it would be no ſmall novelty to them. So, having engaged them one day more, we parted for that night to reſt.

CHAP. XXIX.

THE AUTHOR SHEWS QUANGROLLART AND ROSIG HIS POULTRY — THEY ARE SURPRIZED AT THEM—HE TAKES THEM A FISHING—THEY WONDER AT HIS CART, AND AT HIS SHOOTING A FOWL — THEY ARE TERRIBLY FRIGHTENED AT THE FIRING OF THE GUN—WILKINS PACIFIES THEM.

I Was heartily ſorry to loſe my brother thus quickly, and ſtill more ſo to find it would be a long time yet ere I ſhould ſee my wife; however, I was reſolved to behave as chearfully as poſſible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining hours of Quangrollart's ſtay with me, to rivet myſelf thoroughly in his eſteem, and to diſmiſs him with a moſt cordial affection to me and the reſt of my children here with him. I roſe early in the morning, to provide a good breakfaſt for my gueſts, and conſidering we ſhould be in the air moſt part of that day, I treated them with a diſh of hot fiſh-ſoup, and ſet before them on the table a jovial bottle of brandy, and my ſilver cann: this laſt piece I choſe to ſhew them, as a ſpecimen of the richneſs of my houſhold furniture, and the grandeur of my living, concealing moſt of my other curioſities till Pendlehamby my father-in-law's arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have ſomewhat new of this kind to diſplay at his entertainment.

After a plenteous meal, we ſet out on our pleaſurable expedition, having told Pedro what to get for dinner, and that I believed we ſhould not return till late.

We firſt took a turn in the wood, but I did not lead them near my tent, becauſe I did not chuſe my wife ſhould hear of that till ſhe came; I then ſhewed them my farm-yard and poultry, which they were ſtrangely ſurprized at, and wondered to ſee ſo many creatures come at my call, and run about my legs only upon a whiſtle, though before there were only two or three to be ſeen. They aſked me an hundred queſtions about the fowl, which I anſwered, and told them theſe were ſome ſuch as they had eaten, and called grullmotts, the day before. I afterwards carried them to hear the muſick of thoſe plants that I call my cream-cheeſe; which, as there happened to be a ſmall breeze ſtirring, made their uſual melody.

When we had diverted ourſelves ſome time in the wood, we went to the wet-dock, where I ſhewed them my boat. At firſt view they wondered what uſe it was for; to ſatisfy them in that I ſtepped in, deſiring them to follow me, but ſeeing the boat's agitation, they did not chuſe to venture till I aſſured them they might come with the greateſt ſafety: at length, with ſome perſuaſion, and repeated aſſurances, I prevailed on them to truſt themſelves with me.

We firſt rowed to the bridge, where I informed them by what accident I was drawn down the ſtream on the other ſide of the rock, and after a tedious and dangerous paſſage, diſcharged ſafe in the lake through that opening.

I then told them how ſurprized I had been, juſt before I knew Youwarkee, with the ſight of her country-folks, firſt on the lake, and then taking flight from that bridge, and what had been my thoughts, and how great my terrors, on that occaſion.

After we had viewed the bridge, I took them to my rill, (for by this time they were reconciled to the boat, and would help me to row it) and ſhewed them how I got water. I then landed them to ſee the method of fiſhing, for which purpoſe I laid my net in proper order, and fixing it as uſual, I brought it round out at the rill, and had a very good haul, with which I deſired them to help me up; for though I could eaſily have done it myſelf, I had a mind to let them have a hand in the ſport, with which they were pleaſed. I perceived, however, the fiſh were not agreeable to them; for when any one came near their hands, they avoided touching it: notwithſtanding, having got the net on ſhore, I laid it open; but

to see how they stared at the fish, creeping backwards, and then at me and the net, it made me very merry to myself, though I did not care to shew it.

I drew up at that draught twenty-two fishes in all, of which a few were near an ell long, several about two feet, and some smaller. When they saw me take up the large ones in my arms, and tumble them into the boat, they both, unrequested, took up of the small ones, and put them in likewise; but dropping them every time they struck their tails, the fish had commonly two or three falls ere they came to the boat.

I asked them how they liked that sport, and they told me it was something very surprizing, that I should know just where the fish were, as they could see none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whistle. I perceived by this, they imagined I could whistle the fish together as well as the fowls, and I did not undeceive them, being well enough pleased they should think me excellent for something, as I really thought they were on account of the graundee.

Upon our return, when I had docked my boat, as there were too many fish to carry up by hand to the grotto, I desired them to take a turn upon the shore till I fetched my cart for it. I made what haste I could, and brought one of my guns with me, which I determined, upon some occasion or other, to fire off; for I took it they would be more surprized at the explosion of that than at any thing they had yet seen. Having loaded my fish, and marched backwards, they eyed my cart very much, and wondered what made the wheels move about so, taking them for legs it walked upon, till I explained the reason of it, and then they desired to draw it, which they did with great eagerness, one at a time, the other observing it's motions.

As we advanced homewards, there came a large water-fowl, about the size of a goose, flying cross us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my brother, 'I wish I had it!'—'If 'you have a mind for it,' says I, 'I'll 'give it you.'—'I wish you would,' says he, 'for I never saw any thing 'like it in my life!'—'Stand still 'then,' says I; and stepping two or three yards before them, I fired, and down it dropped. I then turned about to observe what impression the gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to see them so terrified. Rosig, before I could well look about, had got fifty paces from me, and my brother was lying behind the cart of fish. I called and asked them what was the matter, and desired them to come to me, telling them they should receive no harm, and offered my brother the gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to Rosig.

Finding they made a serious affair of it, (for I saw them whispering together) I was under some apprehension for the consequences of my frolick. Thinks I, 'If under this disgust they 'take flight, refusing to hear me, and 'report that I was about to murder 'them, or tell any other pernicious 'story to my father of me, I am ab-'solutely undone, and shall never see 'Youwarkee more.' So I laid down the gun by the fish, and moving slowly towards them, expostulated with them upon their disorder; assuring them, that though the object before them might surprize them, it was but a common instrument in my country, which every boy used to take birds with; and protested to them, that the gun of itself could do nothing without my skill directing it, and that they might be sure I should never employ that but to their service. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reasoning coolly, they blamed me for not giving them notice. Says I, 'There was no room for me 'to explain the operation of the gun 'to you whilst the bird was on the 'wing, for it would have been gone 'out of my reach before I could have 'made you sensible of that, and so 'have escaped me; which, as you de-'sired me to get it you, I was resolved 'it should not do. But for your-'selves, surely you could have no dif-'fidence in me; that is highly unbe-'coming of man to man, especially 'relations; and, above all, a relation 'to whom you have brought the wel-'comest news upon earth, in the love 'of my dear father, and his reconci-'liation to my wife.'

At last, by degrees, I brought them to confess, that it was only a groundless sudden terror which suppressed their reason for a while, but that what I said

ſaid was all very true; and as their ſerious reflection returned, they were ſatisfied of it. I then ſtepped for the bird, and brought it to them: it was a very fine-feathered creature, and they were very much delighted with the beauty of it, and deſired it might be laid upon the cart and carried home.

All the way we went afterwards to the grotto, nothing was to be heard from them but my praiſes, and what a great and wiſe man brother Peter was. 'And no wonder now, ſiſter Youwarkee,' ſays Quangrollart, 'once knowing him, could never leave him.' It was not my buſineſs to gainſay this, but only to receive it with ſo much modeſty as might ſerve to heighten their good opinion of me; and I found, upon my wife's return, that Quangrollart had painted me in no mean colours to his father.

I once more had the pleaſure of entertaining them with the old fare, and ſome of the freſh fiſh, part boiled and part fried, which laſt they choſe before the boiled. We made a very chearful ſupper, talking over that day's adventures, and of their enſuing journey home, after which we retired to reſt, mutually pleaſed. We all aroſe early the next morning. We took a ſhort breakfaſt, after which Quangrollart and Roſig ſtuck their chaplets with the longeſt and moſt beautiful feathers of the bird I ſhot, thinking them a fine ornament. Being now ready for departure, they embraced me and the children, and were juſt taking flight, when it came into my head that as the king's miſtreſs had taken Tommy into her protection, it might poſſibly be a means of ingratiating him in her favour if I ſent him the flagellet, (for I had, in my wife's abſence, made two others near as good, by copying exactly after it.) I therefore deſired to know, if one of them would trouble himſelf with a ſmall piece of wood I very much wanted to convey to my ſon. Roſig anſwered, with all his heart; if it was not very long he would put it into his colapet. So I ſtepped in, and fetching the flagellet, preſented it to Roſig. My brother ſeeing it look oddly, with holes in it, deſired (after he had aſked if it was not a little gun) to have the handling of it. It was given him, and he ſurveyed it very attentively. Being inquiſitive into the uſe of it, I told him it was a muſical inſtrument, and played ſeveral tunes upon it; with which he and his companion were in raptures. I doubt not they would have ſat a week to hear me if I would have gone on; but I deſiring the latter to take care of it's ſafety, he put it in his colapet, and away they went.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

PETER PREPARES FOR HIS FATHER'S RECEPTION — ARGUMENTS ABOUT HIS BEARD—EXPECTS HIS WIFE — REFLECTIONS ON HER NOT COMING—SEES A MESSENGER ON THE ROCK—HAS NOTICE OF PENDLEHAMBY'S ARRIVAL, AND PREPARES A TREAT.

THE news my late viſitors had brought me, ſet my mind quite at eaſe; and now, having leiſure to look into my own affairs, with the ſummer before me, I began to conſider what preparations I muſt make againſt the return of my wife; for, according to the report I had heard, I concluded there would be a great number of attendants; and, as her father would no doubt pique himſelf upon the grandeur of his equipage, if his followers ſhould ſee nothing in me but a plain dirty fellow, I ſhould be contemned, and perhaps my wife, through my means, be ſlighted; or, at leaſt, loſe that reſpect the report of me had in a great meaſure procured her.

The firſt thing therefore that I did, was to look into my cheſts again, wherein I knew there were many of the Portugueſe captain's cloaths, and take out ſuch as would be moſt ſuitable to the occaſion, and lay them all by themſelves. I found a blue cloth laced-coat, double-breaſted, with very large gold buttons, and very broad gold button-holes, lined with white ſilk; a pair of black velvet breeches, a large gold-laced hat, and a point neckcloth, with two or three very good ſhirts, two pair of red-heeled ſhoes, a pair of white and another of ſcarlet ſilk-ſtockings, two ſilver-hilted ſwords, and ſeveral other good things; but upon examination of theſe cloaths, and by a letter or two found in the pockets of ſome of them, directed to Captain Jeremiah Vauclaile, in Threadneedle Street, London, I judged theſe belonged to the Engliſh captain, taken by the Portugueſe ſhip in Africa. I immediately tried ſome of them on, and thought they became me very well, and laid all thoſe in particular cheſts, to be ready when the time came, and ſet them into one of my inner rooms.

Upon examining the contents of another cheſt, I found a long ſcarlet cloak laced, a caſe of razors, a pair of ſciſſars, and ſhaving-glaſs; a long-wig, and two bob-wigs, and laid them by; for I was determined, as I might poſſibly have no other opportunity, to make myſelf appear as conſiderable as I could.

When I had digeſted in my mind upon

upon what occaſions I would appear in either of them, and laid them in proper order, Pedro and I went ſeveral days to work with the net, and caught abundance of fiſh, which I ſalted and dried; and we cut a great quantity of long graſs to dry, and ſpread in my tent for the lower gentry, and made up a little cock of it; we alſo cut and piled up a large parcel of fire-wood; and as I had now about thirty of the beſt fiſh-ſkins, each of which would cover four chairs, I nailed them on for cuſhions to my chairs, and the reſt I ſewed together, and made rugs of them.

I had obſerved, that my brother Quangrollart, and Roſig, neither of them had beards, and as they were quite ſmooth-chinned, I conjectured that none of their countrymen had any; 'So,' ſays I, 'if that is the caſe, as 'I have now both ſciſſars and razors, 'I will e'en cut off mine, to be like 'them.' I then ſet up my glaſs, taking my ſciſſars in hand; but had not quite cloſed them for a ſnip, when I conſidered, that as I was not of their country, and was ſo different from them in other reſpects, whether it would not add to my dignity to appear with my beard before them. This I debated ſome time, and then determined in favour of my beard; but as this queſtion ſtill ran in my mind, and I wavered ſometimes this way, ſometimes that, I ſome days after prepared again for execution, and took a large ſnip off; 'When,' ſays I, 'how can 'I tell whether I can ſhave after all? 'I have not tried yet, and if I can't, 'how much more ridiculous ſhall I 'look with ſtubbed hair here and 'there, than with this comely beard?' I muſt ſay, I never in my life had ſo long a debate with myſelf, it holding upwards of two months, varying almoſt every time I thought of it; till one day, dreſſing myſelf in a ſuit I had not before tried on, and looking in the glaſs; 'It can never be,' ſays I, 'that this grave beard ſhould ſuit 'with theſe fine cloaths: no, I will 'have it off, I am reſolved.' I had no ſooner given another good ſnip, than ſpying the cloak, I had a mind to ſee how I looked in that: 'Aye,' ſays I, 'now I ſee I muſt either wear 'this beard or not this cloak. How 'majeſtick does it look! So ſage, ſo 'grave, it denotes wiſdom and ſolidity; and if they already think well 'of me, don't let me be fool enough 'to relinquiſh my claim to that for a 'gay coat.' I had no ſooner fixed on this, than I took up all the implements to put again into the cheſt; and the laſt of them being the glaſs, I would have one more look before I parted with it: but my beard made ſuch a horrid, frightful figure, with the three great cuts in it, that though it grieved me to think I muſt part with it juſt when I had come to a reſolution to preſerve it, I fell to work with my ſciſſars, and off it came; and after two or three trials, I became very expert with my razor.

Winter coming on, as I knew I muſt ſoon have more occaſion than ever for a ſtock of proviſion, from the increaſe of mouths I expected, I laid in a ſtock for a little army, and when the hurry of that was over, I kept a ſharp look-out upon the level, in expectation of my company, and had once a mind to have brought my tent thither to entertain them in; but it was too much trouble for the hands I had, ſo I dropped the deſign. I took one or other of the children with me every day, and grew more and more uneaſy at hearing nothing of them; and as uncertain attendance naturally breeds thoughtfulneſs, and the hours in no employ paſs ſo leiſurely as in that, my mind preſaged numberleſs intervening accidents, that might, if not entirely prevent their coming, at leaſt poſtpone it.

Thinks I, (and that I fixed for my ſtandard) 'Youwarkee, I am ſure, 'would come if ſhe could; but then,' ſays I, 'here is a long flight, and to be 'undertaken by an old man too, (for I 'thought my father-in-law much older 'than I afterwards found him) who 'is now ſafe and quiet at home; and 'having his daughter with him, is no 'doubt deſirous of continuing ſo: now, 'what cares he for my uneaſineſs? He 'can find one pretence or other, no 'doubt, of drilling on the time till 'the dark weather is over; and then, 'forſooth, it will be too light to come; 'and thus ſhall I be hung up in ſuſpenſe for another year; or what if 'my brother, as he called himſelf, for 'he may be no more a brother of mine 'than the pope's, for aught I know, 'came only on a pretence to ſee how 'I went on; and not finding, for all

'his

Plate V.

Published as the Act directs. by Harrison & Cº. Aug. 30. 1783.

'his ſham compliments to me, his 'ſiſter married to his father's liking, 'ſhould adviſe him not to ſend my 'wife back again; and ſo all the 'trouble I have had on their account 'ſhould only prove a ſtanding monu-'ment of my fooliſh credulity! Nay, 'it is not impoſſible, but as I have al-'ready had one meſſage to inform me 'Tommy and Hallycarnie are pro-'vided for, as much as to ſay in plain 'Engliſh, I ſhall ſee them no more, ſo 'I may ſoon have another by ſome 'ſneaking puppy or other, whom I 'ſuppoſe I am to treat for the news, to 'tell me my wife and Patty are pro-'vided for too, and I am to thank 'my kind benefactors for taking ſo 'great a charge off my hands. Am 'I? No! I'll firſt ſet my tent, cloaths, 'chairs, and all other mementos of 'my ſtupidity on fire, and by periſh-'ing, what's left of us, in the blaze, 'exterminate at once the wretched re-'mains of a deſerted family. I hate 'to be made a fool of!'

I had ſcarce finiſhed my ſoliloquy, when I heard a monſtrous ſort of groan or growl in the air, like thunder at a diſtance. 'What's that, Pedro?' ſays I; 'I never heard the like before, 'daddy!' ſays he. 'Look about, 'boy,' ſays I, 'do you ſee any thing?' We heard it again. 'Hark!' ſays Pedro, 'it comes from that end of the 'lake.' While we were liſtening to the third ſound, ſays Pedro, 'Daddy, 'yonder is ſomething black upon the 'rock, I did not ſee juſt now.'—'Why, it moves,' ſays I, 'Pedro; 'here is news, good or bad.'—'Hope 'the beſt, daddy,' ſays Pedro; 'I 'wiſh it may be mammy.'—'No,' ſays I, 'Pedro, I don't expect her be-'fore I hear from her.'—'Why then,' ſays Pedro, 'here they come; I can 'plainly diſcern three of them. If 'my brother Tommy ſhould be there, 'daddy!'—'No,' ſays I, Pedro, 'no 'ſuch good news; they tell me Tom-'my's provided for, and that's to ſuf-'fice for the loſs of my child: and 'yet Pedro, if I could get you ſettled 'in England in ſome good employ, I 'ſhould conſent to that: but what 'Tommy's to be I know not.'

By this time the three perſons were ſo near, that ſeeing us, they called out 'Peter!' and I making ſigns for them to alight, they ſettled juſt before me, and told me that Pendlehamby and Youwarkee would be with me by light next day.

I had no ſooner heard this, but ſo far was I from firing my tent, that I invited them to my grotto, ſet the beſt chear before them, and with over-haſte to do more than one thing at once, I even left undone what I might have done.

I aſked them who came with my father; and they told me about two hundred guards: that knocked me up again, as I had but prepared for about ſixty; thinks I, 'My ſcheme is all un-'twiſted.' I then aſked them, what loud noiſe it was, and if they heard it juſt before I ſaw them over the rock. They told me they heard only the gripſack they brought with them to diſtinguiſh them from ordinary meſſengers; and then one of them ſhewed it me, for I had before only taken it for a long ſtaff in his hand; 'But,' ſays he, 'you will hear them 'much louder to-morrow, and long-'er, before they come to you.'

Having entertained them to their content, I ſent them to reſt, not chuſing to aſk any queſtions; for I avoided anticipating the pleaſure of hearing all the news from Youwarkee herſelf. However, the boys and I prepared what proviſions of fowl and fiſh we could in the time, to be ready cold againſt they came, and then laid down ourſelves.

CHAP. II.

PETER SETTLES THE FORMALITY OF HIS FATHER'S RECEPTION—DESCRIPTION OF THEIR MARCH, AND ALIGHTING, RECEIVES HIS FATHER—CONDUCTS HIM TO HIS GROTTO—OFFERS TO BEG PARDON FOR HIS MARRIAGE—IS PREVENTED BY PENDLEHAMBY—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN IN ENGLISH HABIT — QUARTERS THE OFFICERS IN THE TENT.

MY mind ran ſo all night upon the ſettling the formality with which I ſhould receive Pendlehamby, that I got little or no reſt. In the morning I ſpread my table in as neat a manner as I could, and having dreſſed myſelf, Pedro, Jemmy, and David, we marched to the plain; myſelf carrying

a chair, and each of them a ſtool. I was dreſſed in a cinnamon-coloured gold-button coat, ſcarlet waiſtcoat, velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, the campaign-wig flowing, a gold-laced hat and feather, point cravat, ſilver ſword, and over all my cloak: as for my ſons, they had the cloaths my wife made before ſhe went.

When we heard them coming, I marſhalled the children in the order they were to ſit, and charged them to do as they ſaw me do; but to keep rather a half-pace backwarder than me; and then ſitting down in my chair, I ordered Pedro to his ſtool on my right-hand, and Jemmy to his on my left, and David to the left of Jemmy.

I then ſent two of the meſſengers to meet them, with inſtructions to let Youwarkee know where I waited for them, that they might alight at a ſmall diſtance before they came to me. This ſhe having communicated to her father, the order ran through the whole corps immediately when and where to alight.

It will be impoſſible for me by words to raiſe your ideas adequate to the grandeur of the appearance this body of men made, coming over the rock; but, as I perceive your curioſity is on the ſtretch to comprehend it, I ſhall faintly aim at gratifying you.

After we had heard for ſome time a ſound as of diſtant rumbling thunder, or of a thouſand bears in conſort, ſerenading in their hoarſeſt voices, we could juſt perceive by the clearneſs of the dawn gilding the edge of the rock, a black ſtream ariſe above the ſummit of it, ſeemingly about forty paces broad; when the noiſe increaſing very much, the ſtream aroſe broader and broader; and then you might perceive rows of poles, with here and there a ſtreamer; and as ſoon as ever the main body appeared above the rock, there was ſuch an univerſal ſhout as rent the air, and ecchoing from the oppoſite rock, returned the ſalute to them again. This was ſucceeded with a moſt raviſhing ſound of voices in ſong, which continued till they came pretty near me; and then the firſt line conſiſting of all the trumpets mounting a conſiderable height, and ſtill blowing, left room for the next ranks, about twenty abreaſt, to come forward beneath them; each of which dividing in the middle, alighted in ranks at about twenty paces diſtant from my right and left, making a lane before me, at the farther end of which Pendlehamby and his two daughters alighted, with about twenty of his guards behind them; the remainder conſiſting of about twenty more, coming forward over my head, and alighting behind me; and during this whole ceremony, the grip-ſacks ſounded with ſuch a din, it was aſtoniſhing.

Poor Youwarkee, who knew nothing of my dreſs, or of the loſs of my beard, was thunder-ſtruck when ſhe ſaw me, not being able to obſerve any viſage I had for my great wig and hat; but putting a good face on the matter, and not doubting but if the perſon ſhe ſaw was not me, ſhe ſhould ſoon find her huſband, for ſhe knew the children by their cloaths, ſhe came forward at her father's right-hand, I ſitting as great as a lord, till they came within about thirty paces of my ſeat; and then gravely riſing, I pulled off my hat and made my obeiſance, and again at ten ſteps forwarder; ſo that I made my third low bow cloſe at the feet of Pendlehamby, the children all doing the ſame. I then kneeling with one leg, embraced his right-knee; who raiſing me up, embraced me. Then retiring three ſteps, and coming forward again, I embraced Youwarkee ſome time; during which the children obſerved my pattern with Pendlehamby, who took them up and kiſſed them.

I whiſpered Youwarkee to know if any more of her relations were in the train, to whom I ought to pay my compliments; ſhe told me only her ſiſter Hallycarnie, juſt behind her father; I then ſaluted her, and ſtepping forward to the old gentleman's left-hand, I uſhered him through the lines of guards to my chair; where I cauſed him to ſit down with Youwarkee and Hallycarnie on each ſide, and myſelf on the left of Hallycarnie.

After expreſſing the great honour done me by Pendlehamby in this viſit, I told him I had a little grotto about half a mile through the wood, to which if he pleaſed to command, we would retire; for I had only placed that ſeat to relieve him immediately upon his deſcent.

Pendlehamby roſe, and all the grip-ſacks

ſacks ſounded; he leading Youwarkee in his right-hand, and I Hallycarnie in mine.

At the grotto, my father being ſeated, taking Youwarkee in my hand, we paid our obedience to him. I would have aſked his pardon for taking his daughter to wife without his leave, and was going on in a ſet ſpeech I had ſtudied for the purpoſe; but he refuſed to hear me, telling me I was miſtaken, he had conſented. I was replying I knew he had been ſo good as to paſs it over, but that would not excuſe—when he again interrupted me, by ſaying, 'If 'I approve it, and eſteem you, what 'can you deſire more!' So, finding the ſubject ungrateful, I deſiſted.

I then gave each of them a ſilver cann of Madeira, and Youwarkee retired. I ſoon made an excuſe to follow her, to learn if ſhe was pleaſed with what I had done. Says ſhe, 'My 'deareſt, what is come to you? I will 'promiſe you, but for fear of ſurprizing my father, I had diſowned 'you for my huſband.'—'Dear Youwee,' ſays I, 'do you approve my 'dreſs, for this is the Engliſh faſhion?' —'This, Peter,' ſays ſhe, 'I perceived 'attracted all eyes to you, and indeed is 'very ſhowy, and I approve it in regard to thoſe we are now to pleaſe; 'but you are not to imagine I eſteem 'you more in this than your own old 'jacket; for it is Peter I love, in this 'and all things elſe: but ſtep in again, 'I ſhall only dreſs, and come to you.'

My wife being dreſſed in her Engliſh gown, juſt croſſed the room where my father ſat, to ſee Dicky, who was in another ſide-room. I was then ſitting by, and talking with him. 'Son,' ſays my father, 'I underſtood you had 'no other woman in this arkoe but 'my daughter; for ſurely you have 'no child ſo tall as that,' pointing to my wife. 'No, Sir,' ſaid I, 'that is a 'friend.'—'Is ſhe come to you,' ſays he, 'in my daughter's abſence?'—'O 'Sir,' ſays I, 'ſhe is very well known 'to my wife.'

Whilſt we were talking, in comes Youwarkee, with the child in her arms, which ſhe kept covered to her wriſts with her gown-ſleeve, to hide her graundee; and playing with the child, talked only in Engliſh to it. 'Is this 'your youngeſt ſon?' ſays my father. I told him 'Yes,'—'Pray, Madam,' ſays I, 'bring the child to my father.'—'Madam,' ſays he, 'you have a fine 'baby in your arms; has his mother 'ſeen him ſince ſhe came home?' He ſpeaking this in his own tongue, and Youwarkee looking at me, as if ſhe could not underſtand him, I interpreted it to her. My ſiſter then deſired to ſee the child, but I was forced again to interpret there too. In ſhort, they both talked with my wife near half an hour, but neither of them knew her; till at laſt, ſaying in her own language, 'That is your grand-daddy, my dear 'Dicky!' the old gentleman ſmoaked her out; 'I'll be ſlit,' ſays he, 'if 'that is not Youwarkee!'—'It's im-'poſſible,' ſays Hallycarnie. 'Indeed, 'ſiſter,' ſays Youwarkee, 'you are 'miſtaken!' and my father proteſting he had not the leaſt ſuſpicion of her, till ſhe ſpoke in his tongue, roſe, and kiſſing her and the child, deſired her to appear in that habit during his ſtay.

I aſked Pedro what proviſion had been made for the guards: 'Son,' ſays my father, 'I bring not this number 'of people to eat you up; they have 'their ſubſiſtence with them;' and he would by no means ſuffer me to allow them any. I then deſired to know if there were any officers or others to whom he would have ſhewn any particular marks of diſtinction. 'Son,' ſays the old glumm, 'you ſeem to have 'ſtudied punctilios; and though I 'ſhould be ſorry to incommode you 'for their ſakes, if you could procure 'ſome ſhelter and ſleep-room for about 'twenty of them, who are ſuperiors, 'ten at a time, while the reſt are on 'duty, I ſhould be glad.' I told him I had purpoſely erected a tent, which would with great eaſe accommodate a greater number; and as they were of diſtinction, with his leave I inſiſted upon providing for them; to which, with ſome reluctance, I procured his conſent.

When Pendlehamby was refreſhed, he would go with me to ſee the officers quarters; and ſhewing him my tent, he having never ſeen ſuch a thing before, was going to climb up the out-ſide of it, taking it for earth. 'Hold, Sir,' ſaid I, 'you cannot do ſo!' Then taking him to the front of it, I turned aſide the blue cloth, and deſired him to walk in; at which he ſeemed wonderfully pleaſed, and aſked me how it was made. I

told him in as few words as I could; but he underſtood ſo little of it, that any thing elſe I had ſaid might have done as well. He mightily approved it; and calling the chief officer, I deſired he would command my houſe, and that proviſion ſhould be ſupplied to his quarters daily; at which he heſitating, I aſſured him I had my father's leave for what I offered; whereupon he ſtroked his chin.

I then aſked him if he had any clever fellows under him to ſerve them, and dreſs their proviſions; but he hoped, he ſaid, they were ready-dreſſed, as his men knew little of that matter; but for any other piece of ſervice, as many as I pleaſed ſhould be at my command.

CHAP. III.

THE MANNER OF THEIR DINNER—BELIEVE THE FISH AND FOWL TO BE FRUITS—HEARS HIS BROTHER AND THE COLAMBS ARE COMING—ACCOUNT OF THEIR LYING—PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WANT OF THE GRAUNDEE—THEY VIEW THE ARKOE—SERVANTS HARDER TO PLEASE THAN THEIR MASTERS—REASONS FOR DIFFERENT DRESSES THE SAME DAY.

PENDLEHAMBY having a mind to view my arkoe, took a long walk with Hallycarnie in the wood till dinner-time; and he having before told me, that ſome of his guards always waited on him at meals, I ordered their dinner before his return, ſending a large diſh of cold fowls, cut into joints, into the tent, to be ſpread on clean leaves I had laid on the cheſts, and ſetting a ſufficient quantity of bread and fiſh there alſo, I deſired the officers preſent to refreſh themſelves now; and the reſt, when relieved, ſhould have a freſh ſupply. I ſaw there was an oddity in their countenances, which at firſt I did not comprehend; but preſently turning about to the ſuperior, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'though 'this food may look unuſual to you, 'it is what my iſland affords, and you 'will be better reconciled to it after 'taſting.' So taking a piece of fowl, and dipping it in the ſalt, I eat a bit myſelf, and recommended another to him; who, eating it, they all fell to without farther ſcruple; above all things commending the ſalt, as what they had never taſted the like of before, though they thought they had both of the fiſh and fowl.

I then told them where my ſupply of water came from, and that they muſt furniſh themſelves with that by their own men.

Upon the return of my father and ſiſter, the gripſack ſounded for dinner; when four officers on duty entering, deſired, as their poſts, to have the ſerving up of the diſhes; one of them I perceived having ſet on the firſt diſh, never ſtirred from behind Pendlehamby; but upon his leaſt word or ſign, ordered the others what to do or bring, which he only preſented to my father; and he frequently gave him a piece from his own plate; but the other officers ſerved at the table promiſcuouſly.

After dinner I brought in a bowl of punch; when begging leave to proceed in my country method, I drank to my father's health. 'So, daughter,' ſays he, to my wife, 'we are at the old 'game again.—Son,' ſays he, 'this 'is no novelty to me,' Youwarkee conſtantly drinking to the health of her dear Peter, and the children at Graundevolet, and obliging us to pledge her, as ſhe called it: but I thank you, and will return your civility; ſo taking a glaſs, 'Son and daughter,' ſays he, 'long life, love and unity, attend you 'and my grand-children!' Youwarkee and I both riſing till he had done, returned him our thanks.

When we had ſat ſome time, 'Son,' ſays my father, 'you and your wife 'having lived ſo retired, I fear my 'company and attendants muſt put 'you to an inconvenience; now, as my 'ſon intends you a viſit alſo, in com-'pany with ſeveral of my brother co-'lambs, if we ſhall be too great a load 'upon you, declare it, for they will 'be at Battrindrigg arkoe to-morrow, 'to know whether it will be agreeable 'for them to proceed.

'You know, ſon,' ſays my father, 'the mouth is a great devourer, and 'that the ſtock your family cannot con-'ſume in a year, by multiplying their 'numbers, may be reduced in a day: 'now freely let me know (for you ſay

'you

'you provided for us) how your ſtock 'ſtands; that you may not only pleaſure 'us, but we not injure you.'

I told him, as for dried fiſh I had a vaſt quantity, and that my fowls were ſo numerous I knew not my ſtock; as to bread, I had a great deal, and might have almoſt what more I would; and then for freſh fiſh, the whole province of Arndrumnſtake could not ſoon devour them; but for my pickles and preſerves, I had neither ſuch large quantities, nor conveniences to beſtow them if I had.

'If this be the caſe, ſon,' ſays my father, 'I may ſend your brother word 'to proceed;' and diſpatched ten meſſengers with a gripſack to haſten his ſon's arrival.

It now began to be time for reſt, and the old gentleman growing pretty mellow with the punch, which, by the heavy pulls he took at it, I perceived was no diſagreeable entertainment to him, I conducted him to his repoſe; and diſpoſing of the reſt of the family, Youwarkee and I with great impatience retired.

You may imagine I was ſincerely glad to find myſelf once more along with my Youwarkee; when, after a tranſport of mutual endearments, I deſired to know how Pendlehamby firſt received her; which ſhe told me, with every circumſtance, in ſo affecting a manner, that the tears forced paſſage from mine eyes in perfect ſtreams; and I loved the dear man ever after as my own father.

She told me Tommy was in great favour at court before her brother returned from me; but ever ſince I ſent him the flagellet he had been careſſed above meaſure, and would ſoon be a great man: that Hallycarnie was a conſtant attendant on Jahamel both in her diverſions and retirement; and, ſhe did not doubt, would in time marry very well: as for Patty, ſhe ſaid her father intended, with my leave, to adopt her as his own child.

My wife ſlept very ſound after her journey; but my hurry of ſpirits denying me that refreſhment, I never ſo much as now lamented the want of the graundee: 'For,' thinks I, 'now I 'have once again taſted the ſweets of 'ſociety, how ſhall I ever reliſh a total 'deſertion of it, which in a few days 'muſt be the caſe, when all this com-'pany are fled, and myſelf am reduced 'to my old jacket and water-cart 'again! Now, if I was as others here 'are, I might make a better figure 'than they by my ſuperior knowledge 'of things, and have the world my 'own; nay, I would fly to my own 'country, or to ſome other part of 'the world, where even the ſtrange-'neſs of my appearance would pro-'cure me a good ſubſiſtence.—But,' ſays I, 'if with my graundee I ſhould 'loſe my ſight, or only be able to live 'in the dark in England, why I ſhould 'be full as bad as I am here! for 'nobody would be able to keep me 'company abroad, as my hours for 'the air would be theirs of retirement; 'and then, at home, it would be much 'the ſame; no one would prefer my 'company in a dark room in the day-'time, when they could enjoy others 'in the light of the ſun; then how 'ſhould I be the better for the graun-'dee, unleſs I fixed a reſolution of 'living here, or hereabouts? and then 'to get into company, I muſt retire 'to ſtill darker regions, which my eyes 'are no ways adapted to: in ſhort, I 'muſt be quite new-moulded, new-'made, and new-born too, before I 'can attain my deſires. Therefore, 'Peter,' ſays I, 'be content; you 'have been happy here in your wife 'and children without theſe things; 'then never make yourſelf ſo wretched 'as to hope for a change which can 'never poſſibly happen, and which, 'perhaps, if obtained, might undo 'you; but intend only what you can 'compaſs, by weighing all circum-'ſtances, and your felicity will lie in 'very narrow bounds, free from two 'of the greateſt evils a man can be 'beſet by, hopes and fears; two in-'ſeparable companions, and deadly 'enemies to peace: for a man is de-'ſtroyed by hope through fear of diſ-'appointment.' This brought me a ſhew of peace again: 'Surely,' ſays I, 'I am one of the moſt unaccountable 'amongſt mankind! I never can re-'flect till I am worn down with vex-'ation.—O Glanlipze! Glanlipze!' ſays I, 'I ſhall never forget thy ſpeech 'after engaging the crocodile, that 'every thing was to be attained by re-'ſolution by him that takes both ends 'of a thing in his view at once, and 'fairly deliberates what may be given

'and

'and taken from end to end. Surely,' says I, 'this ought to be engraven on 'brass, as I wish it was on my heart, 'it would prevent me many painful 'hours, help me with more ease to 'compass attainable ends, and to rest 'contented under difficulties insuper-'able: and if I live to rise again, I 'will place it where it shall never be 'more out of my sight, and will en-'force it not only more and more on 'myself, but on my children.'

With this thought I dropped to sleep, and with this I awaked again, and the first thing I did was to find a proper place to write it, which, having fixed for the door of my cupboard, I took a burnt stick for my pencil, and wrote as follows—'He that is resolved to 'overcome, must have both ends of an 'object in view at once, and fairly 'deliberate what may be given and 'taken from end to end; and then 'pursue the dictates of cool reason.' This I wrote in English, and then in the Doorpt Swangeantine tongue; and having read it twice or thrice over, I went for water and fish, and returned before the family were up.

I took care to-day also, that the officers should be as well served as possible, and where an accommodation must be wanting, I rather chose to let it fall on my father than on them; for I had ever observed it to be an easier thing to satisfy the master than the man; as the master weighs circumstances, and, from a natural complacency in himself, puts a humane construction upon that error or omission which the servant wholly attributes to slight and neglect.

My company being abroad, about the time I expected their return, I dressed myself as the day before, only without my cloak, and in a black bob-wig, and took a turn to meet them.

Pendlehamby spying me first among the trees, 'Daughter Youwarkee,' says he, 'you have an husband, I think, for 'every day in the week. Who's this, 'my son Peter? Why, he is not the 'same man he was yesterday.' She told him she had heard me say we changed our apparel almost every day in England; nay, sometimes twice or thrice the same day. 'What!' says Pendlehamby, 'are they so mischievous there 'they are fearful of being known in 'the latter by those who saw them in 'the former part of the day?'

By this time I was come up, and after paying due compliments, says Youwarkee, 'My father did not know 'you, my dear, you are so altered in 'your other wig; and I told him in 'your country they not only change 'wigs, but their whole cloathing, two 'or three times a day sometimes.'—'Son,' says my father, 'if it be so, 'I cannot guess at the design of a 'man's making himself unlike him-'self.'—'O, Sir,' says I, 'it is ow-'ing to the different functions he is 'to perform that day: as, suppose, in 'the morning he is to pursue business 'with his inferiors, or meet at our 'coffee-houses to hear and chat over 'the news of the day, he appears in 'a light easy habit proper for dispatch, 'and comes home dirty: then, per-'haps, he is to dine with a friend at 'mid-day, before whom, for respect's 'sake, not chusing to be seen in his 'dirty dress, he puts on something 'handsomer; and, after spending some 'time there, he has, it may be, an 'appointment at court, at play, or with 'his mistress, in all which last cases, 'if he has any thing better than or-'dinary, it is a part of good-breeding 'to appear in that: but if the very 'best was to be used in common, it 'might soon become the worst, and 'not fit for a nice man to stir abroad 'in.'—'The different custom of 'countries you have told me of,' says my father, 'is surprizing: here are 'we born with our cloaths on, which 'always fit, be we ever so small or 'large; nay, are never the worse for 'constant wearing; and you must be 'eternally altering and changing co-'lour, shape, and habit. But,' says he, 'where do they get all these things? 'Does every man make just what he 'likes?'—'No,' says I, 'there are a 'particular set of men whose busi-'ness it is to make for all the rest.'—'What,' says he, 'I suppose their 'tasks make them?'—'No, Sir, they 'are filgays,' says I. 'It is their 'trade, they do it for a livelihood, 'being paid by them they work for. 'A suit of these cloaths,' says I, taking up the flap of my coat, 'will 'cost what we call twelve or fourteen 'pounds in money.'—'I don't un-'derstand you,' says he. 'Why, Sir,' says

ſays I, 'that is as much as will pro-
'vide one moderate man with all the
'neceſſary things of life for two
'months.'—'Then,' ſays he, 'theſe
'nice men muſt be very rich.'—'No,'
'Sir,' ſaid I, 'there you are under a
'miſtake; for if a man, very rich,
'and who is known to be ſo, neglects
'his habit, it is taken to be his choice;
'but one who is not known to be rich,
'and is really not ſo, is, by appearing
'gay ſometimes, thought to be ſo;
'for he comes little abroad, and pinch-
'es miſerably at home, firſt to get
'that gay ſuit, and then acts on the
'ſame part to preſerve it, till ſome
'lucky hit may help him to the means
'of getting another, as it frequently
'happens by a good marriage: for
'though he is but ſeldom ſeen in pub-
'lick, yet always appearing ſo fine
'when he is, the ladies, whoſe fancies
'are frequently more tickled with
'ſhew than ſenſe, admitting him only
'at firſt as a companion, are at laſt,
'if worth any thing, taken in the
'toils he is ever ſpreading for them;
'and, becoming his wife, produce a
'ſtanding fund to make him a rich
'man in reality, which he but per-
'ſonated before.'

Pendlehamby could not well underſtand all I ſaid; and I found by him that all the riches they poſſeſſed were only food and ſlaves; and, as I found afterwards when amongſt them, they know the want of nothing elſe: but I am afraid I have put them upon another way of thinking, though I aimed at what we call civilizing of them.

CHAP. IV.

QUANGROLLART ARRIVES WITH THE COLAMBS — STRAITENED FOR ACCOMMODATION—REMOVE TO THE TENT—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN—PETER RELATES PART OF HIS TRAVELS—DISPUTE ABOUT THE BEAST-FISH SKINS.

SLEEPING longer than uſual, I was awakened next morning by a gripſack from Quangrollart; upon hearing of which I rouzed immediately, thinking they were at my door; but the meſſenger told me they could not be there in what I underſtood by his ſigns to be about two hours; for they have no ſuch meaſure for time as hours; ſo I dreſſed at leiſure, and then went to Youwarkee, and waked her. 'Youwee,' ſays I, 'your brother will 'be here preſently, and I having a 'mind you ſhould appear as my coun-'try-woman, would have you dreſs 'yourſelf.'

We walked down to the level, and but juſt ſaved our diſtance; for the van of them were within the arkoe before we arrived, and with ſuch a train after them as ſeemed to reach the whole length of the arkoe. The regularity and order of their flight was admirable, and the break of the trumpets ſo great, ſounding all the way they came, (for we had not only one ſet of them, but at leaſt thirty, there being ſo many colambs and petty princes in the train, each with fifty attendants) that I wondered how they could bear it. As the principals alighted, which was at leaſt an hundred paces from me, the gripſacks ſtill kept wing, ſounding as long as we ſtaid.

This was a very tedious ceremony; for the guards alighting with their colambs, ranged juſt as Pendlehamby's had done, but reached as far as the eye could ſee. As they moved towards us, Youwarkee and I having ſtood ſtill ſome time, moved ſlowly forward to meet them.

It would have ſurprized you to have ſeen the deference they paid us; and I believe the guards took us for ſomething above the mortal race. Youwarkee ſhewed no part of her graundee, having on ſleeves down to her wriſts, white ſilk ſtockings, and red-heeled ſhoes; ſo that none of them knew her for one of them.

The firſt that we met was my brother, to whom we had only an opportunity of paying our compliments *en paſſant*, before another grandee came up, who was ſucceeded by another and another, to the number of thirty; ſome out of reſpect to my father and brother, and ſome out of mere curioſity to ſee me; and as faſt as each had paid his ſalutes, he paſſed us, till we found we had no more to meet; when we turned about, and fell in with the company.

When we came to the grotto, I was very much put to it for room, we ſcarce being able to ſtand upright by

each other, much leſs to ſit down; which my father perceiving, 'My dear 'friends,' ſays he, 'had my ſon known 'in time of ſo much good company, 'he would have been better provided 'with ſeats for us all; but, conſider-'ing all we ſee is the labour only of 'his own hands, we ſhould rather ad-'mire at the many conveniences we 'ſee here, than be uneaſy there are no 'more.—And, ſon,' ſays he, 'as we 'are now ſo large a body, I propoſe 'that we adjourn to the officers quar-'ters, and let them take ours.' I returned my father thanks for the hint, and led the way, the reſt following; where we found room enough, and to ſpare.

Though Youwarkee was with us all dinner-time helping the gueſts, we had no ſooner done, 'But,' ſays Quangrollart, aloud, 'brother Peter, are we 'not to ſee my ſiſter?' I not hearing perfectly what he ſaid, though I perceived he ſpoke to me, 'Sir!' ſays I. 'My ſiſter Youwarkee!' ſays he, 'why 'won't ſhe appear? Here are ſeveral 'of her good friends, as well as my-'ſelf, will be glad to ſee her.' My father then laughed ſo heartily, that the reſt taking notice of it, my poor brother was put to the bluſh. 'Son,' ſays my father, 'don't you know your 'own ſiſter?'—'We have not ſeen her 'yet,' ſays one of the colambs, 'or 'any lady but your daughter Hally-'carnie and that attendant.' My brother then ſeeing how it was, came up to ſalute my wife; but even then had his ſcruples, till he ſaw her ſmile, and then begged pardon for his overſight, as did all the colambs upon ſaluting her: my brother declaring, that as ſhe was ſomewhat behind me on the level, he had only paid her the reſpect of his chin, taking her for ſome one attending me. The colamb following my brother, aſſured her the little regard ſhewn her by Quangrollart, who he thought ſhould know beſt where to beſtow his reſpects, was the reaſon of his taking no more notice of her; and each confeſſing his miſtake aroſe from too nearly copying the ſteps of his immediate predeceſſor, they all made excuſe, and the miſtake made us very merry, till they propoſed taking a turn in the woods, it being a great novelty to them, they ſaid; but I begged they would leave me behind to prepare for their return.

Having refreſhed themſelves after they came home, Quangrollart (being put upon it by ſome of the colambs) told me I could not render a more acceptable favour to the whole company than to relate to them an account of my adventures: 'For though,' ſays he, 'I told them laſt night what I re-'membered to have heard from you, 'yet the variety was ſo great I could 'not deliver the facts in order as I 'heard them, but was obliged to take 'here a piece, and there another, as 'they occurred to me, making rather 'ſeveral ſtories of it than a continued 'ſeries of facts.'

All the colambs immediately ſeconded the motion, and deſired me to begin. I then ordering a clear table and a bowl of punch, and having drank all the company's healths, began my narration, hoping to have finiſhed it before bed-time; but they preſſing me to be very particular, and frequently one or other requiring explanations upon particular facts, and then one making a remark upon ſomething, which another anſwered, and a third replied to, they got the talk out of my hands ſo long, that having loſt themſelves in the argument, and forgot what I ſaid laſt, they begged my pardon, and deſired me to go on; when one, who in contemplation of one fact had loſt beſt part of another, prayed me to go on from ſuch an incident, and another from one before that; ſo that I was frequently obliged to begin half-way back again. This method not only ſpun out my ſtory to a very great length; but, inſtead of it's being finiſhed that evening, as I had purpoſed, it was ſcarce well begun before bed-time drew on: ſo I juſt having brought them to Angola, told them, as it grew late, if they pleaſed, I would finiſh the remainder next night, which they agreed to.

Quangrollart then aſked my father if he had been fiſhing ſince he came; but he told him he knew not what he meant. Then all the company deſired I would ſhew them what that was. I told them they might command me as they pleaſed; ſo we appointed the next morning for that exerciſe. 'But, gen-'tlemen,' ſays I, 'your lodging to-

'night

'night gives me the greateſt pain; for 'I know not what I ſhall do about 'that. I have a few beaſt-fiſh ſkins, 'which are very ſoft and hairy, but 'not a ſufficiency for ſo many friends 'as I would at preſent be proud to 'oblige: but I can lay them as far as 'they will go upon as much dry reeds 'and graſs as you pleaſe.' I then ſent a ſervant to Youwarkee for the ſkins; after which, they one and all crying out if they had but good dry reeds they deſired no better lodging, I diſpatched hands to bring away a large parcel of them to the tent, which they did in a trice. Then waiting on thoſe few who lay at the grotto to their quarters, and having ſent Youwarkee to her ſiſter, I returned to the tent to take up my own lodging with thoſe I had left there.

I had not yet entered the tent, when I heard a perfect tumult within, every one talking ſo loud, and all together, that I verily thought they had fallen out, and were going to handy-cuffs; however, I reſolved to go in amongſt them, and try to compoſe their difference; when juſt entering, and they ſpying me, ſeveral ran to me, with each a ſkin in his hand, the reſt following as faſt as they could. 'Gen-'tlemen,' ſays I, 'I hoped to have 'found you all at reſt.'—'So we 'ſhould have been,' ſays one of them, 'but for theſe, what you call 'ems.'—'It is my unſpeakable misfortune,' ſays I, 'that I have no more at your 'ſervice, and am ſorry I ſhould cauſe 'them to be brought, ſince each of 'you cannot have one.' Says one of them, 'I don't want one, I have ſeen 'enough of it.'—'Then, gentlemen,' ſays I, 'it is poſſible there may be ſo 'many more of that colamb's mind, 'that there may be ſufficient for thoſe 'who deſire them.' They neither knew what to make of me, nor I of them, all this while; till an old colamb perceiving our miſtake, 'Mr. 'Peter,' ſays he, 'we have only had 'a diſpute.'—'I am ſorry at my heart 'for it,' ſays I; 'but I perceived you 'were very warm before I entered, 'and am in great hopes of compro-'miſing matters to all your ſatisfac-'tions.'—'I was going,' ſays the ſame colamb, 'to tell you we had a 'diſpute about what theſe things were, 'nothing elſe.' I was then ſtruck on a heap, being quite aſhamed they ſhould think I ſuſpected they had been quarrelling for the ſkins; and how to come off I knew not. 'You'll excuſe me, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'for expreſſing a con-'cern that you could not each have 'one to examine into at the ſame time, 'that one of you need not have wait-'ed to make your remarks, till the 'other had done.'—'No occaſion, no 'occaſion for that, Mr. Peter,' ſaid they all together; 'we ſhall have lei-'ſure enough to examine them to-'morrow; but we want to know what 'they are, and where they grow.'—'Gentlemen,' ſays I, 'each of theſe 'is the cloathing of a particular fiſh.'—'And where do they grow?' ſaid they. 'In the lake,' ſays I; 'they are a liv-'ing creature, who inhabit that great 'water; I often catch them when I am 'fiſhing; the ſame exerciſe we ſhall go 'upon to-morrow.'

I had much ado to perſuade them they did not grow on trees, which I was then much more ſurprized at than ſome time after, that I returned their viſit; but having ſatisfied them, and given them ſome poſſible hopes they might ſee one alive next day, they were very well contented, and we all lay down to reſt.

CHAP. V.

GO A FISHING—CATCH A BEAST-FISH—AFRAID OF THE GUN—HOW PETER ALTERED HIS NET—FISH-DINNER FOR THE GUARDS—METHOD OF DRESSING AND EATING IT.

I Appeared before them, in the morning, in my old jacket, and an old hat with brims indented almoſt to the crown, a flannel night-cap, and chequered ſhirt. 'How now, ſon!' ſays my father, 'what have we here?'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'this will ſhew you the 'uſe of our Engliſh faſhion I mentioned 'the other day, and the neceſſity of 'it. You ſee me in this indifferent 'habit, becauſe my next buſineſs re-'quires it; but when I come back, 'and have no farther dirty work to 'do, I ſhall then dreſs, as near as I 'can, to qualify me for your com-'pany.'

'Are you for moving gentlemen?' ſays my brother; 'I believe it is time:' they then all ariſing, we went to the lake; where getting into my boat, and telling them, that any ſix of them might go with me, they never having ſeen ſuch a thing before, and not much liking the looks of it, all made excuſes; till my brother, aſſuring them it was very ſafe, and that he had ſailed in it the laſt trip, three or four of them, with my father, and Hallycarnie, who was very deſirous of ſeeing me fiſh, got in; and we ſailed a great way up the lake, taking my gun as uſual with me.

It gave me exceeding delight, to ſee the whole body of the people then in the arkoe on the graundee; ſome hovering over our heads, and talking with us; others flying this way, others that, till I had pitched upon a ſpot to begin my operation; when rowing to ſhore, and quitting my boat, the whole body of people ſettled juſt by me, ſtaring at me and my net, and wondering what I was doing. I then taking a ſweep as uſual, got ſome of the ſoldiers to aſſiſt me to ſhore with it; but when the cod of the net landed, and the fiſh began to daſh with their tails at the water's edge, away ran all my ſoldiers, frighted out of their wits to think what was coming: but it being a large hale, and a ſhelving bank, I could not lift it to the level myſelf; which my brother, who had ſeen the ſport before, perceiving, though not one of the reſt ſtirred, lent me a hand, and we got it up.

You cannot imagine what ſurprize appeared in every face upon opening the net, and ſeeing all the fiſh naked: they drew up by degrees cloſer and cloſer, for I let the fiſh lie ſome time for their obſervation; but ſeeing the large fiſh, upon my handling them, flap their tails, they very expeditiouſly retired again. I then toſſed ſeveral of them into the boat; but two of them being very large, and rough-ſcaled ugly fiſh, I did not think I could lift them myſelf, ſo deſired aſſiſtance, but nobody ſtirred; I expected ſome of the colambs would have ordered their men to have helped me, but they were ſo terrified with ſeeing me handle them, that they could not have the conſcience to order their men on ſo ſevere a duty, till a common man came to me, and taking the tail, and I the head, we toſſed them both into the boat.

I went higher up the lake than uſual, in hopes of a beaſt-fiſh to ſhew them; but, though I could not meet with one, I had ſeveral very great hawls, and took three or four of my lobſters, very large ones. This was the ſecond trial I had made of my net ſince I had altered it, and gave me great ſatisfaction, for I could now take as many fiſh at one draught as I could before have done at ten; I had found, that though my net was very long, yet for want of a bag, or cod to incloſe the fiſh, many that were included within it's compaſs would, whilſt I drew round, ſwim to the extremes, and ſo get out, for want of ſome inlet to enter at; for which reaſon I ſawed off the top of a tree at about ten feet from the ground, and drawing a circle of ſix feet diameter round the tree, on the ground, I ſtuck it round with ſmall pegs, at two inches diſtance; then I drove the like number of nails round the top of the trunk of the tree, and ſtraining a length of mat-line from each peg on the ground to a correſpondent nail on the tree, I tied my mat-line in circles round the ſtrained lines, from top to bottom, about two inches diſtance at the bottom, but at a leſs diſtance where the ſtrained lines grew nearer to each other towards the top; and having ſecured all the ends, by ſome line twiſted round them, I cut a hole in the middle of my net, and tied the large ground-end over the hole in the net, and gathered the ſmall end up in a purſe, tying it up tight; and by this means I now ſcarce loſt any fiſh which once were within the ſweep of my net.

Having had ſo good ſucceſs, I had a deſign of returning, but thought, as I could now ſo eaſily entertain a multitude, I might as well take another hawl or two, and make an handſome treat for the ſoldiery; then coming up to my drill's mouth, I fixed my implements for a draught there, and beginning to draw up, I found great reſiſtance in the net, and got two or three to help me; but, coming near ſhore, when the company ſaw the net tumble and roll, and riſe and fall, they all ran as if they were mad, till I called them, and told the colambs it was only one of the fiſh whoſe ſkins I had ſhewn them; upon which, by that time I had

diſcharged

diſcharged the fiſh from the net, they were all round me again: but no ſooner had he got looſe, than up he roſe, whirled his wings, and at the ſame inſtant uttered ſuch a groan that my whole company retreated again, thinking me ſomewhat more than a man, who could face ſo dreadful an enemy. I entreated them to come and view it; but finding no arguments could bring them nearer, I edged round till I got him between me and the water, and ſhot him dead.

Upon the report of my gun, the whole field was in the air, darting and ſcreaming, as I have often ſeen a flight of rooks do on the ſame occaſion; and I am apt to believe ſome of them never returned again, but went directly home.

I was a little concerned to ſee the confuſion I had cauſed; and laying down my gun, my brother, who though at a diſtance when I ſhot, knowing what I was at, and coming up to me, it put the reſt upon their conſideration; and they alighted one by one, at a diſtance, till they were all on the level again.

My father and the colambs, who were the firſt that durſt approach, wondered what I had done, and how the fiſh came to be dead, and whence ſo much fire and ſmoak proceeded, for they were ſure I brought none with me, and aſked me abundance of queſtions; but as I knew I muſt have occaſion for anſwering to the ſame thing twenty times over, had I entered upon an explanation there, I deferred giving them ſatisfaction till we came home; when all at once might be capable of hearing what was ſaid. So I told them the moſt neceſſary thing at preſent was to ſtow the fiſh in the boat; for it was the largeſt I had ever taken, and I could not wholly do it myſelf. I made ſeveral efforts for help, but in vain, till the ſame ſoldier who had helped me with one of the firſt fiſh, came to my relief, and, deſiring my orders what to do, aſſiſted me; and the reſt ſeeing the difficulty we both had to manage it, one or two more of them came up, and we ſhipped it on board.

I then called the colambs to me, telling them I was ſorry I had given ſuch a general diſturbance to them, by ſhooting the fiſh; but, as they kept at too great a diſtance from me to have notice of my deſign, and if I had followed them, the fiſh might have eſcaped before my return, I was obliged to do as I did, which was without any poſſibility of hurting them. But, as I had given them ſuch a fright, I hoped they would this one day give me an opportunity of complimenting their guards with a fiſh-dinner, if we could any way contrive to dreſs it; for whoever did that muſt be able to bear the cloſe light of a large fire. They all ſhook their heads but my brother, who told me he had in his retinue ſix men from Mount Alkoe, purpoſely retained for their ſtrong ſight, to attend him always to Craſhdoorpt, who, he believed, for the benefit of the reſt, would undertake the cookery, if I would ſhew them how. I deſired he would give them orders to attend me on the other ſide the lake, and I would inſtruct them at my landing; and then I croſſed over with my booty.

Finding the Mount Alkoe men waiting for my landing, I aſked if they could bear the ſight of fire: they told me they were uſed to much greater light and flames than I had ever ſeen, they believed. 'Very good,' ſaid I; 'then 'get into my boat, three of you, and 'hand out that fiſh to the ſhore.' I found they were more afraid of the fiſh than of the fire, for not one of them ſtirred till I got in and toſſed out ſeveral ſmall ones; and then taking up a large one, 'Help me, ſomebody!' ſays I, they looking a little at one another, till one of them venturing to take it, the reſt fell heartily to work, and diſpatched the whole lading preſently. I then laid a ſmall parcel upon my cart, for our own eating and the officers, and ſending them to the grotto, I gave the cooks their charge.

'Now,' ſays I, 'my lads, 'do you 'ſerve all the reſt of the fiſh as I do 'this;' cutting it open at the ſame time, and throwing away the guts; 'and I will ſend each of you ſuch an 'inſtrument as I uſe here,' pointing to my knife. 'I ſhall order ſix large 'heaps of wood to the level, to be 'piled up there: when you have done 'the fiſh, do you ſet fire to the heaps, 'and let them burn till the flame is 'over and the coals are clear; then 'lay on your fiſh, and if any are too 'large to be manageable, cut them in 'proper pieces, and with ſticks, which 'I will ſend you, turn them over and

'over, walking round the fire, and 'with the forked end of the ſtick toſs 'the leaſt off firſt, and afterwards the 'greater; but be ſure throw the fiſh 'as far as ever you can from the fire, 'amongſt the men, that they may not 'be obliged to come too near it: and 'in this manner go on, till either they 'have enough, or your fiſh are gone; 'and when you have done, come to 'the grotto for your reward.'

I then ſet abundance of hands to work to carry wood, to be laid in ſix heaps, two hundred paces from each other, and told them how to pile it. I then prepared ſix long taper ſticks with forked ends, and ordered more hands to divide the fiſh equally to the piles. I ſent others with ſalt and bread; and I ordered them to let me know when all was ready.

While theſe preparations were making, my tent-viſitors had all dined, and my cart had returned with the beaſt-fiſh, which the company deſired might be brought in; when every one paſſed his judgment upon it, and a long diſſertation we had on the marvellous works of Collwar. I let them go on with their ſhew, though I could have diſproved moſt of their concluſions from the little knowledge I had of things; but I never was knight-errant enough to oppoſe my ſentiments to a multitude already prepoſſeſſed on the other ſide of the queſtion; for this reaſon, becauſe I have ever obſerved that where ſeveral have imbibed the ſame ridiculous principle in infancy, they never want arguments, though ever ſo ridiculous, to ſupport it; and, as no one of them can deſert it without impeaching the judgment of the reſt, they encourage each other in their obſtinacy, and quite out-vote a ſingle perſon; and then, the laugh beginning on the ſtrongeſt ſide, nothing is ſo difficult as to get it out of their hands; but when a ſingle man in the wrong hears a juſt argument from a ſingle antagoniſt which he cannot contradict, he imbibes it's force, and whilſt that laſts, as nothing but a better argument, with better reaſons, can remove it, he from thenceforth adopts his adverſary's reaſons for his own, to oppoſe againſt his own former opinion.

In the height of our diſputations on the beaſt-fiſh, came news that the broil was going to begin; and, as I expected very good diverſion at it, I invited the company to go ſee it, telling them, in my opinion, it would exceed the ſport in taking them. We paſſed through the wood till we came amongſt the ſhrubs, where I placed them to be out of harm's way; and the fire, which was now nothing but cinders, was of no inconvenience to them. They were pleaſed with it to perfection; for, firſt, the ſix men who walked round the fires, by the glowing light of the embers, and the ſhining of their graundees, looked like men on fire; then, to ſee each fire ſurrounded with a circle of men at the diameter of near two hundred paces, as cloſe as they could well ſtand, by a more diſtant ſhine of the fire, had a very pleaſing effect; but, when the broilers began to throw the fiſh about, (for each man ſtood with ſome ſalt and a cut of bread in his hand) to ſee a body of an hundred men running for it, and whilſt they were ſtooping and ſcrambling for that, to ſee a hot fiſh fall on the back of one, which was whipped off by another, who, ſcalding his mouth with it, threw it in the face of a third; when a fourth, fifth, and ſixth, pulling it in pieces, ran away with it: and to ſee the different poſtures, courſes, and groupes, during this exerciſe and running-feaſt, was the moſt agreeable farce my gueſts had ever ſeen in their lives; and, to the great ſaving of my liquors, kept us in the wood for full three hours, not a ſoul ſtirring till the feaſt was over.

We ſpent beſt part of this evening in diſcourſe on the paſſages of the day, the reflections on which not being concluded till bed-time, my adventures were poſtponed till the next night; but we had firſt concluded upon a ſhooting for the next morning, (for they were all extremely deſirous of knowing how I did it) at a time they ſhould have opportunity of ſeeing me and making remarks; and I, being unwilling they ſhould think me a conjuror, agreed to make them maſters of part of the myſtery of powder and ball.

CHAP. VI.

A SHOOTING PROPOSED—ALL AFRAID OF THE GUN BUT ONE PRIVATE GUARD—HIS BEHAVIOUR—

VIOUR—PENDLEHAMBY, AT PETER'S REQUEST, MAKES HIM A GENERAL—PETER'S DISCOURSE THEREON—REMAINDER OF HIS STORY — THE COLAMBS RETURN.

THIS being the fifth morning, I cleaned up my beſt gun, and prepared my balls, and we all took a walk towards the bridge, every one admiring my gun as we went; but I could get none of them to carry it, and we had at leaſt five hundred queſtions propoſed about it. I told them they need not be afraid of it, for it was only wood and iron, but they knew nothing of iron. I then ſhewed them how I made it give fire, by ſnapping the cock; they thought it was very ſtrange. I then put a little powder in the pan, and made it flaſh, and ſhewing them the empty pan, they would not be perſuaded but I had taken away the powder before the flaſh, or elſe, they ſaid, it was impoſſible that ſhould be all gone upon flaſhing only; for they ſaid it was a little nut, uſing the ſame word to expreſs both nut and ſeed. I then deſired one of them to put in ſome powder, and ſnap it himſelf; but having prevailed with him to try the experiment, if I had not through caution held my hand upon the barrel, the gun had been on the ground, for the moment it flaſhed, he let go and ran for it.

I had a great inclination to gain the better of their prejudices, and uſed abundance of arguments to prove the gun as innocent a thing as a twig I took up; and that it was the powder which, when ſet on fire, the flame thereof wanting more room than the powder itſelf did, forced itſelf, and all that oppoſed it, out of the mouth of the gun with ſuch fury as to make the noiſe they heard; and being juſt come to the rock, 'Now,' ſays I, 'you 'ſhall ſee that what I tell you is true.' They told me they deſired nothing more than that I would make them underſtand it, for it was the ſtrangeſt thing they had ever ſeen. 'Well, then,' ſays I, 'obſerve; I put in this much 'powder only, and with this rag I ſtop 'it down cloſe. Now,' ſays I, 'you 'ſee by the length of this ſtick that 'the rag and powder take up the ſpace 'only of a finger's depth on the inſide 'of the gun.' They ſaw that plainly they ſaid; 'But how could that kill 'any thing?'—'Now look again,' ſays I; 'I put in a little more powder, 'as I did before when I made a flaſh, 'and you ſee there is a little hole from 'this powder through the ſide of the 'gun to the powder within. Do you 'obſerve that this communicates with 'that through this hole?'—'Yes,' they ſaid, they did. 'Now,' ſays I, 'when I put fire to this, it ſets fire to 'that within, which fire turning to 'flame, and wanting room, burſts out 'at the mouth of the gun; and to 'ſhew you with what force it comes 'out, here handle this round ball,' giving them a bullet to handle; 'you 'feel how heavy it is: now, can any 'of you throw this ball as far as that 'rock?' for I ſtood a good hundred paces from it. They told me, 'No.' —'And don't you think,' ſays I, 'that if the force of the fire made by 'this powder can throw this ball to 'that rock, that force muſt be very 'great?' They ſaid, they thought it muſt, but believed it to be impoſſible. 'But,' ſays I, 'if it not only throws 'it to the rock, but beats out a piece 'of the ſtone, muſt not that be much 'more violent?' They agreed it muſt. Then putting in the ball, 'Now,' ſays I, 'we will try.' I then ordered one to daub a part of the rock, about breaſt high, with ſome mud, and firſt to obſerve about it, if the rock was any where freſh broken or not; who, returning, reported that the rock was all of a colour and ſound, but ſomewhat ragged all about the mud. 'Did 'you lay the mud on ſmooth?' ſays I. He replied, 'Yes.' Then lifting up my gun, I perceived they were creeping off; ſo I took it down again, and calling, reaſoned with them upon their fears. 'What miſchief,' ſays I, 'can 'you apprehend from this gun in my 'hand? Should I be able to hurt you 'with it, are you not all my friends 'or relations, could I be willing to do 'it? If the gun of itſelf could hurt, 'would I handle it as I do? For 'ſhame! be more courageous, rouze 'your reaſon, and ſtand by me; I ſhall 'take care not to hurt you. It looks 'as if you miſtruſted my love to you, 'for this gun can do nothing but what 'I direct it to.'

By ſuch like perſuaſions, rough and ſmooth, I prevailed upon the major part

part of the colambs and officers to ſtand near me to ſee me fire, and then I ſhot; but though my words had engaged them to ſtand it, I had no ſooner ſnapped but the graundees flew all open, though they cloſed again immediately; and then we fell to queſtion and anſwer again. I deſired them to walk to the rock; and ſent the perſon who put up the mark before, to ſee and ſhew us exactly what alteration there was: he told us there was a round hole in the mud, pointing to it, which he did not leave there, and taking away the mud, a thick ſhiver of the rock followed it. They then all agreed, that the ball muſt have made both the hole in the mud and alſo ſplintered the rock; and ſtood in amaze at it, not being able to comprehend it: but, by all the art I had, I could not prevail with a man of them to fire the gun himſelf, till it had been buzzed about a good while, and at laſt came to my ears, that a common ſoldier behind ſaid he ſhould not be afraid of it, if the gentleman would ſhew him how.

I then ordered the fellow to me, and he told me, with a compoſed look, that it had always been his way of thinking, that what he ſaw another do he could do himſelf, and could not reſt till he had tried. 'And, Sir,' ſays he, 'if this gun, as you call it, does 'not hurt you, why ſhould it hurt me? 'And if you can make it hit that 'rock, why ſhould not I, when you 'have told me how you manage it?' —'Are not you the man that firſt 'helped me up with the large fiſh yeſ-'terday?' ſays I. He told me, he was.

I was prodigiouſly pleaſed with the fellow's ſpirit, 'And,' ſays I, 'my 'friend, if you will, and I live, you 'ſhall hit it before you have done.' I then ſhewed him the ſight of the gun, and how to hold it; and being perfect in that, 'Now,' ſays I, 'ſhut your 'left eye, and obſerve with your right, 'till this knob, and that notch, are 'exactly even with each other and 'the middle of that mark; and when 'they are ſo, pull this bit with your 'fore-finger, holding the gun tight to 'your ſhoulder.' He ſo exactly purſued my directions, that he hit the very middle of the mud; and then, without any emotion, walked up with the gun in his hand, as I had done before; and turning to me, very gravely, 'Sir,' ſays he, 'it is hit.' I told him the beſt markſman on earth could not be ſure of coming ſo near his mark. He ſtroaked his chin, and giving me the gun again, was walking to his place; but I ſtopped him, and ſeeing ſomething ſo modeſt and ſincere in his countenance and behaviour, and ſo generous in his ſpirit, I aſked him to which colamb he belonged. He told me to Colamb Pendlehamby. 'To my father?' ſays I; 'then ſure I ſhall not be denied.'

I took him with me to my father, who was not yet come up to the rock. 'Sir,' ſays I, 'there is a favour I 'would beg of you.'—'Son,' ſays he, 'what is it you can aſk that I can 'refuſe you?' Says I, 'This man 'belongs to your guards; now there 'is ſomething ſo noble and daring in 'his ſpirit, and yet ſo meek and de-'ſerving in his deportment, that if 'you will load me with obligation, it 'is to make him an officer: he is not 'deſerving of ſo ill a ſtation as a pri-'vate man.'

My father looking at me, 'Son,' ſays he, 'there is ſomething to be 'done before he can be qualified for 'what you require.'—'This,' thinks I, 'is a put-off.—Pray, Sir,' ſays I, 'what can a man of courage, ſenſe, 'and a cool temper, want to qualify 'him for what I aſk?'—'Some-'thing,' ſays he, 'which none but 'myſelf can give; and that, at your 'deſire, I will ſupply him with.' Then, my father calling him, 'Laſk 'Naſgig, bonyoe,' ſays he, that is, 'Slave Naſgig, lie down.' Naſgig (for that was his name) immediately fell on his face, with his arms and hands ſtraight by his ſides; when my father, ſetting his left-foot on Naſgig's neck, pronounced theſe words: 'Laſk, I 'give thee life, thou art a filgay!' Then Naſgig, raiſing himſelf on his knees, made obeiſance to my father, and ſtanding up, ſtroaked his chin; and my father taking him by the hand, in token of equality, the ceremony ceaſed.

'Now, ſon,' ſays my father, 'let 'me hear your requeſt?'—'It is only, 'Sir,' ſaid I, 'preferment for the de-'ſerving, equal to his merit.' My father aſked him if he underſtood the duty of a gorpell. He did not reply yes,

yes, but beginning, gave a compendious sort of history of his whole duty; at which, all the colambs were very much surprized, for even his comrades were not apprized, or ever imagined, he knew more of military affairs than themselves. My father then asked him, if he knew how to behave as a cluff; but he made as little difficulty of that as the other, going through the several parts of duty in all the different branches, in peace and war, at home and abroad. 'Son,' says my father, 'it is a mystery to me, you 'should have found out more in an 'hour, than I myself could in half 'an age; for this man was born in 'my palang, of my own lask, and 'has been mine, and my father's, 'these forty years. I shall be glad if 'you will look on the rest of my lasks, 'and give me your opinion; I may 'have more as deserving.' I told him, such as Nasgig were not to be met with very often; and when they were found, ought to be cherished accordingly.

'Sir,' says I, 'nature works upon 'the same sort of materials divers 'ways; on some in sport, and some 'in earnest; and if the necessary qualifications of a great man are impressed on our mass, it is odds but we improve regularly into one, though it may never be publickly known, or even to ourselves, till a proper occasion: for as a curious genius will be most inquisitive after, and is most an end retentive of knowledge, so no man is less ostentatious of it. He covets knowledge, not from the prospect of gain, but merely for it's own sake; the very knowing, being his recompence: and if I may presume to give you a hint, how properly to bestow your favours, let it be on persons like this; for the vain, knowing man, who is always shewing it, as he for the most part labours for it, to shew out with, and procure his rise by it, were it not for the hopes of that, would not think knowledge worth attaining; and as his rise is his aim, if he could invent any more expeditious method than that, he would not pretermit any ill act, that might advance him according to his lust of rising. But the man who aims at perfection, from his natural inclination, must, to attain his end, avoid all ill courses, as 'impediments to that perfection he 'lusts after: and that, by Nasgig's 'worth being so little known, I'll answer for it is his character. And 'this being true, yourself will deduce 'the consequence, which is the fitter 'man to bear place; for with me it is 'a maxim, he that labours after truth 'for truth's sake, (and that he surely 'must who proposes no worldly view 'in it) can't arrive at his ends by false 'methods; but is always the truest 'friend to himself and others, the 'trustiest subject to his lord, and the 'most faithful servant to his God.'

My father then turning to me, 'Son,' says he, 'you have enlightened me more than ever I was before, 'and have put me on a new way of 'thinking; for which I am to return 'you many thanks.' And the whole company doing the same; says my father, 'I lost a brave general officer 'lately, who was destined to the western wars, which are breaking out, 'and have been long debating in my 'mind, to whom I should commit his 'corps; and, but for the hazard of 'the enterprize, I would have now 'given it to Nasgig; but shall be loth 'to lose him so soon after I am acquainted with his worth; so will 'think of some other post nearer my 'person for him, less dangerous, 'though perhaps not so honourable.'

'Great Sir,' says Nasgig, 'I am 'too sensible of the honour already 'done me, to think any post wherein 'I may continue to serve you either 'too mean or too hazardous for me; 'and as valour is no where so conspicuous as in the greatest dangers, I 'shall esteem my blood spent to great 'advantage in any enterprize where 'my duty under your command leads 'me: I therefore the rather humbly 'request this dangerous post, that I 'may either lose my life in your service, or live to see you justified in 'your advancement of me by the 'whole nation. For what can I do, 'or how can I demonstrate my affection to your person and pleasure, 'in an inactive state?'

Here the whole level rang with applause to Nasgig.

My father then giving his hand to Nasgig, in token of friendship, and his

his word for inveſtiture in the command of that vacant poſt, the whole level again reſounded with, 'Long live 'Pendleſhamby, and his ſervant Naſ-'gig!'

This being the laſt day of my company's ſtay, for they had agreed to go homewards next morning, ſome of them moved to return the ſooner, that they might have time to hear out my ſtory. So that our ſtay was very little longer.

In our return home, Naſgig ſingled me out, to return his acknowledgments for my favour; and, viewing my gun, told me, they had no ſuch thing growing in his country. I told him, if he had it, it would do no good without my powder. I then, at his requeſt, deſcribed what I had heard of our method of fighting in battle in Europe; and mentioning our cannon, he ſaid, he ſuppoſed they killed every man they hit. 'No,' ſays I, 'not ſo bad as 'that; ſometimes they hit the fleſh 'only, and that is commonly cured; 'ſometimes break a leg or arm, and 'that may in time be cured, ſome ſo 'well as to be uſeful again, and others 'are cut off, and healed up again; but 'if the ball hits the head or vitals, it 'is commonly mortal.'—'O,' ſays he, 'give me the head or vitals, then; 'no broken limbs for me.'

After dinner, at their requeſt, I went on with my ſtory, at repairing the caſtle, and my eſcape with Glanlipze, and ſo on to the crocodile; when I repeated his ſpeech to me on that account, and told them it had made ſuch an impreſſion upon me that I had endeavoured to make it the leading thought of my mind, and had ſet it down upon one of my doors at the grotto, that it might the oftener be in my ſight when any difficulty aroſe.

One of the colambs begged pardon for interrupting, but told me, though he underſtood what Glanlipze meant, he could not tell how I could ſet what he ſaid down at my grotto, or have it in my ſight; and deſired me to explain that. I would have told my gueſt I took it down in writing, if that would not have puzzled the cauſe more; but, to go the neareſt way I could, I told him, we had a method in my country, of conveying to a man at a great diſtance whatever we have a mind to ſay to him; and in ſuch a manner, that nobody but himſelf would know what we would have him know. And pauſing here a little, to conſider the eaſieſt method of demonſtrating this to their ſenſes, they told me they had gone as far as their conjectures could carry them, but could conclude on nothing ſo probable as ſending it by a meſſenger. I told them, that in part was my way; but my meſſenger ſhould not know the meſſage he carried. That gravelled them quite, and they were unanimous that was what could not be done. By this time I had ſent for a wood-coal, to write with upon my deal-table; and kneeling down to the table, I began to write, 'Honoured 'Sir, I ſend this to gain by your an-'ſwer to it an account of your arrival 'at Arndrumnſtake.' I then called them all to me: 'Now,' ſays I, 'ſup-'poſe I want to know how my father 'gets back to Arndrumnſtake, my way 'is this: I ſet down ſo many words as 'will expreſs my meaning to my fa-'ther, after the manner you ſee on 'this table, and make a little diſtance 'between each word, which is the 'ſame thing as you do in ſpeaking; 'for there, if you run one word into 'another, and don't give each it's pro-'per ſound, who can underſtand you? 'For though you ſpeak what contains 'all the words, yet, without the pro-'per ſound and diſtinction. it is only 'confuſion. Do you underſtand that?' They told me they did. 'Then,' ſays I, 'theſe are the words I would have 'my father know, I being at this 'arkoe, and he at Arndrumnſtake. "Honoured Sir," and ſo I read on; 'here,' ſays I, 'you muſt take us to 'be countrymen, and that he and I 'underſtand both the ſame method. 'Now look, this word, which ends 'where you ſee the gap, ſtands for '*honoured*, and this next for *Sir*, the 'next for *I*; and ſo on; and we both 'uſing the ſame method, and ſeeing 'each other's words, are able to open 'our minds at a diſtance.' I was now in hopes I had done, and was going on with my ſtory; but, ſays one of the colambs, 'Mr. Peter, though this is 'a matter that requires conſideration, 'I plainly ſee how you do it, by agree-'ing that all theſe ſtrokes, put into 'this form, ſhall ſtand for the word 'honoured, and ſo on, as you ſay, 'let who will make them; but have

'not

'not you ſet down there the word 'Arndrumnſtake?'—'Yes,' ſays I. 'Why, then,' ſays he, 'none of your 'countrymen could underſtand what 'that means.'—'No!' ſays I, ſmiling; 'but they could!' Says he, 'You ſay, you agree what ſtrokes 'ſhall ſtand for one word, and what 'for another; but then, how could 'your countryman, who never knew 'what ſtrokes you would ſet down for 'Arndrumnſtake, know that your 'ſtrokes meant that very country? 'for that you could not have agreed 'upon before either of you knew there 'was any ſuch place.'

I was at a loſs, without ſpending more words than I was willing about it, how to anſwer this cloſe reaſoner; and talking of ſyllables and letters would only have perplexed the affair more, ſo I told him the readieſt for diſpatch; that as every word conſiſted of one or more diſtinct ſounds, and as ſome of the ſame ſounds happened in different words, we did not agree ſo much upon making our ſtrokes ſtand for ſeveral words, as for ſeveral ſounds; and thoſe ſounds, more or leſs of them, added together, made the particular words. 'As for example,' ſays I, '*Arn* is one ſound, *drumn* is another 'ſound, and *ſtake* is another; now, 'by our knowing how to ſet down 'theſe ſeveral ſounds by themſelves, 'we can couple them, and apply them 'to the making up any word, in the 'manner we pleaſe; and therefore he, 'by ſeeing thoſe three ſounds together, 'knows I mean *Arndrumnſtake*, and 'can ſpeak it as well, though he ne-'ver heard the whole word ſpoken to-'gether, as if he heard me ſpeak to 'him.'—'I have ſome little notion of 'what you mean,' ſays he, 'but not 'clear enough to expreſs myſelf upon 'it; and ſo, go on! go on! And pray 'what did you do about the reeds?'

I then reſuming my diſcourſe where I left off, compleated my narration that night; but I could perceive the water in my father's eyes, when I came to the account of Youwarkee's fall, and the condition I took her up in.

When I had done, they adjuſted the order of their flight; for avoiding confuſion, one to go ſo long before another, and the junior colambs to go firſt.

In the morning nothing was to be heard but the gripſacks; the men were all ranged in order to go off with their reſpective colambs; and after all compliments paſſed, the junior colamb ariſing, walked half way to the wood, where his gripſack ſtanding to wait for him, preceded him to the level, the next gripſack ſtanding ready to ſound as ſoon as the firſt removed; and this was the ſignal for the ſecond colamb to move; ſo that each colamb was a quarter of a mile before the other.

My father was the laſt but two; but I ſhall never forget his tenderneſs at parting with his daughter and grandchildren, and I may ſay with myſelf too; for by this time he had a high opinion of me. Patty went with my father, ſhe ſo much reſembling my wife, that my father ſaid, he ſhould ſtill have his two daughters in his ſight, having her with him.

At parting, I preſented Naſgig with a broad-ſword; and, ſhewing him the uſe of it, with many expreſſions of gratitude on his part, and reſpect on mine, he took flight after the reſt.

CHAP. VII.

PETER FINDS HIS STORES LOW—SENDS YOUWARKEE TO THE SHIP—RECEIVES AN INVITATION TO GEORIGETTI'S COURT.

FOR the firſt few days after our company had left us, Youwarkee could not forbear a tear now and then for the loſs of her father and ſiſter; but I endeavoured not to ſee it, leſt I ſhould, by perſuading her to the contrary, ſeem to oppoſe what I really thought was a farther token of the ſweetneſs of her diſpoſition; but it wore off by degrees, and having a clear ſtage again, it coſt us ſeveral days to ſettle ourſelves, and put our confuſed affairs in order; and when we had done, we bleſſed ourſelves that we could come and go, and converſe with the pleaſing tenderneſs we had hitherto always done.

She told me, nothing in the world but her concern for ſo tender a father, and the fear of diſpleaſing me if ſhe diſobliged him, ſhould have kept her ſo long from me; for her life had never been ſo ſweet and ſerene as with me and her children; and if ſhe was

to begin it again, and chuſe her ſettlement and company, it ſhould be with me in that arkoe. I told her, though I was entirely of her opinion for avoiding a life of hurry, yet I loved a little company, if for nothing elſe but to advance topicks for diſcourſe, to the exerciſe of our faculties; but I then agreed, it was not from mere judgment I ſpoke, but from fancy. 'But, 'Youwee,' ſays I, 'it will be proper 'for us to ſee what our friends have 'left us, that we don't want before 'the time comes about again.' Then ſhe took her part, and I mine; and having finiſhed, we found they would hold out pretty well, and that the firſt thing to be done, was to get the oil of the beaſt-fiſh.

When we came to examine the brandy and wine, I found they had ſuffered greatly; ſo I told Youwarkee, when ſhe could ſpare time, ſhe ſhould make another flight to the ſhip; 'And,' ſays I, 'pray look at all the ſmall 'caſks of wine or brandy, or be they 'what they will, if they are not above 'half full, or thereabouts, they will 'ſwim, and you may ſend them 'down.' I deſired her to ſend a fire-ſhovel and tongs, deſcribing them to her; 'And there are abundance of 'good ropes between decks, rolled 'up, ſend them,' ſays I, 'and any 'thing elſe you think we want, as 'plates, bowls, and all the cutlaſſes 'and piſtols,' ſays I, 'that hang in 'the room by the cabbin: for I 'would, methinks, have another car-'go, as it may poſſibly be the laſt; for 'the ſhip can't hold for ever.'

Youwarkee, who loved a jaunt to the ſhip mightily, ſat very attentive to what I ſaid, and told me, if I pleaſed, ſhe would go the next day; to which I agreed.

She ſtayed on this trip till I began to be uneaſy for her, being gone almoſt four days, and I was in great fear of ſome accident; but ſhe arrived ſafe, telling me, ſhe had ſent all ſhe could any ways pack up; and any one who had ſeen the arrival of her fleet would have taken it for a good ſhip's cargo, for it coſt me full three weeks to land and draw them up to the grotto: and then we had ſuch a redundancy of things, that we were forced to pile them upon each other, to the top of the room.

It began to draw towards long days again, when one morning, in bed, I heard the gripſack. I waked Youwarkee, and told her of it; and we both got up, and were going to the level, when we met ſix glumms in the wood, with a gripſack before them, coming to the grotto. The trumpeter, it ſeems, had been there before; but the others, who ſeemed to be of a better rank, had not. We ſaluted them, and they us; and Youwarkee knowing one of them, we deſired them to walk to the grotto.

They told us, they came expreſs from Georigetti's palace, with an invitation to me and Youwarkee to ſpend ſome time at his court. I let them know what a misfortune I lay under in not being born with a graundee, ſince Providence had pleaſed to diſpoſe of me in a part of the world where alone it could have been of ſuch infinite ſervice to me; or I ſhould have taken it for the higheſt honour to have laid myſelf at their maſter's feet: and after ſome other diſcourſe, one of them preſſed me to return his maſter my anſwer; for they had but a very little time to ſtay. I told them, they ſaw plainly, by bareing my breaſt to them, that I was under an abſolute incapacity for ſuch a journey, and gratifying the higheſt ambition I could have in the world; for I was pinned down to my arkoe, never more to paſs the barrier of that rock. One of them then aſking, if I ſhould chuſe to go, if it was poſſible to convey me thither, I told him, he could ſcarce have the leaſt doubt, was my ability to perform ſuch a journey equal to my inclination to take it, that I ſhould in the leaſt heſitate at obeying his maſter. 'Sir,' ſays he, 'you make me very happy, in the re-'gard you ſhew my maſter; and I muſt 'beg leave to ſtay another day with 'you.' I told him, they did me great honour; but little thought what it all tended to.

We were very facetious; and they talked of the number of viſitors I had had here; and they mentioned ſeveral facts which had happened, and, amongſt the reſt, that of Naſgig, who they ſaid, ſince his return, had been introduced by Pendlehamby to the king, and was for his great prudence and penetration become Georigetti's great favourite. They told me war was upon the point of

breaking

breaking out, and ſeveral other pieces of news, which, as they did not concern me, I was very eaſy about.

The next morning they deſiring to walk, and view what was moſt remarkable in my arkoe, and above all to ſee me fire my gun, which they had heard ſo much of; I gratified them at a mark, and hit the edge of it, and found them quite ſtaunch, without the leaſt ſtart at the report. I paid them a compliment upon it, and told them how their countrymen had behaved, even at a ſecond firing: 'But,' ſays he, who was the chief ſpokeſman, and knew, I found, as much as I could tell him, 'that ſecond fright was from ſeeing 'death the conſequence of the firſt; 'and though you had then to do moſtly 'with ſoldiers, you muſt not think 'they chuſe death more than others, 'though their duty obliges them to 'ſhun it leſs.'

The ſame perſon then deſired me to ſhew him how to fire the gun; which I did, and believe he might hit the rock ſomewhere or other; but he did not ſeem to admire the ſport, and I having but few balls left, did not recommend the gun to the reſt.

A little before bed-time, the ſtrangers told me, they believed I ſhould ſee Naſgig next morning. I preſently thought there was ſomewhat more than ordinary in this viſit; but could no ways dive to the bottom of it.

Juſt before they went to reſt, they ordered the trumpeter to be early on the rock next morning; and upon the firſt ſight of Naſgig's corps, to ſound notice of it, for us to be ready to receive him.

CHAP. VIII.

NASGIG COMES WITH A GUARD TO FETCH PETER — LONG DEBATE ABOUT HIS GOING — NASGIG'S UNEASINESS AT PETER'S REFUSAL — RELATES A PREDICTION TO HIM, AND PROCEEDINGS THEREON AT GEORIGETTI'S COURT — PETER CONSENTS TO GO — PREPARES A MACHINE FOR THAT PURPOSE.

WE were waked by the trumpet giving notice of Naſgig's coming; I did not care to enquire of the ſtrangers into the particulars of his embaſſy; 'For be it what it will,' thinks I, 'Naſgig is ſo much my friend 'that I can know the motives of it 'from him, and, or I am much de-'ceived, he is too honeſt to impoſe 'upon me.' But I had but little time for thought, for upon our entering the level, we found him and his train, of at leaſt an hundred perſons, juſt alighting before us.

We embraced, and profeſſed the particular pleaſure fortune had done us in once more meeting together. When we arrived at the grotto, he told me he was aſſured I had been informed of the occaſion of his viſit; and that it would be the greateſt honour done to his country that could be imagined. He then laid his hand on my beard, which was now of about five months growth, having never ſhaved it ſince my father went, and told me he was glad to ſee that. 'And are you not ſo to ſee me?' ſays I. 'Yes, ſurely,' ſays he, 'for 'I prize that for your ſake.'—'But,' ſays I, 'pray be open with me, and tell 'me what you mean by my being 'informed of the occaſion of your 'coming?'—'Why,' ſays he, 'of 'Georigetti's meſſage to you; as it 'will be of ſuch infinite ſervice to our 'country: and,' ſays he, 'if you had 'not conſented to it, the meſſengers 'had returned and ſtopped me.'—'True,' ſays I, 'one of the meſſen-'gers told me the king would be glad 'to ſee me; which as I, ſo well as 'he, knew it was impoſſible he ſhould, 'in return to his compliment, I believe 'I might ſay, what a happineſs it would 'be to me if I could wait on him. But 'pray what is your immediate meſ-'ſage; for I hear you are in great 'favour at court, and would never 'have come hither with this retinue 'in ſo much ceremony on a trifling 'account?'

'My dear Peter,' ſays Naſgig, 'know that your fame has reached far 'and near ſince I ſaw you before; and 'our ſtate, though a large and popu-'lous one, and once of mighty power 'and twice it's preſent extent, by the 'revolt of the weſtern part of it, who 'choſe themſelves a king, has been ſo 'miſerably harraſſed by wars, that the 'revolters, who are ever fomenting 'diſcontent and rebellion amongſt us, 'will by the encroachments they daily

'make on us, certainly reduce us at 'laſt to a province under their govern- 'ment; which will render us all ſlaves 'to an uſurped power, ſet up againſt 'our lawful ſovereign. Now theſe 'things were foretold long enough be- 'fore they actually began to be tran- 'ſacted; but all being then at peace, 'and no proſpect of what has ſince 'happened, we looked not out for a 'remedy, till the diſeaſe became ſtub- 'born and incurable.'—'Pray,' ſays I, 'by whom were the things you 'mention foretold?'—'By a very an- 'cient and grave ragan,' ſays he. 'How long ago,' ſays I?—'O, above 'four times the age of the oldeſt man 'living,' ſays he. 'And when did 'he ſay it would happen,' ſays I? 'That,' ſays he, 'was not quite ſo 'clear then.'—But how do you know,' ſays I, 'that he ever ſaid any ſuch 'thing?'—'Why the thing itſelf was 'ſo peculiar,' ſays he, 'and the ra- 'gan delivered it ſo poſitively, that his 'ſucceſſors have ever ſince pronounced 'it twelve times a year publickly, word 'for word, to put the people in mind 'of it, and from whom they muſt hope 'for relief; and now the long expect- 'ed time being come, we have no 'hopes but in your deſtruction of the 'tyrant-uſurper.'—'I deſtroy him!' ſays I: 'if he is not deſtroyed till I do 'it, I fear your ſtate is but in a bad 'caſe.'—'My good friend Peter,' ſays he, 'you or nobody can do it.'— 'Pugh,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, I took you 'for a man of more ſenſe, notwith- 'ſtanding the prejudices of education, 'than to think, becauſe you have ſeen 'me kill a beaſt-fiſh that could not 'come to hurt me, at the diſtance of 'twenty paces, that I can kill your 'uſurper at the diſtance he is from me.' —'No, my good friend,' ſays Naſ- gig, 'I know you take me to have 'more judgment than to think ſo.'— 'Why, what elſe can I do?' ſays I, 'unleſs he will come hither to be kill- 'ed by me.'—'Dear Peter,' ſays he, 'you will not hear me out.'—'I will,' ſays I; 'ſay on.'—'You, as I ſaid 'before, being the only perſon that 'can, according to our prediction, 'deſtroy this uſurper, and reſtore peace 'among us, my maſter Georigetti, 'and the whole ſtate of Normn- 'bdſgrſutt, were going to ſend a ſplen- 'did embaſſy to you; but your father 'adviſing to repoſe the commiſſion 'wholly in me, they all conſented to 'it, and I am come to invite you over 'to Brandleguarp for that purpoſe. 'I know you will tell me you have 'not the graundee, and cannot get 'thither: but I am aſſured you have 'what is far better; the wiſdom you 'have will help you to ſurmount that 'difficulty, which our whole mou- 'cheratt cannot get over. And I am 'ſure did you apply half the thought 'to accompliſh it, you ſeem to do to 'invent excuſes againſt it, you would 'eaſily overcome that. And now, 'dear friend,' continues he, 'refuſe 'me not; for as my firſt riſe was 'owing to your favour, ſo my down- 'fall as abſolutely attends your re- 'fuſal.'

'Dear Naſgig,' ſays I, 'you know 'I love you, and could refuſe you no- 'thing in my power; but for me to 'be mounted in the air, I know not 'how, over theſe rocks, and then 'drowned by a fall into the ſea, which 'is a neceſſary conſequence of ſuch a 'mad attempt; and all this in proſe- 'cution of a project founded upon an 'old wife's tale, is ſuch a chimera as 'all men of ſenſe would laugh at; as 'if there was no way of deſtroying me, 'but with a guard of an hundred men, 'to ſouſe me into the wide ocean. A 'very pretty conqueror of rebels I 'ſhould prove, truly, kicking for life, 'till the next wave ſent me to the 'bottom.'

Naſgig looked then ſo grave, I al- moſt thought I ſhould have heard no more of it; but, after a ſhort pauſe, 'Peter,' ſays he, 'I am ſorry you 'make ſo light of ſacred things; a 'thing foretold ſo long ago by a holy 'ragan, kept up by undoubted tra- 'dition ever ſince, in the manner I have 'told you, in part performed, and now 'waiting your concurrence for it's ac- 'compliſhment: but if I cannot pre- 'vail with you, though I periſh at my 'return, I dread to think you may be 'forced without thanks to perform 'what generouſly to undertake will be 'your greateſt glory.'

'Pray,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, (for now 'I perceive you are in earneſt) what 'may this famous prediction be?'

'Ah, Peter!' ſays Naſgig, 'to what 'purpoſe ſhould I relate ſo ſacred a 'prediction to one who, though the

'moſt

'moſt concerned in it, makes ſuch a 'jeſt of it?'

His mentioning me as concerned in it, raiſed my curioſity once more to deſire a relation of it. 'Why ſhould I 'relate it,' ſays he, 'if you are re-'ſolved not to fulfil it?' I told him I had no reſolution againſt any thing that related to my own good, or that of my friends; 'But the greateſt queſtion with 'me,' ſays I, 'is, whether I am at 'all concerned in it.'—'O clearly, 'clearly!' ſays he, 'there is no doubt 'of it; it muſt mean you or nobody.' I told him I muſt judge by the words of it, that I was the perſon intended by it; and till that was apparent to my reaſon, it would be difficult to procure my conſent to ſo perilous an undertaking. 'And,' ſays he, 'will you 'upon hearing it, judge impartially, 'and go with me if you can take the 'application to yourſelf?'—'I cannot 'go quite ſo far as that,' ſays I; 'but 'this I'll promiſe you, I'll judge impartially, and if I can ſo apply it to 'myſelf, that it muſt neceſſarily mean 'me, and no other, and if you convince 'me I may go ſafely, I will go.'

Naſgig was ſo rejoiced at this, he was at a loſs how to expreſs himſelf. 'My dear Peter,' ſays he, 'you have 'given me new life! our ſtate is free! 'our perſons free! we are free! we are 'free! And, Peter,' ſays he, 'now I 'have given vent to my joy, you ſhall 'hear the prediction.

'You muſt know, this holy ragan 'lived four ages ago; and from cer-'tain dreams and revelations he had 'had, ſet himſelf to overturn our 'country-worſhip of the Great Image; 'and by his ſanctity of life, and ſound 'reaſonings, had almoſt effected it 'under the aſſiſtance of Begſurbeck, 'then our king, who had fully em-'braced his tenets; but the reſt of the 'ragans oppoſing him, and finding he 'could not advance his ſcheme, he 'withdrew from the ragans to a cloſe 'retirement for ſeveral years; and juſt 'before his death, ſending for the king 'and all the ragans, he told them he 'ſhould certainly die that day; and 'that he could not die at peace till he 'had informed them what had been 'revealed to him; deſiring them to 'take notice of it, not as a conjecture 'of his own, but a certain verity 'which ſhould hereafter come to paſs. 'Says he, "You know you have re-"jected the alteration in your religion "I propoſed to you; and which Beg-"ſurbeck, here preſent, would have "advanced; and now I muſt tell you "what you have brought upon your-"ſelves. As for Begſurbeck, he "ſhall reign the longeſt and moſt proſ-"perouſly of all your former and fu-"ture kings; but in twice his time "out-run, the weſt ſhall be divided "from the eaſt, and bring ſorrow, "confuſion, and ſlaughter, till the "waters of the earth ſhall produce a "glumm, with hair round his head, "ſwimming and flying without the "graundee; who, with unknown fire "and ſmoak ſhall deſtroy the traitor "of the weſt, ſettle the ancient limits "of the monarchy, by common con-"ſent eſtabliſh what I would have "taught you, change the name of this "country, introduce new laws and "arts, add kingdoms to this ſtate, "and force tributes from the bowels "of the earth, of ſuch things as this "kingdom ſhall not know till then, "and ſhall never afterwards want; "and then ſhall return to the waters "again. Take care," ſays he, "you "miſs not the opportunity when it "may be had; for once loſt, it ſhall "never, never more return; and then, "woe, woe, woe, to my poor coun-"try!" The ragan having ſaid this, 'expired.

'This prediction made ſo great an 'impreſſion on Begſurbeck, that he 'ordered all the ragans ſingly before 'him, and heard them repeat it; which 'having done, and made himſelf per-'fect in it, he ordered it to be pro-'nounced twelve times in the year on 'particular days, in the moucheratt, 'that the people might learn it by heart; 'that they and their children being per-'fect in it, might not fail of applying 'it, when the man from the waters 'ſhould appear with proper deſcription.

'Thus, Peter,' ſays he, 'has this 'prediction been kept up in our me-'mories as perfectly as if it had but 'juſt been pronounced to us.'

'Tis very true,' ſays I, 'here may 'have been a prediction, and it may 'have been, as you ſay, handed down 'very exactly from Begſurbeck's days 'till now; but how does that affect 'me? how am I concerned in it? 'Surely, if any marks would have de-

'noted

'noted me to be the man, ſome of 'the colambs who have ſo lately left 'me, and were ſo long with me, would 'have found them out in my perſon, 'or among the ſeveral actions of my 'life I recounted to them.'

'Upon the return of the colambs 'from you,' ſays Naſgig, 'they told 'his majeſty what they had heard and 'ſeen at Graundevolet, and the ſtory 'was conveyed through the whole 'realm: but every man has not the 'faculty of diſtinction. Now, one of 'the ragans, when he had heard of 'you, applying you to the prediction, 'and that to you, ſoon found our de-'liverer in you; and at a publick 'moucheratt, after firſt pronouncing 'the prediction, declared himſelf there-'on to the following effect—

"May it pleaſe your majeſty—and "you the honourable colambs—the "reverend ragans—and people of this "ſtate," ſays he—"you all know that "our famous King Begſurbeck, who "reigned at the time of this predic-"tion, did live ſixty years after it in "the greateſt ſplendor, and died at "the age of one hundred and twenty "years, having reigned full ninety "of them; and herein you will all "agree with me, no king before or "ſince has done the like. You all "likewiſe know, that within two hun-"dred years after Begſurbeck's death, "that is, about twice his reign of "ninety years out-run, the rebellion "in the weſt began, which has been "carried on ever ſince; and our "ſtrength diminiſhing as theirs in-"creaſes, we are now no fair match "for them, but are fearful of being "undone. So far you will agree mat-"ters have tallied with the prediction: "and now, to look forward to the "time to come, it becomes us to lay "hold of the preſent opportunity for "our relief; for that, once ſlipped, "will never return; and, if I have "any ſkill in interpretations, now is "the time of our deliverance.

"Our prediction foretells the paſt "evils, their increaſe and continuance, "till the waters of the earth ſhall pro-"duce a glumm. Here I muſt appeal "to the honourable colambs preſent, "if the waters have not done ſo in "the perſon of glumm Peter of "Graundevolet, as they have received "it from his own report."

'All the colambs then riſing, and 'making reverence to the king, de-'clared it was moſt true.

"The next part," ſays the ragan, "is, he is to be hairy round his head; "and how his perſon in this reſpect "agrees with the prediction, I beg "leave to be informed by the co-"lambs."

'The colambs then riſing, declared, 'that having ſeen and converſed with 'him, they could not obſerve any hair 'on the fore-part of his head; but I 'anſwered, that when I left you, I 'well remembered your having ſhort 'ſtubbs of hair upon your cheeks and 'chin; which I had no ſooner men-'tioned, than your father aroſe, and 'told the aſſembly, that though he did 'not mind it whilſt he was with you, 'yet he remembered that his daugh-'ter, a year before, had told him that 'you had hair on your face before as 'long as that behind.

'This again putting new life into 'the ragan, he proceeded—"Then "let this," ſays he, "be put to the "trial by an embaſſy to glumm Pe-"ter; and if it anſwers, there will be "no room to doubt the reſt. Then," 'ſays the ragan, "it is plain by the "report of the colambs, that glumm "Peter has not the graundee.

"As to the next point, he is to "ſwim and fly. Now I am informed "he ſwims daily in a thing he calls a "boat."—To which the colambs all 'agreed. "And now," ſays he, "that he flies too, that muſt be ful-"filled; for every word muſt have a "meaning, and that indeed he muſt "do if ever he comes hither. I there-"fore adviſe, that a contrivance be "ſomehow found out for conveying "glumm Peter through the air to us, "and then we ſhall anſwer that part "of the prediction; and I think, and "do not doubt, but that may be "done.

"Now," ſays he, "let us ſee the "benefit predicted to us upon the ar-"rival of glumm Peter. Our words "are—"Who, with unknown fire and "ſmoak, ſhall deſtroy the traitor of "the weſt."—What can be plainer "than this? For I again appeal to the "colambs for his making unknown "fire and ſmoak.

"Thus far," ſays the ragan, "we "have ſucceeded happily towards a

"diſcovery

" discovery of the perſon; but it ends " not here with the death of the trai- " tor; but ſuch other benefits are to " accrue as are mentioned in the fol- " lowing part of the prediction: they " are bleſſings yet to come; and who " knows the end of them?

" I hope," ſays the ragan, " I have " given ſatisfaction in what I have " ſaid, and ſhall now leave it to the " care of thoſe whoſe buſineſs it is to " provide, that none of thoſe woes pro- " nounced againſt us may happen, by " miſſing the time which, when gone, " will never return."

' The aſſembly were coming to a re- ' ſolution of ſending you a pompous ' embaſſy, but your father prevailed ' for ſending me only; " For," ſays ' he, " my ſon thinks better of him " than of the reſt of our whole race." So ' this important affair was committed to ' me, with orders to prepare a convey- ' ance for you, which I cannot at- ' tempt to do; but ſhall refer myſelf ' to your more ſolid judgment in the ' contrivance of it.'

I had ſat very attentive to Naſgig, and from what he had declared, could not ſay but there was a very great reſemblance between myſelf and the perſon predicted of; ' But, then,' ſays I, ' they are idolaters; Providence would ' not interpoſe in this affair, when all ' the glory of it's ſucceſs muſt redound ' to an idol. But,' ſays I, ' has not ' the ſame thing often happened from ' oracular preſages, where the glory ' muſt redound to the falſe deity? But ' what if, as is predicted, their reli- ' gion is to be changed to the old ra- ' gan's plan, and that will be to the ' abolition of idolatry? I know not ' what to ſay; but if I thought my ' going would gain a ſingle ſoul to the ' eternal Truth, I would not ſcruple to ' hazard my life in the attempt.'

I then called in Youwarkee, told her the whole affair of the prediction, which ſhe had often heard, I found, and could have repeated. I told her that the king and ſtates had pitched on me as the perſon intended by their prediction, and that Naſgig was ſent to fetch me over: ' And, indeed,' ſays I, ' Youwee, if this be a true predic- ' tion, it ſeems very applicable to me as ' far as I can ſee.'—' Yes, truly,' ſays ſhe, ' ſo it does, now I conſider it ' in the light you ſay the ragan puts ' it.'—' Why,' ſays I, ' prophecies ' and predictions are never ſo plain as ' to mention names; but yet, upon ' the ſolution, they become as intelli- ' gible as if they did, the circumſtances ' tallying ſo exactly. But what would ' you have me do? Shall I, or ſhall I ' not, go?'—' Go!' ſays ſhe, ' how ' can you go?'—' O,' ſays I, ' never ' fear that. If this is from above, ' means will ſoon be found; Provi- ' dence never directs effects without ' means.'

Youwarkee, whoſe head ran only on the dangers of the undertaking, had a violent conflict with herſelf; the love of me, of her children, and of her country, divided her ſo, ſhe was not capable of adviſing. I preſſed her opinion again, when ſhe told me to follow the dictates of my own reaſon; ' And, but for the dread of loſing ' you, and for my children's ſakes,' ſays ſhe, ' I ſhould have no choice to ' make when my country is at ſtake: ' but you know beſt.'

I told Youwarkee that I really found the prediction the plainer the more I thought of it; and that, above all, the change of religion was the uppermoſt: ' For if I can reduce a ' ſtate from the miſery and bondage of ' idolatry, to a true ſenſe of the Su- ' preme Being, and ſeemingly by his ' own direction, ſhall I fear to riſque ' my own life for it; or, will he ſuffer ' me to periſh till ſomewhat at leaſt is ' done towards it? And how do I know ' but the whole tendency of my life ' has been by impulſe hither for this ' very purpoſe? My dear Youwee,' ſays I, ' fear nothing, I will go.'

I called Naſgig, and told him my reſolution, and that he had nothing now to do but prepare a means of conveying me. He ſaid, he begged to refer that to me, for my own thoughts would ſuggeſt to me both the ſafeſt and eaſieſt means.

I wanted to venture on the back of ſome ſtrong glumm; when Naſgig told me, no one could endure my weight ſo long a flight. But what charmed me moſt was, the lovely Youwarkee offered to carry me herſelf if ſhe could; ' And if I can't hold out,' ſays ſhe, ' my dear, we can but at laſt drop ' both together.' I kiſſed the charming creature with tears in my eyes, but declined the experiment.

I told

I told Naſgig I wanted to divide my weight between two or four glumms, which I believed I could eaſily do; and aſked if each could hold out with a fourth part of my weight. He told me there was no doubt of that; but he was afraid I ſhould drop between their graundees, he imagining I intended to lie along on their backs, part of me on each of them, or ſhould bear ſo much on them as to prevent their flight. I told him I did not purpoſe to diſpoſe of myſelf in the manner he preſumed, but if two or four could undoubtedly bear my weight ſo long a flight, I would order myſelf without any other inconvenience to my bearers than their burden. He made light of my weight between four, as a trifle, and ſaid, he would be one with all his heart. 'Nay,' ſays I, 'if four 'cannot hold out, can eight?' He plainly told me, as he knew not what I meant, he could ſay nothing to it, nor could imagine how I could divide ſo ſmall a body as mine into eight different weights, for it ſeemed impoſſible, he ſaid, to him; but if I would ſhew him my method, he would then give me his opinion.

I then, leaving him, took out my tools: I pitched upon a ſtrong broad board my wife had ſent me from the ſhip, about twelve feet long, and a foot and half broad; upon the middle of which I nailed down one of my chairs; then I took one cord of about thirty-four feet long, making hand-loops at each end, and nailed it down in the middle to the under ſide of my board, as near as I could to the fore-end of it; and I took another cord of the ſame length and make, and this I nailed within three feet of the farther end of my board. I then took a cord of about twenty feet long, and nailed about three feet before the foremoſt, and a fourth of the ſame length, at the farther end of my board; by which means, the firſt and third ropes being the longeſt, and at ſuch a diſtance from the ſhort ropes, the glumms who held them, would fly ſo much higher and forwarder than the ſhort rope ones, that they and their ropes would be quite out of the others way, which would not have happened if either the ropes had been all of one length, or nearer to or farther from one another: and then conſidering that if I ſhould receive a ſudden jerk or twitch, I might poſſibly be ſhook off my chair, I took a ſmaller rope to tie myſelf with faſt to the chair, and then I was ſure, if I fell into the ſea, I ſhould at leaſt have the board and chair with me, which might poſſibly buoy me up till the glumms could deſcend to my aſſiſtance.

Having carried the machine down to the level with the help of two of Naſgig's men, he being out on a walk, and having never ſeen it, I ordered one of the men to ſit upon the chair, and eight more to hold by the loops, and riſe with him; but, as I found it difficult at their firſt riſing, not being able to mount all equally, to carry the board up even, and the back part riſing firſt, the front pitched againſt the ground, and threw the fellow out of the chair: I therefore bade them ſtop, and ordering eight others to me, ſaid I, 'Hold each of you one of theſe 'ropes as high as you can over your 'heads; then,' ſays I, to the eight bearers, 'mount on your graundees, 'and come round behind him in the 'chair gently, two and two, and take 'each of you a loop, and hover with 'it till you are all ready, and then riſe 'together, keeping your eye on the 'board that it riſes neither higher at 'one end or one ſide than the other; 'and ſee you all feel your weight 'alike; then fly croſs the lake and 'back again.' They did ſo, and with as much eaſe, they told me, as if they had nothing in their hands; and the man rode with ſo much ſtate and compoſure, he ſaid, that I longed to try it myſelf; ſo, ſhifting places with the glumm, I mounted the chair, and tying myſelf round, I aſked if any one knew which way Naſgig walked: one of them pointing to where he ſaw him juſt before in the wood, I ordered them to take me up as before, and go that way.

Upon coming to the place where I expected Naſgig was, I hallooed and called him; who, knowing my voice, ran to the ſkirt of the wood; and ſeeing me mounted in my flying chair, I jokingly told him I was going, if he had any commands; but he mounting immediately came up to me, and viewing me round, and ſeeing the pleaſure the men ſeemed to carry me with, ſays he, 'Are you all ſure you can carry

'him

'him safe to Battringdrigg?' They all replied, 'Yes, with ease.'—'This, 'then,' says he, 'is your doom; if 'you perform it not, every one shall 'be slit; but if you carry the deli-'verer safe, you are filgays every man 'of you!' he verily thinking I was then going off; but I undeceived him, by ordering them to turn about and set me down where I was taken up.

Nasgig alighting, and viewing my contrivance, 'This, Peter,' says he, 'is but a very plain thing.'—'It is 'so,' says I, 'but it is as far as my 'ingenuity could reach.'—'Ah, Pe-'ter!' says he, 'say not so, for if the 'greatest difficulties, as I and all my 'nation thought it would be to convey 'you to them, are so plain and easy to 'you, what must lesser things be? 'No, Peter, I did not call it plain be-'cause it might be easily done when it 'was seen, but in respect to the head 'that formed it; for the nearest way 'to attain one's end is always the 'best, and attended for the most part 'with fewest inconveniences; and I 'verily think, Peter, though we be-'lieve the rise or fall of our state 'wholly depends on you, you must 'have stayed at Graundevolet but for 'your own ingenuity. Well, and 'when shall we set out?' says he. I told him it would take up some time to settle the affairs of my family, and to consider what I had best take with me; and required at least three days, being as little as I could have told him for that purpose.

Nasgig, who as he was an honest man, and for making the best for his patrons, was sorry it was so long, though he imagining at the same time it was short enough for one who was to go on such an enterprize, was glad it was no longer; and immediately dispatched a trumpet express with notice, that on the fourth day he should beat the height of Battringdrigg, and that having myself formed a machine for that purpose, I would accompany him.

I began next to consider what part I had to act at Doorpt Swangeanti, (for I neither could nor would call it by any other name when I came thither) and what it was they expected from me. 'I am,' says I, 'to kill a traitor; 'good, that may be, but then I must 'take a gun and ammunition; and 'why not some pistols and cutlasses? 'If I cannot use them all, I can teach 'others who may: I will take several 'of them, and all my guns but two, 'and I will leave a pair of pistols; I 'may return and want them. I will 'take my two best suits of cloaths, 'and other things suitable; for, if I 'am to perform things according to 'this prediction, it may be a long time 'before I get back again.' Thinks I, 'Youwarkee shall stay here with 'the children, and if I like my settle-'ment I can send for her at any time.' I then began to see the necessity of making at least one more machine to carry my goods on: 'And,' says I, 'as they will be very weighty, I must 'have more lasks to shift in carrying 'them, for I will retain sixteen for my 'own body-machine, in order to re-'lieve each other; and as the distance 'is so great, I will not be stinted for 'want of fresh hands.'

Being come to this resolution, I called Nasgig, and ordered eight-fresh lasks to attend my baggage; these he soon singled out: so, having settled all matters with my wife, and taken leave of her and the children, I charged them not to stir out of the grotto till I was gone; and leaving them all in tears, I set out with a heavy heart for the level, where the whole convoy and my two machines waited for me.

CHAP. IX.

PETER'S SPEECH TO THE SOLDIERY—OFFERS THEM FREEDOM—HIS JOURNEY—IS MET BY THE KING—THE KING SENT BACK, AND WHY—PETER ALIGHTS IN THE KING'S GARDEN—HIS AUDIENCE—DESCRIPTION OF HIS SUPPER AND BED.

WHEN we came to the level, I desired Nasgig to draw all his men into a circle as near as they could stand; I then asked them who would undertake to carry me; when not a man but proffered his service, and desired to have the post of honour, as they called it. I told them my question was only in case of necessity, to know whom I might depend upon, for my bearers were already provided, saving accidents. 'But, my friends,' says I,

'as you are equally deſerving for the 'offered ſervice, as if you were ac-'cepted, are any of you deſirous of 'being filgays?' They all anſwering together, 'I, I, I!'—'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'you and I muſt come to a capitu-'lation before I go, and your honour 'muſt be pledged for performance of 'articles.'

I began with telling them what an enemy I was to ſlavery; 'And,' ſays I, to Naſgig, 'as I am about to undertake 'what no man upon earth ever did be-'fore; to quit my country, my fami-'ly, my every other conveniency of 'life, for I know not what, I know 'not where, and from whence I ſhall 'never return; I muſt be indulged, 'if I am ever ſo fortunate as to arrive 'ſafe in your country, in the ſatis-'faction of ſeeing all theſe my fellow-'travellers as happy as myſelf; for 'which reaſon I muſt inſiſt upon every 'man preſent alighting with me in 'ſafety, being made free the moment 'we touch the ground: and unleſs 'you will engage your honour for 'this, I will not ſtir a ſtep farther.'

Naſgig pauſed for an anſwer; for though my bearers were his own laſks, and he could diſpoſe of them at plea-ſure, yet, as the reſt were the kings, he knew not how far he might venture to promiſe for them; but being deſirous to get me over the rock, fearing I might ſtill retract my purpoſe, he en-gaged to procure their freedom of the king. And this, I thought, would make the men more zealous in my ſer-vice.

I then permitting them to take me up, we were over the rock as quick as thought; and when I had a little ex-perienced the flight, I perceived I had nothing to fear; for they were ſo dex-trous on the graundee, that I received not the leaſt ſhock all the way, or ſcarce a wry poſition, though every quarter of an inch at hand made a con-ſiderable deflection from the perpendi-cular. We ſhifted but twice till we came to Battringdrigg; the manner of which I directed as I ſat in my chair: for I ordered the new man to hover over him he was to relieve, and reaching down his hand to meet the others which were held up with a rope, the old bearer ſunk beneath the chair, and the reliever took his courſe. This we did one by one, till all were chang-ed; but there was one, a ſtout young fellow, at the firſt ſhort rope on my right-hand, who obſerving me to eye him more than the reſt, in a bravado would not be relieved before we arrived at Battringdrigg arkoe; and I afterwards took him into my family.

As it was now ſomewhat advanced into the light ſeaſon, I had hopes of a tolerable good proſpect; but had it been quite light, I ſhould have been never the better for it. I had been upon very high mountains in the inland parts of Africa; but was never too high to ſee what was below me before, though very much contracted; but here, in the higheſt of our flight, you could not diſtinguiſh the globe of the earth but by a ſort of miſt, for every way looked alike to me; then ſometimes on a cue given, from an inexpreſſible height my bearers would dart as it were ſloping like a ſhooting-ſtar, for an in-credible diſtance, almoſt to the very ſurface of the ſea, ſtill keeping me as upright as a Spaniard on my ſeat. I aſked them the reaſon of their ſo vaſt deſcent, when I perceived the labour they had afterwards to attain the ſame height again. They told me, they not only eaſed their graundees by that de-ſcent, but could fly half as far again in a day, as by a direct (they meant horizontal) flight; for though it ſeemed laborious to mount ſo exceſſive high, yet they went on at the ſame time at a great rate; but when they came to de-ſcend again, there was no compariſon in their ſpeed. And, on my con-ſcience, I believe they ſpoke true, for in their deſcents I think no arrow could have reached us.

In about ſixteen hours, for I took my watch with me, we alighted on the height of Battringdrigg; when I thought I had returned to my own ar-koe, it was ſo like it, but much larger. Here we reſted four hours; I opened my cheſt, and gave each of my bearers a drop of brandy. Naſgig and I alſo juſt wetted our mouths, and eat a piece of preſerve to moiſten us; the reſt of the laſks ſitting down, and feeding upon what they had brought with them in their colapets; for their method is, when they take long flights, to carry a number of hard round fruits, flat like my cream-cheeſes, but much leſs, which containing a ſort of flower they eat dry; then drinking, that ſwells, and fills

fills them as much as a good meal of any thing elſe would. Here we met with abundance of delightful pools of water on the vaſt flat of the rocks. They told me, in that arkoe the young glumms and gawreys came in vaſt flights ſeparately, to divert themſelves on the fine lake of waters, and from thence went ſometimes as far as my arkoe, for that purpoſe; but that was but ſeldom.

When we had ſufficiently reſted, they ſhut their colapets, which ſometimes hung down from their necks, and were ſometimes ſwung round to their backs, and croſſing the arkoe and another large ſea, but nothing comparable to the firſt, we arrived in about ſix hours more to the height of the white mountains, which Naſgig told me were the confines of Georigetti's territories; 'But,' thinks I, 'it may belong to 'whom it will for the value of it;' for nothing could be more barren than all the top of it was; but the inſide of it made amends for that, by the prodigious tall and large trees it abounded with, full of the ſtrangeſt kinds of fruits I had ever ſeen; and theſe trees moſt of them ſeemed to grow out of the very ſtone itſelf, not a peck of dirt being to be collected near them. Without-ſide of theſe mountains, it was ſcarce darker than at my arkoe; for I made all the obſervation my time would allow me; when ſpying at a vaſt diſtance ſeveral lights which were unuſual things to me in that country, they told me, the largeſt was the burning mountain Alkoe: this I remembered to have heard the name of upon ſome former occaſion, though I could not recollect what; and that the reſt were of the ſame ſort, but ſmaller. I aſked if they were in Georigetti's territories. They ſaid no, they belonged to another king formerly, whoſe ſubjects were as fond of fire as Georigetti's were of avoiding it; and that many of them worked with it always before them, and made an inſufferable noiſe by it.

At hearing the above relation, an impreſſion ſtruck my fancy, that they might be a ſort of ſmiths or workers in iron, or other metals; and I wiſhed myſelf with them, for I had a mighty notion of that work, having been frequently at a neighbouring forge when a boy, and knew all their tools, and reſolved to get all the information I could of that country ſome other time; for our company drawing to their poſts, and preparing to ſet forward again, I could have no more talk now; and you muſt know, I had obſerved ſo many idle raſcals before I left England, who could neither ſtrike a ſtroke, nor ſtir a foot, whilſt you talked with them, that I feared if I aſked queſtions by the way, they ſhould in anſwering me neglect their duty, and let me drop.

When we came near our journey's end, Naſgig aſked me where I would pleaſe to alight. I told him I thought at my father's; for though I came on a viſit to the king, it would not ſhew reſpect to go before him juſt off a journey. But I might have ſpared me the trouble of ſettling that point; for we were not gone far from the Black Mountain, it going by that name within ſide, though it is called the White without, before we heard the gripſacks, and a ſort of ſqueaking or ſcreaming muſick, very loud. Naſgig told me the king was in flight. I aſked him, how he knew that, for I could ſee nobody. He knew it, he ſaid, by the gripſack, and the other muſick, which never played but on that occaſion; and, preſently after, I thought the whole kingdom were on the graundee, and was going to order my bearers back to the mountain, for fear of the concourſe. Thinks I, 'They will 'joſtle me down out of civility, and 'I ſhall break my neck to gratify their 'curioſity.' So I told Naſgig, if he did not ſomehow ſtop the multitude, I would turn back for the mountain, for I would never venture into that crowd of people.

Naſgig ſprung away to the king, and informed him; but the king fearing the people ſhould be diſguſted at his ſending them back, gave orders for the whole body to file off to the right and left, and taking a vaſt ſweep each way, to fall in behind me; but upon no account to come near me for fear of miſchief. This was no ſooner ſaid than done, and all ſpreading into two vaſt ſemicircles, met in a train juſt behind my chair.

Naſgig had alſo perſuaded the king to retreat back to the palace, telling him it was not with me as with them, who could help themſelves in caſe of accident; but as I was under the

guidance of others, and on a foundation he ſhould ſcarce, in my condition, have ventured upon, he was ſure I ſhould be better ſatisfied with his intended reſpect only, than to receive it there: 'But,' ſays he, 'that your majeſty may ſee his contrivance, I will cauſe him to alight in the palace-garden, where you may have the pleaſure of viewing him in his machine.'

The king returning, ordered all the colambs, who waited my arrival, to aſſemble in council again; and as I went over the city, I was ſurprized to ſee all the rock of which it conſiſted quite covered with people, beſides prodigious numbers in the air, all ſhouting out peals of welcome to me; and as we were then but little above their heads, every one had ſomething to ſay of me; one wondering what I had got on, another ſwearing he ſaw hair on my face as long as his arm; and in general, every one calling on the Image for my ſafety.

The king was preſent when I alighted in the garden; and himſelf taking me from my chair, I bent on one knee to kiſs his hand: but he took me in his arms, called me his father, and told me, he hoped I would make his days equal in glory to his great anceſtor Begſurbeck. We complimented ſome time, before he took me into a ſmall refectory in the garden, and gave me ſome of his ſort of wine; which I found was loaded with rams-horn, and ſome dried and moiſt ſweetmeats. He then told me, I had a piece of ceremony to go through, after which he hoped to have me to himſelf. I told him, whatever forms of ſtate were cuſtomary, they become neceſſary, and I ſhould obey him.

His majeſty then called one of the perſons in waiting, and telling him he was going to the room of audience, ordered him to conduct me thither forthwith.

Following my guide, after a long walk through a ſort of piazza, we entered under a ſtately arch, curiouſly carved, into a very ſpacious room, lighted with infinite numbers of globe-lamps; where he deſired me to ſit down on a round ſtone pedeſtal covered with leaves, and all round the ſides of it were running foliages exquiſitely wrought; on the walls were carved figures of glumms in ſeveral actions, but chiefly in battle, or other warlike exerciſes, in alto-relievo, very bold; with other devices interſperſed. I ſat down, having firſt paid my ſubmiſſion to the throne, and to the ſeveral colambs who ſat on the king's right and left, down the ſides of the room.

The perſon then who introduced me, going into the middle of the room, ſpoke to this effect—'Mighty king—'and you honourable lords his co-'lambs—here is preſent the glumm 'Peter of Graundevolet; I wait your 'commands where to diſpoſe him.'

Then the king and all the colambs ariſing, another perſon ſtepped forth, and looking at me, for I was ſtanding, 'Glumm Peter of Graundevolet,' ſays he, 'I am to ſignify to you that the 'mighty King Georigetti, and all his 'honourable colambs, congratulate 'your arrival in Normnbdſgrſutt, and 'have commanded me to give you rank 'according to your merit.' Then the king and colambs ſat down, and I was led to the king's right-hand, and placed on the ſame ſtone with, but at ſome ſmall diſtance from, his majeſty.

The king then told me the great pleaſure I had done him and the colambs, in my ſo ſpeedy arrival upon their meſſage; but ſaid, he would give me no farther trouble now, than to know how I choſe to be ſerved; and deſired me to give orders to a baſh he would ſend to me, for whatever I wanted; and then giving orders to a baſh to ſhew me my lodgings, I was permitted to retire to refreſh myſelf.

I was then conducted to my apartment, up a ſloping flight of ſtone, very long, with a vaſt arch over my head; I believe it might be fifty paces long at leaſt, but being a very broad eaſy aſcent, and ſmooth, it was not in the leaſt fatiguing. All the way I went, were the ſame ſorts of globe-lights as in the audience-room. The ſtair-caſe, if I may call it ſo, it anſwering the ſame purpoſe, was moſt beautifully carved, both ſides and top: at length I came into a very large gallery, at leaſt fourſcore paces long, and about twenty broad; on each ſide of which hung the ſame globes. At the farther end of this gallery I entered by an arch, very narrow, but moſt neatly wrought into an oval room; in the middle of this room, on the right-hand, was another ſmall neat arch-

way;

Stothard del. *Angus Sculp.*

ate VI. Published as the Act directs, by Harrison & C.° Sep.° 6. 1783.

way; entering through which about ten paces, there were two ſmaller arches to the right and left, and within them, with an eaſy aſcent of about three paces, you came to a flat trough of ſtone, ſix or ſeven feet long, and about the ſame width; theſe, I underſtood by my baſh, were the beds to lie on. I aſked him, if they were uſed to lie on the bare ſtone. He told me ſome did; but he had orders to lay me on doſſee; and preſently up came four fellows with great matts, as I took them for by my globe-light, full of ſomething, which by their ſo eaſily carrying ſo great bulk, I perceived was very light. They pitched it down upon my ſtone bedſtead, and firſt with great ſticks, and then with ſmall ſwitches having beat it ſoundly, retired.

Whilſt I was looking about at the oddity of the place, I found my baſh was gone too. 'So,' ſays I, 'all 'gone! I ſuppoſe they intend I ſhall 'now go to bed.' I then went into my bed-chamber, for there were globe-lights there too, and obſerving my bed lay full four feet above the ſtone, and ſloping higher to the ſides and head, I went to feel what it was; but laying my hand upon it, it was ſo ſoft I could feel no reſiſtance till I had preſſed it ſome way; and it lay ſo light, that a fly muſt have ſunk upon it.—'Well,' thinks I, 'what if I never lay thus 'before, I believe I have lain as bad!'

I then took a turn into my oval room again, and obſerved the floor, ſides, and all was ſtone, as ſmooth as poſſible, but not poliſhed; and the walls and cieling, and in ſhort every place, where they could be ornamental, were well adorned with carvings as can be conceived.

Though nobody came near me yet, I did not care to be too inquiſitive all at once, but I longed to know what they burnt in the globes, which gave ſo ſteady a light, and yet ſeemed to be incloſed quite round, top and ſides, without any vent-hole for the ſmoke to evaporate. 'Surely,' thinks I, 'they 'are a dulliſh glaſs,' for they hung almoſt above my touch, 'and muſt be 'exceeding hot with the fire ſo in-'cloſed, and have ſome ſmall vent-'hole, thought I can't ſee it.' Then ſtanding on tip-toe to feel, it ſtruck quite cold to my finger; but I could only reach to touch that, or any of the reſt, being all of one height.

Whilſt I was muſing thus, I heard the ſound of voices coming along the gallery; and preſently came a train of ſervants, with as much victuals as an hundred men could eat, and wines proportionable; they ſet it down at the upper end of the oval room, on a flat of ſtone, which on making the room had been left in the upper bend of the oval quite croſs it, about table high, for that purpoſe. Theſe eatables, ſuch as were liquid, or had ſauces to them, were ſerved up in a ſort of grey ſtone-bowls; but the dry were brought in neat wooden baſkets of twig-work.

The ſervants all retiring into the gallery, except my baſh, I aſked him, if any body was to eat with me: he told me, 'No.'—'I wonder,' ſays I, 'they ſhould ſend me ſo much, then.' He replied, it was the allowance of my apartment by his majeſty's orders; which ſilenced me.

I believe there were twenty different things on the table, inſomuch that I did not know where to begin, and heartily wiſhed for an excuſe to get rid of my baſh, who ſtood cloſe at my elbow, that I might have ſmelt, and taſted, before I helped myſelf to any thing; for I knew not what any one thing was.

In this perplexity, I aſked my baſh, what poſt he was in under his majeſty. He ſaid, one of the fifty baſhes appointed to be near the king's favourites when at court. 'And pray,' ſaid I, 'are you the perſon to attend me?' He was, he ſaid, the principal to wait on my perſon; but there were at leaſt ſixty others, who had different offices in this apartment. 'I would be glad,' ſaid I, 'to know your name, that I 'may the more readily ſpeak to you.' He told me his name was Quilly. 'Then, pray, Quilly,' ſays I, 'do 'you know what is become of my bag-'gage and my chair?' I found, though he gueſſed at my baggage, he was puzzled at the name of chair; 'My 'ſeat,' ſays I. 'O, I underſtand 'you,' ſays he. 'Then, pray, will 'you go bring me word of them, and 'ſee them brought ſafe up into the 'gallery.' He tripped away on my errand. 'So,' thinks I, 'now I am 'fairly rid of you!' but I had ſcarce turned any of my viands over, before I found he had but ſtepped into the gallery, to ſend ſome of the idle fellows in waiting there; and this put-

ting

ting me to a nonplus, 'Quilly,' says I, 'you know I am a stranger here; and 'as different countries have different 'ways and customs, as well of dressing their eatables as other things, 'and these dishes being dressed contrary to my custom, I shall be glad 'if you will name some of them to 'me, that I may know them when I 'see them again.'

Quilly began with this, and run on to that, which was a fine dish; and the other few but the king have at their tables: 'And here,' says he, 'is a 'dish of padsi; and there ——' 'Hold, 'hold,' says I, 'Quilly! let's try these 'first, before you proceed;' for I remembered, at my grotto, they all eat my fish for padsi, and I cut a slice of it, (for I always carried my clasp-knife in my pocket, and they had no such thing there) and laying it on a round cake I took for my trencher, I tasted it, and found it so, to my apprehension, in the palate; but it did not look or flake like fish, as I observed by the slices they had cut it into; for all the victuals were in long slices ready to bite at. I asked him if these things were not all cut, and with what; (for I understood they had no knives, shewing him mine:) he said the cook cut it with a sharp stone. I then asked him the names of several other things, and at last he came to crullmott; which having heard of before, I now tasted, and could have sworn it had been a hashed fowl. I asked him if crullmotts were very common; he told me 'Yes,' towards the bottoms of the mountains there were abundance of crullmott-trees. 'No, no,' says I, 'not trees; 'I mean fowls, birds.' — 'I don't 'know what they are,' said he; 'but 'these crullmotts grow on very large 'trees.' Indeed, I did not know yet what I was at; 'But,' says I, 'if 'your fowls do, sure your fish don't 'grow on trees too!'—'We have none 'of them,' says he, 'in this country.' —'Why,' says I, 'it is but this mo-'ment I tasted one.'—'I don't know, 'then,' said he, 'where the cook got 'it.'—'Why, here,' says I, 'what 'you call padsi I call fish.'—'Aye, 'padsi,' says he, 'grows upon a bush 'in the same woods.'—'Well done,' says I, 'this is the first country I was 'ever in where the fish and fowl grew 'on trees: it is ten to one but I meet 'with an ox growing on some tree by 'the tail before I leave you.'

I had by this time, out of these two and some other pickings, made up a very good meal; and putting my knife into my pocket, desired something to drink. My bash asked me what I pleased to have; I told him, any thing to take a good draught of. Then he filled me a bott of wine, very well tasted, though too sweet for meals; but putting some water to it, it did very well.

My messengers being returned, and having set all my things in the gallery, I desired Quilly to let the victuals be taken away: upon which there came more servants than dishes, who took all at once, but some wine and water I desired might remain.

I told Quilly I saw there were two beds—'Who are they for?' says I. 'One for you, and one for me,' says he; 'for we bashes never leave the 'king's favourites.'—'Pray, Quilly,' says I, 'what is the meaning that to 'the several rooms I have been in, there 'is never a door?'—'Door!' says he, 'I don't know that.'—'What!' says I, 'don't you shut your rooms at 'night?'—'No, no! shut at night! 'I never heard of that!'—'I believe,' says I, 'Quilly, it is almost bed-time, 'is it not?'—'No, no!' says Quilly, 'the gripsack has not sounded.'—'How do you know,' says I, 'in this 'country, when you shall lie down, 'and when arise? for my wife has 'told me you have no clocks.'—'No! 'no clocks!' says he. 'Then,' says I, 'does every one rise and lie down 'when they please? or do you all lie 'down and all rise together about the 'same time?'—'O,' says Quilly, 'you 'will hear the gripsack presently; 'there are several glumms who take it 'by turns to sound it for rest, and 'then we know it is time to lie down; 'and when they sound it again, we 'know it is time to rise.' And afterwards I found these people guessed the time (being twelve hours between sound and sound) so well, that there were but few minutes variation at any time between them and my watch; and I set my watch to go from their soundings at six o'clock.

I found myself pretty much fatigued after my journey; for though I had only to sit still, yet the excessive velo-

city

city of ſuch an unuſual motion ſtrained every muſcle as much as the hardeſt labour: for, you may imagine, I could not at firſt be without my fears upon ever ſo ſmall a variation of my chair; which, though I could not poſſibly by my own inclination one way or other rectify, yet a natural propenſity to a perpendicular ſtation involuntarily biaſes one to incline this or that way in order to preſerve it: and then, at firſt, my breath being ready to fail me in proportion to the celerity of the flight, and to my own apprehenſions, and being upon that exerciſe near thirty hours, and without ſleep for almoſt forty, you may judge I wanted reſt: ſo I told Quilly I would lie down, and ordered him not to diſturb me till I waked of myſelf.

I could not prevent the officiouſneſs of my valet to put me to-bed, and cover me with the down, or whatever it was; for having no ſheets, I pulled off nothing but my coat, wig, and ſhoes; and putting on my flannel night-cap, I laid me down.

CHAP. X.

THE KING'S APARTMENTS DESCRIBED — IS INTRODUCED TO THE KING—A MOUCHERATT CALLED —HIS DISCOURSE WITH THE KING ABOUT RELIGION.

I Have known ſome travellers ſo peculiar in their taſte as not to be able to ſleep in a ſtrange lodging; but, thanks to my kind ſtars, that did not prove my caſe; for having looked on my watch when I went to-bed, as I call it, and finding it was down, I wound it up, and obſerved it began to go at about three o'clock, whether day or night, matters not; and when I waked it was paſt nine, ſo that I know I had ſlept eighteen hours; and finding that a very reaſonable refreſhment, and myſelf very hungry, I called Quilly to get me my breakfaſt.

Quilly told me his majeſty had been to viſit me, but would not have me diſturbed. I begging him to diſpatch my breakfaſt as ſoon as poſſible, and let me have ſome water for my hands, he ordered the gallery-waiters, and every thing came immediately.

My breakfaſt was a brown liquid, with a ſort of ſeeds or grain in it, very ſweet and good; but the fear of the king's return before I was ready for him, prevented my enquiring into what it was: ſo having finiſhed it, and waſhed my hands, Quilly preſented me a towel, which looked like an unbleached coarſe linen, but was very ſoft and ſpongy; and I found afterwards was made of threads of bark ſtripped from ſome tree. I put on my brown ſuit, ſword, and long wig, and ſent Quilly to know when it was his majeſty's pleaſure I ſhould wait upon him.

I had been ſo much uſed to lamp-light in my grotto, that the lights of this gloomy manſion did not ſeem ſo unuſual a thing to me as they would have done to a ſtranger. The king ſent me word he would admit me immediately, and Quilly was my conductor to his majeſty's apartment.

We paſſed through the gallery, at the farther end of which was a very beautiful arch even with the ſtair-caſe, through which Quilly led me into a large guard-room, wherein were above an hundred glumms poſted in ranks, with their pikes in hand, ſome headed with ſharp-pointed ſtone, others with multangular ſtone, and others with ſtone globes. Paſſing through theſe, we entered another gallery as long as that to my apartment; then under another arch we came into a ſmall ſquare room, carved exceeding fine; on the right and left of which were two other arch-ways leading into moſt noble rooms; but we only ſaw them, paſſing quite croſs the little room, through an arch that fronted us into a ſmall gallery of prodigious height; at the farther end of which Quilly turning aſide a mat, introduced and left me in the moſt beautiful place in the univerſe; where, neither ſeeing nor hearing any body ſtir, I employed myſelf in examining the magnificence of the place, and could, as I then thought, have feaſted my eye with variety for a twelvemonth. I paced it over one hundred and thirty of my paces long, and ninety-ſix broad: there were arches in the middle of each ſide, and in the middle of each end; the arch-ceiling could not be leſs than the breadth of the room, and covered with the moſt delightful carvings, from whence hung globe-lights innumerable,

ble, but ſeemingly without order, which I thought appeared the more beautiful on that account. In the center of the room hung a prodigious cluſter of the ſame lights, ſo diſpoſed as to repreſent one vaſt light; and there were ſeveral rows of the ſame lights hung round the room, one row above another at proper diſtances: theſe lights repreſented to me the ſtars, with the moon in the middle of them; and after I came to be better acquainted with the country, I perceived the lights were to repreſent the ſouthern conſtellations. The arch-ways were carved with the fineſt devices imaginable, gigantick glumms ſupporting on each ſide the pediments. At every ten paces, all along the ſides and ends, aroſe columns, each upon a broad ſquare baſe, admirably carved; theſe reached to the cornice or baſe of the arched cieling, quite round the room. On the pannels between each column were carved the different battles and moſt remarkable atchievements of Begſurbeck himſelf. Over the arch I entered at, was the ſtatue of Begſurbeck, and over the oppoſite arch the old prophetick ragan. In the middle of the room ſtood a long ſtone-table lengthwiſe, moſt exquiſitely carved, almoſt the length of the room, except where it was divided in the middle about the breadth of the arch-ways, in order for a paſſage from one arch to the other. In ſhort, to deſcribe this one room particularly, would make a volume of itſelf.

I ſtaid here a full hour and half, wondering why nobody came to me; at length turning myſelf about, I ſaw two glumms coming towards me, and having received their compliments, they deſired me to walk in to the king. We paſſed through another middling room, and taking up a matt at the farther ſide of it, I was conducted in where his majeſty was ſitting with another glumm. They both aroſe at my entrance, and calling me their father, and leading me, one by each hand, obliged me to ſit down between them.

After ſome compliments about my journey, and accommodation ſince, the king told me I had not waited ſo long without, but he had ſome urgent diſpatches to make; and as he choſe to have me in private with him, he imagined, he ſaid, I would be able to divert myſelf in the boſkee. I declared I had never ſeen any thing like it for grandeur and magnificence before; but the beauty of the ſculpture, and diſpoſition of the lights, were moſt exquiſite.

All this while I felt the other glumm handling my long wig, and feeling whether it grew to my head, or what it was; for he had by this time got his finger under the caul, and was pulling my hair down: when I turning about my head, 'Glumm Peter,' ſays the king, 'don't be uneaſy, the ragan will 'do you no hurt, it is only to ſatisfy 'his curioſity; and I choſe to have the 'ragan here, that we may more leiſurely adviſe with you what courſe 'to take in the preſent exigences of 'my ſtate. I have fully heard the 'ſtory of your travels from my co-'lambs, and we have returned thanks 'to the Great Image for bringing you, 'after ſo many hazards and deliver-'ances, ſafe to my dominions for our 'defence.'

The ragan deſired to know whether all that hair (meaning my wig) grew upon my head or not. I told him no, it was a covering only, to put on occaſionally; but that hair did grow on my head, and pulling off my wig I ſhewed them. The ragan then aſked me if I had hair of my own growing under that too, (meaning my beard, which he then had in his hand, for their glumms have no beards;) but I told him that grew there of itſelf. 'O parly Puly!' ſays the ragan, riſing up, and ſmiting his hands together, 'it is he! it is he!'

'Pray,' ſays I, 'ragan, who is this 'Puly you ſpeak of?'—'It is the 'Image,' ſays he, 'of the great Coll-'war.'—'Who is that?' ſays I.—'Why, he that made the world,' ſays he. 'And, pray,' ſays I, 'what did 'his Image make?'—'O,' ſays he, 'we made the Image.'—'And, pray,' ſays I, 'can't you break it again?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'if we had a mind to 'be ſtruck dead, we might: for that 'would be the immediate conſequence 'of ſuch an attempt; nay, of but 'holding up a finger againſt it in con-'tempt.'—'Pray,' ſays I, 'did ever 'any body die that way?'—'No,' ſays he, 'no one ever durſt preſume 'to do it.'—'Then, perhaps,' ſaid I, 'upon trial, the puniſhment you ſpeak 'of might not be the conſequence of

'ſuch

'such an attempt. Pray,' says I, 'what makes Collwar have so great a 'kindness for that Image?'—'Because,' says he, 'it is his very likeness, and he gives him all he asks 'for us; for we only ask him. Why,' says he, 'it is the Image that has 'brought you amongst us.'

I did not then think it a proper time to advance the contrary to the person I then had to do with, as I was sure it would have done no good; for a priest is only to be convinced by the strongest party: so I deferred my argument on that head to a fitter opportunity.

'Most admirable Peter,' says the king, 'you, you are the glumm we 'depend upon to fulfil an ancient prediction delivered by a venerable ragan. If you will, Ragan I. O. shall 'repeat it to you, and therein you will 'be able to discern yourself plainly 'described, in not only similar, but 'the express words I myself, from 'your story, should describe you in.'

In good earnest, I had from divers circumstances concluded that I might be the person; and resolved, as I thought I had the best handle in the world for it from the prediction, to do what I could in the affair of religion, by fair means or stratagem, (for I was sensible my own single force would not do it) before I began to shew myself in their cause, or else to desert them; and having had a small hint from Nasgig of what the old ragan's design was in part, and which I approved of, I purposed to add what else was necessary as part of his design, if his proposals had been approved of.

I told the king I would excuse the ragan the repetition of the prediction, as I had partly been informed of it by Nasgig; and that conceiving myself, as he did, to be the person predicted of by the ragan, I had the more readily set out on this expedition, which nothing but the hopes of performing so great a good could have prevailed with me to undertake; and I did not doubt, with God's blessing, to accomplish it.

The king grew exceeding joyous at what I said, and told me he would call a moucheratt, at which all his colambs should attend to have their advice, and then we would proceed to action; and ordered the ragan to let it be for the sixth day, and in the mean time that he and his brethren should, day and night, implore the Image to guide their deliberations.

The ragan being gone, I told the king I had something to impart to him, in which it was my duty to obtain his majesty's sentiments before I appeared publickly at the moucheratt. He desired me to proceed: I told him I had been some time considering the old ragan's prediction, with the occasion of it; 'And,' says I, 'it is plain to me 'that all these mischiefs have befallen 'you for neglect of the ragan's proposal concerning religion; as I understand your great ancestor would 'have come into it, and would have 'had his people done so too but for 'the ragans, who hindered it.

'You find,' says I, 'by your traditional history, that Begsurbeck lived long, and reigned gloriously; and 'I would aim at making you as prosperous as he was, and infinitely more 'happy, not only in outward splendor here, but in great glory hereafter.'

Perceiving that my discourse had quickened the king's attention, says I, 'I must let your majesty know it is the 'old ragan's plan I must proceed upon 'in every branch of it.'—'Why,' says the king, 'he would have abolished 'our worship of the image.'—'And 'so would I,' says I; 'nay, not only 'would, but must and will, before I 'engage myself in your deliverance; 'and then with the only assistance of 'the great Collwar, whom I adore, 'and whom you must too, if you expect any service from me, I don't 'doubt to prevail.

'Your majesty sees,' says I, 'in 'few words, I have been very plain 'with you; and I desire you, in as 'concise and plain a manner, to answer me, what are your thoughts on 'this head? for I can say no more till 'I hear them.'

The king seeing me so peremptory; 'Glumm Peter,' says he, looking about to see no one was near, 'I have 'too much sense to imagine our Image 'can do either good or hurt; for if it 'could have done us good, why would 'it not in our greatest distress, now 'near two hundred years past? For my 'own part, I put no trust in it, nor did 'my famous ancestor the great Beg-

'ſurbeck: but here is my difficulty, 'where to chuſe another object of wor-'ſhip; for I perceive by myſelf, man-'kind muſt, through natural impulſe, 'look to ſomewhat ſtill above them, as 'a child does to his father, from whom 'he hopes for and expects ſuccour in 'his difficulties; and though the father 'be not able to aſſiſt him, ſtill he looks 'to him; and therefore, I ſay, we 'muſt have another before we can part 'with this, or the people, inſtead of 'the part who have been in the de-'fection, will all deſert me; for they 'are eaſy now in hopes of help from the 'Image, and every little gleam of ſuc-'ceſs is attributed to it; but for the 'diſadvantages we receive, the ragans 'charge them on the people's not 'praying, and paying ſufficiently; 'which they, poor ſouls, knowing in 'their conſciences to be true enough, 'are willing rather, as they are bid, 'to take the blame upon themſelves, 'than to ſuffer the leaſt to fall on the 'Image.

'All this,' ſays the king, 'I am 'ſenſible of; but ſhould I tell them 'ſo, my life muſt pay for it; for the 'ragans would bring ſome meſſage 'from the Image againſt me, to deſert 'or murder me; and then happy 'would be the firſt man who could 'begin the miſchief, which the reſt 'would ſoon follow.'

This ſo frank and unexpected declaration, gave me great confidence in the king; and I told him, if that was his opinion, he might leave the reſt to me. I would ſo manage it, that the thing ſhould be brought about by my means; and I would then ſatisfy all his ſcruples, and make him a flouriſhing prince. But I could not help reflecting with myſelf, how nearly this diſtant prince, and his ſtate, copied ſome of my neighbours in Europe.

CHAP. XI.

PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON WHAT HE WAS TO PERFORM—SETTLES THE METHOD OF IT—HIS ADVICE TO HIS SON AND DAUGHTER — GLOBE-LIGHTS LIVING CREATURES — TAKES MALECK INTO HIS SERVICE—NASGIG DISCOVERS TO PETER A PLOT AT COURT — REVOLT OF GAUINGRUNT.

HAVING now fully entered into the ſpirit of the buſineſs with my own good liking, I was determined to puſh it vigorouſly, or periſh in the attempt. 'Have I,' ſays I, 'ſo large a 'field before me now to manifeſt my 'Maker in to a whole nation, and un-'der his own call, and to fulfil their 'own prediction too; and ſhall I ſhrink 'at the poſſible danger? Or may there 'not rather be no probability of dan-'ger in it? The nation is in diſtreſs, 'the readier therefore to try any re-'medy for help: their Image has ſtood 'idle two hundred years; there has 'been an old prophecy, or at leaſt if 'not true, as firmly believed to be true 'as if it was ſo; and this, in regard to 'the people, anſwers in all reſpects as 'well. But why ſhould it not be true? 'It is better atteſted by the frequent 'repetition, from the original delivery 'to this time, than are many tradi-'tions I have heard of amongſt us 'chriſtians, which have come out ſpick 'and ſpan new from the repoſitories of 'the learned, of twelve or fifteen hun-'dred years old, little the worſe for lying 'by; though they are not pretended 'to have ſeen light all that time, and 'are undoubted verities the moment 'they receive the grand ſanction. Then 'if any means but fraud or force can 'gain ſo large a territory to the truth, 'and I am the only perſon can intro-'duce it, ſhall not I endeavour it? 'Yes, ſurely; but I am not excluded 'all advantages neither, for all the 'works of Providence are brought to 'paſs by appointed means: and, indeed, 'were it otherwiſe, what could we call 'providence? For a peremptory fiat, 'and it is over, may work a miracle, 'it is true, but will not exhibit the 'proceedings of Providence. There-'fore let me conſider, in a prudential 'way, how to proceed to the execution 'of what I am to ſet about—and guide 'me, Providence! I beſeech you, to 'the end!'

Upon the beſt deliberation I could take, I came to the following reſolutions: firſt, to inſiſt on the abolition of the Image worſhip, and to introduce true religion by the fitteſt means I could find opportunity for.

Secondly,

Secondly, as the revolters had been one people with thoſe I would ſerve, and had this prediction amongſt them too, and were intereſted in it, in hopes of it's diſtant accompliſhment; ſo if they came properly to the knowledge, that the perſon predicted of had appeared, and was ready for execution of his purpoſes, it muſt ſtagger their fidelity to their new maſter; and therefore I would find means to let them know it.

Thirdly, that I would not march till I was in condition not eaſily to be repulſed; for that would break both the hopes and hearts of my party, and deſtroy my religious ſcheme; and therefore I would get ſome of my cannon.

Fourthly, that I would go to the war in my flying-chair, and train up a guard for my perſon with piſtols and cutlaſſes.

Theſe reſolutions I kept to myſelf till the moucheratt was over, to ſee firſt how matters would turn out there.

Whilſt I waited for the approaching moucheratt, my ſon Tommy, and daughter Hallycarnie, paid their duties to me. It is ſtrange how ſoon young minds are tainted by bad company. I found them both very glad to ſee me, for every body, they ſaid, told them I was to be their deliverer. They had both got the prophecy by heart, and mentioned the Image with all the affection of natural ſubjects. The moment Tommy ſpoke of it to me; 'Hold,' ſays I, 'young man, 'what's become of thoſe good princi- 'ples I took ſo much pains to ground 'you in? Has all my concern for your 'ſalvation been thrown away upon 'you? Are you become a reprobate? 'What! an apoſtate from the faith you 'inherited by birth-right? Is the God 'I have ſo often declared to you a 'wooden one? Anſwer me, or never 'ſee my face more.'

The child was extremely confounded to ſee me look ſo ſevere, and hear me ſpeak ſo harſh to him. 'Indeed, 'father,' ſays he, 'I did not willingly offend, or deſign to ſhew any particular regard to the Image; for, 'thanks to you, I have none; but 'what I ſaid was only the common 'diſcourſe in every body's mouth; I 'meant neither good nor harm by it.'

'Tommy,' ſays I, 'it is a great 'fault to run into an error, though 'in company of multitudes; and where 'a perſon's principle is found at bottom, and founded upon reaſon, no 'numbers ought to ſhake it. You are 'young, therefore hearken to me—and 'you, Hallycarnie—whatever you ſhall 'ſee done by the people of this country, in the worſhip of this idol, don't 'you imitate it, don't you join in it. 'Keep the ſound leſſons I have preached to you in mind; and upon every 'attempt of the ragans, or any other, 'to draw you aſide to their worſhip, 'or even to ſpeak or act the leaſt thing 'in praiſe of this idol, think of me 'and my words; pay your adoration 'to the Supreme Father of ſpirits only, 'and to no wooden ſtone or earthen 'deity whatever.'

The children wept very heartily, and both promiſed me to remember and to do as I had taught them.

Being now in my oval chamber, and alone with my children, I had a mind to be informed of ſome things I was almoſt aſhamed to aſk Quilly. 'Tom- 'my,' ſays I, 'what ſort of fire do 'they keep in theſe globes? and what 'are they made of?'—'Daddy,' ſays he, 'yonder is the man ſhifting them, 'you may go and ſee.' Being very curious to ſee how he did it, I went to him; as I came near him, he ſeemed to have ſomething all fire on his arm. 'What has the man got there?' ſays I. 'Only ſweecoes,' ſays Tommy. By this time I came up to him; 'Friend,' ſays I, 'what are you about?'— 'Shifting the ſweecoes, Sir,' ſays he, 'to feed them.'—'What oil do you 'feed with,' ſays I? 'Oil!' ſays he, 'they won't eat oil; that would kill 'them all.'—'Why,' ſays I, 'my 'lamp is fed with oil.'

Tommy could ſcarce forbear laughing himſelf; but for fear the ſervant ſhould do ſo too, pulled me by the ſleeve, and deſired me to ſay no more. So turning away with him; 'Daddy,' ſays he, 'it is not oil that gives this 'light, but ſweecoes, a living crea- 'ture; he has got his baſket full, and 'is taking the old ones out to feed 'them, and putting new ones in; they 'ſhift them every half-day, and feed them.'—'What,' ſays I, 'are all theſe 'infinite number of globes I ſee living 'creatures!'—'No,' ſays he, 'the 'globes are only the tranſparent ſhell 'of a bott, like our calibaſhes, the 'light comes from the ſweecoe with-

'in.'—'Has that man,' ſays I, 'got 'any of them?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'you may ſee them; the king, and the 'colambs, and, indeed, every man of 'note, has a place to breed and feed 'them in.'—'Pray, let us go ſee 'them,' ſays I, 'for that is a curioſity 'indeed.'

Tommy deſired the man to ſhew me the ſweecoes, ſo he ſet down his baſket, which was a very beautiful reſemblance of a common higler's baſket, with a handle in the middle, and a diviſion under it, with flaps on each ſide to lift up and down. It was made of ſtraw-coloured ſmall twigs, neatly compacted, but ſo light as ſcarce to be of any weight. Opening one of the lids, I could make very little diſtinction of ſubſtances, the bottom ſeeming all over of a quite white colour. I looking ſurprized at the light, the man took out one, and would have put it into my hand, but perceiving me ſhy of it, he aſſured me it was one of the moſt innocent things in the world; I then took it, and ſurveying it, it felt to my touch as ſmooth and cold as a piece of ice. It was about as long as a large lob-worm, but much thicker. The man ſeeing me admire the brightneſs of it's colour, told me it had done it's duty, and was going to be fed; but thoſe which were going upon duty were much clearer: and then opening the other lid, thoſe appeared far exceeding the others in brightneſs, and thickneſs too. I aſked what he fed them with. He ſaid, 'Leaves and fruit;' but graſs, when he could get it, which was not often, they were very fond of.

Having diſmiſſed my children, I ſent for Naſgig, to gain ſome intelligences I wanted to be informed of. The moment I ſaw him, it came into my mind to enquire after my new filgays. He ſaid the king granted my requeſt at the firſt word. I told him then he had ſaved his honour with me, and I was obliged to him: 'But,' ſays I, 'you 'told me my bearers ſhould be free 'too.'—'They are ſo,' ſays he. 'Then there is one thing I want,' ſays I; 'and that is, to ſee the ſecond 'bearer on my right-hand, who came 'through without ſhifting. I have a 'fancy for that fellow,' ſays I, 'to be 'about my perſon: I like him; and, if 'you can give him a good word, I 'ſhould be glad to treat with him 'about it.'

'My friend Peter,' ſays he, 'you 'are a man of penetration, though it 'ill becomes me to ſay ſo in regard of 'perſons; but I can ſay that for him, 'if he likes you as well as you ſeem 'to like him, he is the truſtieſt fellow 'in the world: but as he knows his 'own worth, he would not be ſo to 'every body, I can tell you that.'—'I 'don't fear his diſliking me,' ſays I, 'for I make it my maxim to do as I 'would be done by; and if he is a man 'of honour, as you ſeem to ſay, he 'would do the ſame, and we ſhall be 'ſoon agreed.'—'But,' ſays Naſgig, 'it being now the fourth day ſince he 'was freed, he may be gone home 'perhaps, for he is not of our coun-'try, but of Mount Alkoe. If Quil-'ly can find him, he will come.' So he ordered Quilly to ſend for Maleck of Mount Alkoe, with orders to come to me.

We deſcended from one diſcourſe to another, and at length to King Georigetti's affairs; when Naſgig, giving a ſigh, 'Ah, Peter!' ſays he, 'we ſhall 'loiter away our time here till the 'enemy are upon our backs. There 'is venom in the graſs; I wiſh my 'good maſter is not betrayed.'—'By 'whom?' ſays I. 'By thoſe he little 'ſuſpects,' ſays he. 'Why,' ſays I, 'they tell me you are much in his fa-'vour; if ſo, why do you ſuffer it?'—'I believe,' ſays Naſgig, 'I am in his 'favour, and may continue in it if I 'will join in meaſures to ruin him; 'but elſe I ſhall ſoon be out of it.'—'You tell me riddles,' ſays I. 'Theſe 'things,' ſays he, 'a man talks with 'his head in his teeth. There is dan-'ger in them, Peter; there is danger!'—'You don't ſuſpect me,' ſays I, 'do 'you?'—'No,' ſays he, 'I know your 'ſoul too well; but there are three 'perſons in theſe dominions who will 'never let my maſter reſt till out of 'his throne, or in hoximo. I am but 'lately in favour, but have made as 'many obſervations, perhaps, as thoſe 'who have been longer about the 'king.'

'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'your concern 'proceeds from an honeſt heart; don't 'ſtifle what you have to ſay: if I can

'counſel

'counsel you with safety I'll do it; if 'not, I'll tell you so.'

'Peter,' says he, 'Georigetti was 'the only son of a well-beloved fa- 'ther, and ascended his throne ten 'years ago on his decease; but Harlo- 'kin, the prince of the revolters, whose 'head is never idle, finding that whis- 'pers and base stories spread about, did 'not hurt Georigetti, or withdraw his 'subjects affections, has tried a means 'to make him undo himself.'—'As 'how?' says I. 'Why,' said he, 'by 'closely playing his game he has got 'one of his relations into the king's 'service, than whom he could never 'have chosen a fitter instrument. He 'by degrees, feeding the king's hu- 'mour, and promising mountains, has 'pushed into the best places in the 'kingdom: his name is Barbarsa, a 'most insolent man, who has had the 'assurance to corrupt the king's mis- 'tress, and has prevailed and brought 'her over to his interest.'—'O perfi- 'dy!' says I, 'is it possible?'—'Yes,' says he; 'and more than that, has 'drawn in, till now, an honest man 'called Nicor; and it has been agreed 'between them to protract this war; 'till by their stratagems in procuring 'the revolt of Gauingrunt, a very 'large and populous province, and now 'the barrier between us and the re- 'bels, and two or three more places, 'they shall have persuaded Georigetti 'to fly; and then Barbarsa is to be 'king, and Yaccambourse his queen. 'A union is then to be struck between 'him and Harlokin, and peace made, 'by restoring some of the surrendered 'provinces: and upon the death of the 'first of them, or their issue, childless, 'the survivor, or his issue, is to take 'the whole. They laugh at your 'uniting the dominions, and the old 'prediction.'

'These,' said I, 'Nasgig, are seri- 'ous things, and, as you say, are not 'lightly to be talked of; but, Nasgig, 'know this, he that conceals them is 'a traitor. Can you prove this?'—'I 'have heard them say so,' says Nas- gig. 'How!' says I, 'and not disco- 'ver it?'—'I am as anxious for that 'as you can be,' says he; 'but for 'me to be cashiered, slit, and sent to 'Crashdoorpt, only for meaning well, 'without power to perfect my good 'intentions, where will be the benefit 'to my master or me?'—'When and 'where did you hear this?' says I. 'Several and several times,' says he, 'in my own bed.'—'In your own 'bed!' says I. 'I'll tell you,' says he; 'it so happens that when I rest at 'the palace, as I am bound to do when 'on duty, there is a particular bed for 'me: now, as the whole palace is cut 'out of one solid rock, though Yac- 'combourse's apartment at the en- 'trance is at a prodigious distance 'from the entrance to mine, yet my 'bed, and one in an inner apartment 'of hers, stand close together; the 'partition, indeed, is stone, but either 'from the thinness of it, or some flaw 'in it I have not yet discovered, I can 'plainly hear every word that is 'spoken. And there it is, in their 'hours of dalliance, when they use 'this bed, that I hear what I have now 'told you.'—'Say nothing of it,' says I, 'but leave the issue to me.'

By this time the messenger returned with Maleck, and he and I soon agree- ing, I took him into my service.

I went to bed as usual, but could get no rest, Nasgig's story engrossing my whole attention; I was resolved, however, to be better informed before I acquainted the king of it: but rising pretty early next morning, the king came into my chamber, leaning upon Barbarsa, to tell me he had received an express that Gauingrunt had revolted. 'Peter,' says he, 'behold a distressed 'monarch; nay, an undone monarch!' —'Great Sir,' says Barbarsa, 'you 'afflict yourself too much; here is 'Mr. Peter come to assist you, and he 'will settle all your concerns, never 'fear.' I eyed the man, and (though prejudice may hang an honest person) found him a villain in his heart; for even while he was forcing a feeling tone of affliction, he was staring at my laced hat and feather that lay on the seat, by which I was sure nothing could be at a greater distance than his heart and tongue. His sham concern put me within a moment of seizing him in the king's presence; but his majesty, at that instant speaking, diverted me.

Before the king left me, I told him, having certain propositions to make to the moucheratt next day, it was possi- ble they might require time to consider them; wherefore it would be proper, at this critical time, to let them meet

every

every other day, buſineſs or none, till this affair was over. The king ordered Barbarſa to ſee it was ſo, and then we parted.

CHAP. XII.

HOLD A MOUCHERATT—SPEECHES OF RAGANS AND COLAMBS—PETER SETTLES RELIGION—INFORMS THE KING OF A PLOT—SENDS NASGIG TO THE SHIP FOR CANNON.

ATTENDING at the moucheratt to-day, I happened to be ſeated within two paces of the idol. There was the moſt numerous aſſembly that had ever been ſeen; and when all was quiet, the king opened with ſignifying the revolt of Gauingrunt, the approach of the enemy, and no forces in the field to ſtop them. This he ſet forth in terms ſo moving, that the whole aſſembly were melted into ſighs; till one of the colambs riſing up, ſays he, 'His 'majeſty has ſet forth the ſtate of his 'affairs in ſuch a manner, and, I am 'ſatisfied, a true one, that it becomes 'us all to be vigilant. We all ſeem to 'have, and I believe have, great faith 'in the remedy this day to be propoſed 'to us, in anſwer to our ancient pre'diction: and as I doubt not but 'glumm Peter is the man, ſo I doubt 'not but through his management 'we ſhall ſtill receive help; but let us 'conſider, if we might not have pre'vented theſe preſſing evils, and eſpe'cially this laſt, by ſpeedier prepara'tions againſt them. What province, 'or member of a ſtate will not revolt 'to a numerous hoſt juſt ready to de'vour them, if they can receive no aſ'ſiſtance from their head? for, to my 'certain knowledge, his majeſty had 'ordered this almoſt a year ago, and 'not a man gone yet. Can we ex'pect Peter to go ſingly to fight an 'army? Did your prediction ſay he 'ſhould go alone? No, he ſhall ſlay; 'that is, he and his army; what is 'done by them, being always attri'buted to their general. Enquire 'therefore into your paſt conduct, 'ſend Peter your general, and truſt to 'the Great Image.'

His majeſty then ſaid, if there had been any remiſſneſs in executing his commands, he believed it was done with a view to his ſervice; but a more proper opportunity might be found for an enquiry of that nature. As for the preſent moucheratt, it was called ſolely to propoſe to Peter the execution of the remaining part of the prediction; or at leaſt ſuch part of it as ſeems now, or never, to wait it's accompliſhment.

Here aroſe a ragan, and told the aſſembly, in the name of himſelf and brethren, that the prediction had never yet been applicable to any one perſon till glumm Peter arrived; and that his ſagacity of itſelf was a ſufficient recommendation of him to the guidance of the enterprize; and requeſted, that glumm Peter might forthwith be declared protector of the army, and ſet forward with it, that the ſtate might receive ſafety, and the Great Image it's proper honour.

I could now hold out no longer; but, ſtanding up, made my ſpeech in the following manner, or very near it. 'Mighty king—you reverend ragans '—and honourable colambs—with the 'good people of this auguſt aſſembly— 'I am come hither, led by the force of 'your own prediction, at the requeſt 'of his majeſty and the ſtates, at the 'peril of my life, to accompliſh things 'ſaid to be predicted of me glumm 'Peter. If then you have a predic'tion, if then your prediction de'ſcribes me, and the circumſtances of 'theſe times, it conſiſting of ſeveral 'parts, they ought ſeriouſly to be 'weighed, that I may know when and 'where I am to begin my operation, 'and when and where to leave off; for 'in predictions, the whole is to be ac'compliſhed as much as any member 'of it.

'It is ſaid, I ſhall deſtroy the trai'tor of the weſt; I am ready to enter 'upon it, and ſettle the ancient limits of 'your monarchy. Are you willing, 'therefore, that ſhould be done? yea, 'or nay?' Then every one anſwered, 'Yea!'—'And by common conſent 'eſtabliſh what the old ragan would 'have taught you?' Here the king roſe up; but Barbarſa giving him a touch, (for every one waited to be guided by the voice of the ragans) he ſat down again; and no one anſwering, 'Yea,' I again put the ſame queſtion, and told them, as it was their

own

own concern, I would have an anſwer before I proceeded. One of the ragans then roſe, and ſaid, that part of the prediction was too looſe to be relied on, for it was to ſettle what he would have taught: 'Now who 'knows,' ſays he, 'what he would 'have taught.' The aſſembly pauſed a conſiderable time, and juſt as I was opening my mouth to ſpeak, an ancient and venerable ragan roſe: ſays he, 'I am ſorry, at my years, to find 'that truth wants an advocate; my 'age and infirmities might well have 'excuſed me from ſpeaking in this aſ'ſembly, ſo many of my brethren be'ing preſent, younger and better qua'lified for that purpoſe than myſelf; 'but, as we are upon a ſacred thing, 'and leſt, as I find none of them care 'to declare the truth, I ſhould alſo be 'thought to conſent to it's ſuppreſſion 'if I ſat ſilent and ſuffered it to be hid 'under a quibble, I muſt beg to be 'heard a few words. My brother 'who ſpoke laſt, ſays, the words are 'too looſe, which ſay, "And by "common conſent eſtabliſh what I "would have taught:" but I beg 'leave to think it far otherwiſe, for 'we all know what he would have 'taught, and the memory of that hath 'been as exactly kept as the predic'tion; for how could our anceſtors 'have oppoſed his doctrine, but from 'hearing and diſapproving it? And 'we all know, not only the predic'tion, but the doctrine, hath been 'punctually handed down to us; 'though, woe be to us! we have not 'proclaimed it as we have the predic'tion: and let me tell you, when you, 'my brethren, ſeverally come to my 'years, and have but a ſingle ſtep 'farther to hoximo, you will wiſh 'you had taught it, as I do, who do 'believe and approve it.'

The poor old man, having ſpoke as long as his breath and ſpirits would permit him, ſat down, and I again reſumed the queſtion, as I now thought, on a much better foundation than before, and was immediately told by another ragan, that there would be no end to the aſſembly, if we conſidered every point at once, for we might next go upon what countries we ſhould conquer, and of whom to demand tribute; which would be debating about the fruit before the ſeed was ſown. But his opinion was, to go on and quell the rebellion, and reſtore the monarchy, and then go upon the other points.

I told them, if they made ſo light of the prediction as not to declare publickly, ſince they knew it, what the ragan would have taught, it ill became me to be more zealous in their own concerns than they were themſelves; and I ſhould imagine there was very little truth in any part of it, and would never hazard my life for their ſakes, who would not ſpeak the truth to ſave the kingdom; and deſired leave of the ſtates for my departure; for I was not a perſon, I told them, to be cajoled into any thing. I undertook it at firſt voluntarily; and no man could, or ſhould compel me to it: my life they might take, but my honour they ſhould never ſtain, though I was aſſured I could eaſily, with their concurrence, compleat all that related to them.

The ſenior colamb immediately riſing, deſired me to have a little patience, and not to leave the aſſembly (for I was going out) till I had heard him.

'Here is,' ſays he, 'this day a 'thing ſtarted, which, I think, every 'whit as much concerns us all, and 'the body, and every member of the 'people to know, as it does Peter; 'and I am ſurprized, unleſs the pre'ſent ragans believe what their prede'ceſſor would have taught to be better 'than what they now teach, (for no'thing elſe can make us conſent to it) 'that they ſhould ſcruple to let us 'know it, and keep us ignorant, who 'are worſhippers as well as them'ſelves, of any matter which ſo nearly 'concerns us to know. I am for 'obliging the ragans to declare the 'truth. If this be a true prediction, 'all the relatives to it are true, and I 'inſiſt that we hear it.'

This ſpeech emboldened ſeveral others; and all the populace ſiding with the colambs out of curioſity, cried out to know it.

Perceiving the ragans ſtill huſh, I roſe; and, beckoning the populace to ſilence, 'Mighty king—you, honour'able colambs—and you, good peo'ple,' ſays I—'for it is to you I now 'ſpeak, hear me with attention. You 'think, perhaps, that the ſuppreſſion 'of the truth by your ragans, '(charged to their teeth by the moſt

'reverend

'reverend of their whole body, whose 'infirmities rendering him unable, 'though his will is good, to declare 'this secret to you) will prevent the 'knowledge of that truth your old 'ragan would have taught; but you 'are mistaken: and that you may 'know I don't come here at a venture 'to try if I can relieve you, but with 'an assurance of doing it if you con-'sent, I must let you know, from me, 'what the ragan would have taught. 'The ragan would have demolished 'this trumpery piece of dirt, this gri-'malkin, set out with horrid face and 'colour to fright children; this, I 'say, he would have demolished, be-'ing assured it could neither do good 'nor hurt, give joy or grief to any 'man, or serve any other purpose 'whatsoever, but to procure a main-'tenance to a set of men who know 'much better than they dare to tell 'you. Can any of you believe this 'stupid piece of earth hears me?' Some of the ragans cried, 'Yes!' 'And that he can revenge any affront 'I shall give him?' Again, 'Yes, to 'be sure!'—'Let him then, if he 'dare,' says I, whipping out my cut-lass, and with the backside of it strik-ing his head off. 'This,' says I, 'O 'glumms, is what the ragan knew, 'and what I defy them to deny. 'Now,' says I, 'I will farther shew 'you, to whom the old ragan would 'have taught you to make your peti-'tions, and pay your adoration; and 'that is to the Supreme Being, Maker 'of heaven and earth, of us and all 'things; who provides for us meat 'and drink, and all things, by causing 'the earth, which he has made, to pro-'duce things necessary for our use. 'That Being whom you have heard 'of by the name of Collwar, and are 'taught at present to be afraid to 'speak to. And I appeal to your own 'hearts, if many of you have ever 'thought of him. Again,' says I; 'let any thing in the shape of man, 'that gives himself leave to consider 'at all, only tell me, if what he can 'make, and does make, with his own 'hands, hath not more occasion to 'depend on him as it's maker, than 'he on that? Why, then, should not 'we depend upon and pray to our 'Maker?

'You very greatly mistake me, O 'glumms,' says I, 'if you imagine I 'would have all those reverend men 'turned out of employment as useless. 'No, I find they know too much of 'what is valuable; and therefore those 'who are willing to continue in the 'service of the mouch, and faithfully 'to teach you the old ragan's doctrine, 'and such farther lights of the great 'Being as they shall hereafter receive, 'let them continue your ragans still; 'and let others be chosen, and trained 'up in that doctrine.'

Here the poor old man got up again with much difficulty. 'Mr. Peter,' says he, 'you are the man predicted 'of; you have declared the old ragan's 'mind, and all my brethren know it.'

Finding I had the populace on my side, (for I did not doubt the king and the colambs) I put the question to the ragans: 'Reverend,' says I, 'you 'see your prediction this day about to 'be fulfilled; for if it is a true one, 'no force of man can withstand it. 'You see your image disgraced; you 'see, and I appeal to you all for the 'truth of it, that what the ragan would 'have taught, has, without your assist-'ance, been disclosed. I therefore 'would have you the first to break the 'bondage of idolatry, and turn to the 'true Collwar, as it will be so much 'glory to you. Will you, and which 'of you, from henceforth serve Coll-'war, and no longer worship an idol? 'Such of you as will do so, let them 'continue in the mouch; if none of 'you will, it shall be my business to 'qualify a sufficient number of true 'ragans to form a succession for that 'purpose. The issue of this great 'affair depends upon your answers.' They waited some time for a spokesman to begin; and so soon as he was able to get up, the poor old ragan said, 'I 'will continue in it, and do all the 'little good I can; and blessed be the 'day this prediction is fulfilled, to 'succeeding generations! I have lived 'long enough, to have seen this.' Then the rest of the ragans, one by one, followed his example. And thus, with prodigious acclamations, both the ragans and people ended the great af-fair of religion.

I now more and more believed the truth of the prediction; and told them I should have occasion for seven hun-dred men before I set out against the

rebels;

rebels; and desired that they might be commanded by Nasgig. This was readily granted. I then told them, as I purposed to act nothing without their concurrence, I desired the colambs would remain in the city till I set out, that they might be readily called together.

I then desired I might be quite private from company till I departed.

I took Nasgig home with me; and, when we came there, 'My dear friend,' says he, 'what have you done to day! 'You have crushed a power hitherto 'immoveable; and I shall never more 'think any thing too difficult for you 'to attempt.'—'Nasgig,' says I, 'I 'am glad it is over. And now,' says I, 'you must enter on a new employ: 'but, first, can you provide me fifty 'honest, faithful glumms, for a parti-'cular expedition? they must be sen-'sible, close, and temporizing.' He said he would, and come to me again.

I then desired a private audience of the king; who, on seeing me, began upon my success at the moucheratt. I told his majesty, if I alone, and a stranger, could gain such influence there, I might have had much more if he had joined me, especially as he had told me he gave no credit to the Image; and that I expected he would have appeared on my side. 'Ah, 'Peter!' says he, 'monarchs neither 'see, hear, nor perceive, with their own 'eyes, ears, or understandings. I would 'willingly have done it; but Barbarsa 'prevented me, by assuring me it would 'be my ruin; and as he is my bosom 'friend, what reproaches must I have 'suffered if it had gone amiss! Nay, 'I will tell you, that he and Nicor 'are of opinion that your coming 'hither, which is looked upon by us 'all as such a blessing, will one day 'undo me: "For," say they, "though "he may perform what you expect "from him, it is not to be supposed "he should suffer it to redound to "you. No," say they, "if he can "do these great things, he can soon "set you aside." Thus, though I 'have no doubt of you, is my spirit 'wasting within me through perpetual 'fears and jealousies; and I cannot 'get these men, who, knowing all my 'secrets, are feared by me, into my own 'way of thinking.'

'Mighty Sir,' says I, 'don't think 'I came hither to possess, but redress 'a kingdom. I lived far more to my 'ease in my grotto, than I can in this 'palace; but I now desire you,' drawing my sword and putting it into his hand, 'to pierce this heart's blood, 'and make yourself easy in my death, 'rather than, suffering me to survive, 'live in distrust of me. No, great 'king,' says I, 'it is not I that would 'injure you; but, though I have been 'so short a time in your dominions, I 'find there are those who would, and 'will too, unless you exert the mo-'narch, and shake off those harpies, 'which lying always at your ear, are 'ever buzzing disquiet and mischief 'to you.'—'Peter,' says he, 'what 'do you mean? sure I have no more 'traitors in my state!'—'Your majesty 'has,' says I. 'How can you prove 'it?' says he. 'But pray inform me 'who they are?'—'I came not hither, 'great king,' says I, 'to turn informer, 'but reformer; and so far as that is 'necessary in order to this, I will give 'you satisfaction. I only desire you 'will wholly guide yourself by my di-'rection for three days, and you shall 'be able to help yourself to all the in-'formation you can require, without 'my telling you. In the mean time, 'appear no more thoughtful than 'usual, or in any other way alter your 'accustomed habits.'

Nasgig having sent me the fifty men, I asked them if they were to be trusted, and if they could carefully and artfully execute a commission I had to charge them with. They assuring me they would, I told them I would let them into my design, which would be the best instructions I could give them, and let the management alone to them.

My confidence in them made them twice as diligent as all the particular directions in the world would have done; so I only told them I had a mind the revolted towns, and also the enemy's army, should know that the person so long ago predicted of was now at Brandleguarp. and had, as the first step towards reducing them, and killing the traitor Harlokin, already altered their religion to the old ragan's plan; and that they had nothing now to expect but destruction to themselves

as ſoon as I appeared againſt them with my unknown fire and ſmoke, which I always had with me; and that the thing was looked upon to be as good as done already at Brandleguarp; and then to ſlip away again unperceived. They all promiſed me exact performance, and went off.

Naſgig then coming in, I told him he was now under my command, and muſt take ſix hundred glumms with him to Graundevolet; tell Youwarkee to ſhew him my ſhip, and then he muſt bring me the things I had deſcribed to her by the name of cannon; he muſt bring them by ropes, as I was brought; and bring powder, which ſhe would direct him to, and about fifty heavy balls which lay in the room with the powder. I told him if he thought he ſhould not have men enough, he muſt take more; and muſt be as expeditious as was conſiſtent with ſafety. I deſired him to tell Youwarkee I hoped in a ſhort time to ſend for her, and all the family, over to me. 'And now, 'Naſgig,' ſays I, 'my orders are 'finiſhed: but,' ſays I, 'the king! I 'muſt aſſiſt that good man. I there-'fore want to know the particular 'times Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe 'uſually meet.'—'That,' ſays he, 'is every night when ſhe is not with 'the king; for he is exceſſive fond of 'her, and ſeldom lies without her; 'but whenever he does, Barbarſa is 'admitted to her.'—'And how can I 'know,' ſays I, 'when ſhe will or 'will not lie with the king?'—'When 'ſhe is to lie with him,' ſays he, 'the 'king never ſups without her.'—'Now,' ſays I, 'you muſt ſhew me 'your lodging, that I may find it in 'your abſence; and give orders to the 'guard to let me, and whoever comes 'with me, enter at any time.' He then took me to his chamber; but I paſſed through ſo many rooms, galleries, and paſſages, that I was ſure I ſhould never find it again, ſo I aſked him if Maleck knew the way; and he aſſuring me he did, I took my leave of him, and he ſet out for Graundevolet.

CHAP. XIII.

THE KING HEARS BARBARSA AND YACCOMBOURSE DISCOURSE ON THE PLOT — THEY ARE IMPEACHED BY PETER AT A MOUCHERATT — CONDEMNED AND EXECUTED — NICOR SUBMITS, AND IS RELEASED.

I Had now ſeveral important irons in the fire, and all to be ſtruck whilſt hot; there was the ſecuring religion, ſowing ſedition amongſt the enemy, tripping up the heels of two miniſters, and a ſhe-favourite, and tranſporting artillery in the air ſome hundred leagues; either of which failing might have been of exceeding bad conſequence: but as the affair of the miniſters now lay next at hand, I entered upon that in the following manner.

The king coming to me the next day, as by appointment; and having aſſured me he had hinted nothing to any one, no, not to Barbarſa or Yaccombourſe, told me that Barbarſa had given orders for ſtopping Naſgig and his men; and had perſuaded him not to be in ſuch haſte in ſuffering me to do as I pleaſed, but to ſhew his authority, and keep me under. Says I, 'Your ma-'jeſty's ſafety is ſo near my heart, 'that even want of confidence in me 'ſhall not make me decline my en-'deavours to ſerve you. But have 'you ſuffered him to ſtop Naſgig?'—'No,' ſays he, 'Naſgig was gone 'ſome time before he ſent.'—'O Sir!' ſays I, 'you do not half know the 'worth of that man! but you ſhall 'hereafter, and will reward him ac-'cordingly. But now, Sir,' ſays I, 'to what we meet upon; if you will, 'as I told you, but comply with me 'for three days, without aſking queſ-'tions, I will ſhew you the greateſt 'traitors in your dominions, and put 'them into your power too.' He promiſed me again he would. 'Then, 'Sir,' ſays I, 'you muſt not ſend to 'Yaccombourſe to ſup with you to-'night.'—'Nor lie with me?'—'No,' ſays I. 'Pray, what hurt can ariſe to 'my affairs from her?' ſays he. 'Sir,' ſays I, 'you promiſed me to aſk no 'queſtions.'—'Agreed, agreed!' ſays he. 'Then,' ſays I, 'pleaſe to meet 'me at Naſgig's lodgings without 'being perceived, if you can; at leaſt 'without notice taken.'—'Good,' ſays he. 'And when you are there, ſee or 'hear what you will, you muſt not ſay 'a word

'a word till you are retired again.' All which the king engaging to perform, we parted till evening.

I called Maleck, and asked if he knew the way to Nasgig's lodging. He told me, very well: and, the time being come, he conducted me thither; where I had not waited long before the king came, most of the court being in bed. I desired the king to stay in the outer room till I went into the bed-chamber two or three times, and I thought we must have put it off till another night: but listening once again, I found they were come; so I called the king, and led him to the place; intreating him, whatever he heard, to keep his patience, or he would ruin all. We first heard much amorous discourse between Barbarsa and Yaccombourse, and then the ensuing dialogue.

YAC. 'My dearest Barbarsa, what 'was all that uproar at the moucheratt 'the other day?'

BAR. 'Nothing, my love, but that 'mad fellow Peter, who sets up for a 'conjuror, and wants us all to dance 'to his pipe.'

YAC. 'I heard he overcame the 'ragans at an argument about the 'Image.'

BAR. 'Why, I don't know how 'that was; but it was the doating old 'ragan did their business; and truly 'the king's fingers itched to be on 'Peter's side, but I gave him a judi-'cious nod, and you know he durst 'not displease so dear a friend as I 'am; ha, ha, ha! Am not I a sad 'fellow, my love, to talk so of my 'king?'

YAC. 'He that wants but one step 'to a throne, is almost a king's fel-'low.'

BAR. 'And that but a short one 'too, my dear Yaccee; but I must get 'rid of that Nasgig, though I think I 'have almost spoiled him with the king, 'too. I don't love your thinking 'rascals; that fellow thinks more than 'I do, Yaccee.'

YAC. 'He'll never think to so good 'purpose, I believe: but how goes 'cousin Harlokin on? I find Gauin-'grunt is gone over.'

BAR. 'And so shall Bazin, Istell, 'Pezele, and Ginkatt too, my dear; 'for I am at work there—And then 'good night, my poor King Georigetti; 'thou shalt be advised to fly, and I'll 'keep the throne warm for thee.—I 'don't see but King Barbarsa, and 'Queen Yaccombourse, found much 'better than Georigetti. Well, my 'dear, whenever we come to sove-'reignty, which now cannot be long, 'if Nicor has but played his part well, 'for I have not had an account of his 'success yet; I say, when we come 'into power, never let us be above 'minding our own affairs, or suffer 'ourselves to be led by the nose, as 'this poor insignificant king does. 'For, in short, he may as well be a 'king of matts, as a king of flesh, if 'he will not use his faculties, but 'suffer me to make a fool of him thus; 'and I should be a fool indeed to neg-'lect it, when he thinks it the great-'est piece of service I can do him.'

YAC. 'Come, come, my dear! let 'us enjoy ourselves like king and 'queen till we come to the dignity.'

Finding a pause, the king, who had admirably kept his temper, even beyond imagination, stole into the outer room. 'Peter,' says he, 'I thank 'you, you have shewn me myself. 'What fools are we kings! In en-'deavouring to make others happy, 'how miserable do we make ourselves! 'How easily are we deceived by the 'designing flattery of those below us! '—Ungrateful villain!—Degenerate 'strumpet—I hate you both.—Peter,' says he, 'give me your sword; I'll de-'stroy them both immediately.'

'Hold, Sir,' says I, 'your majesty 'has heard sufficient to found a true 'judgment upon; but kings should 'not be executioners, or act by passion 'and revenge; but as you would 'punish that in others, so carefully 'avoid it yourself. You, who are in 'so exalted a station, as always to have 'it in your power to punish a known 'crime in individuals, have not that 'necessity to prompt you to a violent 'act, that private persons have, to 'whom it may be difficult to obtain 'justice. Therefore, my advice is, that 'you summon the colambs to-mor-'row; when Barbarsa and Nicor can-'not fail to attend; and I would also 'desire Yaccombourse to be there, you 'having great proposals to make to 'the states which you shall want her 'to hear. I will in the mean time 'prepare the servants under Quilly,

'and order Maleck with another poſſe 'to attend, as by your command, to 'execute your orders given by me; 'and I myſelf will impeach thoſe bad 'perſons in publick; and Nicor, if he 'will not ingenuouſly confeſs what 'commiſſion he was charged with from 'Barbarſa, ſhall be put to the torture 'I direct, till he diſcovers it.'

The king was very well pleaſed with this method; ſo I ordered Quilly, as from the king, to bring all my ſervants to the aſſembly, appointing him his place; and Maleck to ſelect me fifty ſtout perſons, and to wait to execute my orders on a ſignal given. So ſoon as the aſſembly met, I told them, ſince I had concerned myſelf in their affairs, I had made it my buſineſs to ſearch into the cauſe of their calamities; and finding ſome of the traitors were now approached not only near to, but even into, the capital city, his majeſty had therefore ordered me to aſk their advice, what puniſhment was adequate, in their judgments, to the crime of conſpiring againſt him and the ſtate, and holding treaſonable correſpondence with his enemies, under the ſhew of his greateſt friends.

I ſtopped, and looked at Barbarſa; he turned as pale as aſhes, and was riſing to ſpeak; when the ſenior colamb declared, if any ſuch thing could be made appear, the common puniſhment of Craſhdoorpt was too trivial; but they deſerved to be dropt alive either to hoximo or Mount Alkoe. The ſeveral colambs all declaring the ſame to be their judgment, and even thoſe to be too mild for their deſerts, I then ſtepped up to Barbarſa, who ſat at the king's left-hand, as did Yaccombourſe at his right, and telling them and Nicor they were all priſoners of ſtate, I delivered Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe in cuſtody to Quilly and his men, and Nicor to Maleck and his men; ordering them into ſeparate apartments, with ſtrict commands that neither ſhould ſpeak to the other upon pain of the laſt pronounced judgment.

Barbarſa would have ſpoke, and called out to the king, begging him not to deſert ſo faithful a ſervant for the inſinuations of ſo vile a man as Peter; but the king only told him the vile man could be made appear preſently, and he hoped he would meet his deſerts.

I then ſtood up, and told the aſſembly the whole of what we heard, how it firſt came to be diſcovered, and that the king himſelf had been an ear-witneſs of it; which the king confirming, the whole aſſembly rang with confuſion; and revenge and indignation appeared in every face.

I then propoſed, as we yet knew not what that ſecret commiſſion was which Nicor was charged with, having enough againſt the reſt, that Nicor might be brought forth; and, upon refuſal to anſwer, be put to the torture.

Nicor appearing before the aſſembly, I told him I was commanded by the king to aſk him what commiſſion he was charged with by Barbarſa, and to whom. I told him the ſafeſt way for his life, his honour, and his country, was to make a true confeſſion at firſt, or I had authority to put him to the torture: for, as for ſlitting and baniſhment, as they were too ſlight to atone for this offence, he might reſt ſatisfied his would be of another ſort, if he heſitated at delivering the thing in it's full truth.

My prelude terrifying him, he openly confeſſed that his laſt commiſſion was to ſeveral towns, as from the king, and with his gripſack, to order their ſubmiſſion to Harlokin, the king not being in any condition to relieve them; and that as ſoon as they had ſubmitted, Harlokin would be let into this city, which could not ſtand againſt him.

He alſo declared, that it had been agreed, and the boundaries ſettled, how far Barbarſa, who was to be declared king, and marry Yaccombourſe, ſhould govern, and how far Harlokin; that Barbarſa was to be ſtiled King of the Eaſt, and Harlokin King of the Weſt; and that either of them, on the other's dying childleſs, was to inherit the whole monarchy.

The king declaring this to be all true, and that by my procurement he heard it all mentioned but the laſt night between Barbarſa and Yaccombourſe, as they were ſolacing themſelves in bed, the whole aſſembly ordered them to be brought out, carried with cords about their necks, and precipitated into Mount Alkoe.

I then begged they might be ſuffered to ſpeak for themſelves before execution; and, acquainting them ſeverally with the evidence, I firſt aſked

Barbarſa

Barbarſa what he had to ſay againſt his ſentence. He declared, his ambition, and the eaſineſs of his maſter's temper, had inſtigated him to attempt what had been charged upon him; having, as he thought, a fair opportunity of ſo doing. I then aſked Yaccombourſe the ſame queſtion; ſhe anſwered me, her ambition had been her ſole governor from a child, and I had done my worſt in preventing the progreſs of that; and whatever elſe I could do was not worth her notice: 'But to 'have reigned,' ſays ſhe, with ſome emotion, 'was worth the lives of 'millions, and over-balanced every 'thing!'

I pleaded hard for Nicor, as I perceived him to be only the favourite's favourite, and not in the ſcrape for his own views, more than what he might merit from his new maſter; and as he had declared the truth, and I believed I might make farther uſe of him, I obtained that he might be only committed to me, and that I might have liberty of pardoning or ſlitting as I ſaw fit: and, as I expected, he afterwards proved very uſeful to me and my deſigns, and I pardoned him.

Before the aſſembly roſe, a party of the natives of Mount Alkoe were ordered to convey Yaccombourſe and Barbarſa to the mountain, ſlip their graundees, and drop them there: and thus ended the lives of theſe two aſpiring perſons.

When I came home, I called Nicor before me—'You know,' ſays I, 'Ni-'cor, you are obliged to me for this 'moment of your life; but I don't 'remind you of it for any return I 'want to myſelf; but as you are ſenſi-'ble my endeavours are to ſerve this 'ſtate, I offer you life and freedom 'upon condition you employ your ut-'moſt diligence to repair your paſt 'conduct, by a free declaration of 'every thing in your power that may 'be for the benefit of the kingdom, 'as you know the ſprings by which 'all theſe bad movements have been 'ſet at work: and I deſire your opinion 'how beſt to counteract the ſchemes 'formed, and redreſs the evils.'

Nicor being fully convinced of his error, and having loſt his patron, was very ſubmiſſive; and declared he believed none of the provinces would have gone over to Harlokin, unleſs they had thought it was the king's order Barbarſa had acted by, which, by hearing his gripſack, they made no doubt of. He adviſed to ſend expreſſes with the king's gripſack to ſuch places as had lately ſubmitted, and to ſuch as were about it, to put a ſtop to them. I told him I had done that; 'But not 'by the gripſack,' ſays he; 'and un-'leſs they ſee and hear that, they will 'give no credit to the meſſage.' He then gave me ſome particular hints in other affairs of no mean conſequence: and ſeeing him truly under concern, and, to my thinking, ſincere in what he ſaid, I told him I was an abſolute enemy to confinement, and if any perſon of repute would engage he ſhould be forthcoming upon all occaſions, that I might have recourſe to him, I would let him have his liberty.

Poor Nicor, as it commonly happens to great men in diſgrace, finding himſelf abandoned by all his friends, after trying every body, dropping ſome tears, told me next morning he was highly ſenſible of what a dye his offences had been, for that not one amongſt all his former friends would even look upon him in his preſent circumſtances, wherefore he muſt ſubmit to fate.

Nicor having borne a good character before ſeduced by Barbarſa, and knowing that an obliged enemy often becomes the ſincereſt friend, I preſſed him again to try his friends. He told me every body was ſhy of engaging in ſuch an affair; and that he had rather ſuffer himſelf, than meanly to intreat any one into an unwilling compliance. 'Come, Nicor,' ſays I, 'will you be 'your own ſecurity to me? May I take 'your own word?' He ſaid he could not expect that; for as the terror of ſlitting lay over him, and in my hands too, he could not anſwer but he might deceive me in caſe he ſhould conceive I had a deſign againſt him; which I myſelf, too, might have from a miſtaken motive.

'Why, then, Nicor,' ſays I, 'you 'are free; now uſe your own diſcre-'tion. I think you will never cauſe 'my judgment to be impeached for 'what I have done; but if you do, 'I can't condemn myſelf for it, and 'hope I ſhall have no reaſon to re-'pent it.'

Nicor fell at my feet, embraced them, and was ſo overcome with my generoſity

ſity to him, that I could with difficulty prevail on him to riſe again; ſaying he was now, more than ever, aſhamed to ſee my face. I told him I had not done with him, but would uſe him henceforth as my friend; and ordered him to call upon me daily, for I might have ſeveral occaſions for him; and, truly, next to Naſgig, he proved the uſefulleſt man in the kingdom.

CHAP. XIV.

NASGIG RETURNS WITH THE CANNON—PETER INFORMS HIM OF THE EXECUTION—APPOINTS HIM A GUARD—SETTLES THE ORDER OF HIS MARCH AGAINST HARLOKIN—COMBAT BETWEEN NASGIG AND THE REBEL-GENERAL—THE BATTLE—PETER RETURNING WITH HARLOKIN'S HEAD, IS MET BY A SWEECOAN—A PUBLICK FESTIVAL—SLAVERY ABOLISHED.

THE tenth day Naſgig arrived, whilſt I happened to be in the king's garden; and hearing the trumpet coming before, I called out to him, to give Naſgig notice where I was, and to deſire him to alight there.

After ceremonies paſt, and I had enquired after my w fe and children, and his anſwers had informed me of their healths—'Well,' ſays Naſgig, 'my friend, am I to live or die?'—'Explain yourſelf,' ſays I. 'Nay, I 'only mean,' ſays he, 'have you diſ-'covered me to the king?'—'Pardon 'me,' ſays I, 'dear Naſgig, I muſt 'own the truth; I have.'—'Then,' ſays he, 'I ſuppoſe his majeſty has no 'more commands for me?'—'No,' ſays I, 'it is not ſo bad as that nei-'ther.'—'But, pray,' ſays he, 'what 'ſays Barbarſa to it?'—'O nothing 'at all!' ſays I; 'quite quiet.'—'Nor 'Yaccombourſe? Did you diſcover her 'baſeneſs to the king?'—'Yes,' ſays I; 'and the king behaved like a king 'upon the occaſion.'—'And where 'are they now?' ſays he. 'Only in 'Mount Alkoe,' ſays I. 'Mount Al-'koe!' replies he, 'what do you mean 'by that? How can they be in Mount 'Alkoe? Did they go of their own 'accords?'—'They fled off, I ſup-'poſe, with ropes about their necks,' ſays I, 'as your criminals go to Craſh-'doorpt.'—'Are they ſlit, too?' ſays he. 'No,' ſays I, 'but ſlipt, I'll 'aſſure you. Come, my good friend, 'I'll let you into the hiſtory of it.' And then I told all that had happened, and the king's ſatisfaction at the judgment of the moucheratt. 'And now,' ſays I, 'Naſgig, you may call your-'ſelf the favourite, I promiſe you; 'for his majeſty enjoys himſelf but 'to greet you on your return: but 'have a care of power; moſt grow 'giddy with it, and the next thing to 'that is a fall.'—'Pray,' ſays he, 'what is become of Nicor? Is he un-'der the ſame condemnation?'—'No,' ſays I, 'Nicor is now by my means 'abſolutely free; and no two greater 'than he and I.' I told him then my proceedings with him: he was glad of it; for, he ſaid, Nicor he believed was honeſt at bottom.

By this time up came the cannon; and, truly, had my countrymen but the graundee to convey their cannon at ſo eaſy an expence from place to place, the whole world would not ſtand before us. They brought me five cannon, and three ſwivel guns, and a larger quantity of ammunition than I had ſpoken for.

I introduced Naſgig to the king upon his return, as the perſon to whoſe conduct the ſafe arrival of my cannon was owing. His majeſty embracing him, told him the ſervice he had done him was ſo great in the affair of Barbarſa, and his management of it ſo prudent, he ſhould from thenceforth take him into his peculiar confidence and eſteem.

Naſgig thanked his majeſty for his acceptance of that act of his duty; and deſired to know when he pleaſed the operations for the campaign ſhould begin. 'Aſk my father,' ſays the king: 'do you conduct the war, and 'let him conduct you.'

Then Naſgig deſired to know what number of troops would be requiſite. I aſked him what number the enemy had: he ſaid, about thirty thouſand. 'Then,' ſays I, 'take you ſix only, 'beſides the bearers of me and the 'artillery; and pick me out fifty of 'the beſt men you have, as a guard for 'my perſon, and ſend them to me.'

I ſhewed theſe men my cutlaſſes and piſtols, and ſhewed them the uſe and management

management of them; 'And,' says I, 'as our enemies fight with pikes, keep 'you at a distance first; and when you 'would assault, toss by the pike with 'your hand, and closing in, have at 'the graundee; and this edge,' (shewing them the sharpness of it) 'will 'strip it down from shoulder to heel; 'you need strike but once for it; but 'be sure come near enough: or,' says I, 'if you find it difficult to turn aside 'the pike, give it one smart stroke 'with this, it will cut it in two, and 'then the point being gone, it will be 'useless.

'These instructions,' says I, 'if 'rightly observed, will make us con-'querors.'

The next thing was to settle the order of my march, which I did in the following manner; and, taking leave of the king, I set out.

First, Ten companies of one hundred men, including officers, with each a gripsack, in ten double lines, fifty abreast.

Secondly, Four hundred bearers of the cannon, with two hundred to the right, the like to the left, as relays.

Thirdly, Two hundred men with the ammunition, stores, hatchets, and other implements.

Fourthly, Fifty body-guards, in two lines.

Fifthly, Myself, borne by eight; with twelve on the right, and as many on the left, for relays.

Sixthly, Two thousand men in columns, on each side the cannon and me; fifty in a line, double lines.

Seventhly, One thousand men in the rear, fifty in a line, double lines.

I consulted with Nasgig, how Harlokin's army lay, that I might avoid the revolted towns, rather chusing to take them in my return; for my design was to encounter Harlokin first; and I did not doubt if I conquered him, but the towns would surrender of course.

When we arrived within a small flight of his army, I caused a halt at a proper place for my cannon; and having pitched them, which I did by several flat stones, one on another to a proper elevation; I loaded them, and also my small arms, consisting of six muskets, and three brace of pistols; and placing my army, two thousand just behind me, two thousand to my right, and the same number to my left; I gave a strict command for none of them to stir forwards without orders; which Nasgig, who stood just behind me, was to give. I then sent a defiance to Harlokin by a gripsack; who sent me word, he fought for a kingdom, and would accept it; and, as I heard afterwards, he was glad I did; for since the intelligence I had scattered in his army, they had in great numbers deserted him, and he was afraid it would have proved general. I then putting the end of a match into a pistol-pan with a little powder, by flashing, lighted it; and this I put under my chair, for I sat in that, with my muskets three on each side, a pistol in my right-hand, and five more in my girdle. In this manner I waited Harlokin's coming, and in about an hour we saw the van of his army, consisting of about five thousand men, who flew in five layers, one over another. I had not loaded my cannon with ball, but small sized stones, about sixty in each; and seeing the length of their line, I spread my cannons mouths somewhat wider than their breeches, and then taking my observation by a bright star, for there was a clear dawn all round the horizon, I observed, as I retired to my chair, how that star answered to the elevation of my cannon; and when the foremost ranks, who, not seeing my men stir, were approaching almost over me to to fall on them, and had come to my pitch, I fired two pieces of my ordnance at once, and so mauled them, that there dropped about ninety upon the first discharge, together with their commander; the rest, being in flight, and so close together, not being able to turn fast enough to fly, being stopped by those behind them, not only hindered those behind from turning about, but clogged up their own passage. Seeing them in such a prodigious cluster, I so successfully fired two more pieces, that I brought down double the number of the first shot; and then giving the word to fall on, my cutlass-guard, and the pikemen, did prodigious execution. But fearing the main body should advance before we had got in order again, I commanded them to fall back to their former stations, and to let the remainder of the enemy go off.

This did me more good in the event, than if I had killed twice as many;

for

for they not only never returned themſelves, but flying ſome to the right, ſome to the left, and paſſing by the two wings of their own army, conſiſting of ſix thouſand men each, they ſeverally reported, that they were all that was left of the whole van of the army; and that the prediction would certainly be fulfilled, for that their companions had died by fire and ſmoke. This report ſtruck ſuch terror into each wing, that every one ſhifted for himſelf, and never appeared more.

The main battle conſiſting of about ten thouſand men, knowing nothing of what had happened to the wings, (for Harlokin had ordered the wings to take a great compaſs round to incloſe us) hearing we were but a handful, advanced boldly; and as I had ordered my men not to mount too high, the enemy ſunk to their pitch. When they came nearer, I aſked Naſgig who led them, and if it was Harlokin. He told me no, his general, but that he was behind; and Naſgig, begging me to let him try his ſkill with the general, I conſented, they not being yet come to the pitch of my cannon. Naſgig immediately took the graundee, and advancing ſingly with one of my cutlaſſes in his hand, challenged the general in ſingle combat. He like a man of honour, accepting it, ordered a halt, and to it they went, each emulous of glory, and of taking all the advantage he could, ſo that they ſuddenly did not ſtrike or puſh; but ſometimes one, then the other, was uppermoſt, and whirling expeditiouſly round, met almoſt breaſt to breaſt; when the general, who had not a pike, but a pike-ſtaff, headed with a large ſtone, gave Naſgig ſuch a ſtroke on his head, that he reeled and ſunk conſiderably; and I began to be in pain for him, the general lowering after him. But Naſgig ſpringing forward beneath him, and riſing light as air behind the general, had gained his height again before the general could turn about to diſcern him; and then plunging forward, and receiving a ſtroke acroſs his left-arm, at the ſame time he gave the general ſuch a blow near the out-ſide of the ſhoulder, as ſlit the graundee almoſt down to his hip, and took away part of the fleſh of the left-arm; upon which the general fell fluttering down in vaſt pain, very near me; but not before Naſgig, in his fall, deſcending, had taken another ſevere cut at him.

Immediately upon this defeat, Naſgig again took his place behind me; our army ſhouting to the ſkies: but no ſooner had the general dropt, but on came Harlokin, with majeſty and terror mixt in his looks; and ſeeming to diſdain the air he rode on, waved his men to the attack with his hand. When he came near enough to hear me, I called him vile traitor, to oppoſe the army of his lawful ſovereign; telling him, if he would ſubmit, he ſhould be received to mercy. 'Baſe 'creeping inſect!' ſays Harlokin, 'if 'thou haſt aught to ſay to me worth 'hearing, meet me in the air? This 'hand ſhall ſhew thee ſoon who'll 'moſt want mercy: and though I 'ſcorn to ſtoop to thee myſelf, this 'meſſenger ſhall ſatisfy the world 'thou art an impoſtor, and ſend thee 'lifeleſs back to the fond king that 'ſent thee hither.' With that he hurled a javelin pointed with flint, ſharp as a needle at me; but I avoiding it, 'This, then,' ſays I, 'if words will not 'do, ſhall juſtify the truth of our pre-'diction.' And then levelling a muſket at him, I ſhot him through the very heart, that he fell dead within twenty paces of me; but perceiving another to take his room, notwithſtanding the confuſion my muſket made amongſt them, I ran to my match, and giving fire to two more pieces of ordnance at the ſame time, they fell ſo thick about me, that I had enough to do to eſcape being cruſhed to death by them; and the living remainder ſeparating, fled quite away, and put an end to the war. I waited in the field three days, to ſee if they would make head again; but they were ſo far from it, that before I could return, as I found afterwards, moſt of the revolting provinces had ſent their deputies, who themſelves carried the firſt news of the defeat, to beg to be received into mercy; all of whom were detained there, till my return with Harlokin's head.

At my return to Brandleguarp, I was met by the king, the colambs, and almoſt the whole body of the people; every man, woman, and child, with two ſweecoe lights in their hands; which unuſual ſight in the air, gave me great alarm, till I enquired of Naſgig what it meant; who told me it

muſt

Stothard del: Walker Sculp.

Plate III. Published as the Act directs, by Hamilton & Co. Aug. 16, 1783.

must certainly be a sweecoan, or he knew not what it was. I asking again what he meant by that, he told me it was a particular method of rejoicing he had heard of, but never seen; wherein, if the king goes in triumph, all the people of Brandleguarp, from fifteen to sixty, are obliged to attend him with sweecoes. He said, it was reported amongst them, that in Begsurbeck's time there were two of them, but there had been none since.

When we met them, I perceived they had opened into two lines or ranks of a prodigious length; at the farther end of which was the king with innumerable lights about him; the whole looked like a prodigious avenue or visto of lights, bounded at the farther end where the king was, with a pyramid of light. This had the most solemn and magnificent effect on the eye, that any thing of light could possibly have; but as we passed through the ranks, each of the spectators having two lights, one was given to each soldier of the whole army. And then to look backward, as well as forward, the beauty of the scene was inexpressible. We marched all the way amidst the shouts of people, and the sound of the gripsacks, going very slowly between the ranks; and at length arriving at the pyramid, where the king was, I heard abundance of sweet voices, chaunting my actions in triumphal songs: but I could take little notice of these, or of my son with his flagellet amongst them, for the extravagant appearance of the pyramid, which seemed to reach the very sky. For, first, there was a long line of a full half mile, which hovered at even height with the two side ranks; in the centre of that, and over it, was the king single; over him, another line, shorter than the first, and again over that, shorter and shorter lines; till, at a prodigious height, it ended in one single light. These all hovering, kept their stations; while the king darted a little space forward to meet me, and congratulate my success; then turning, and preceding me, the whole pyramid turned, and marched before us, singing all the way, to the city; the pyramid changing several times into divers forms, as into squares, half-moons, with the horns sometimes erect, and again reversed, and various other figures; and yet amongst this infinite number of globes, there was not the least glaring or offensive light; but only what was agreeable to the people themselves. As the rear of the army entered the lines, they closed upon it, and followed us into Brandleguarp. While we passed the city to the palace, the whole body of people kept hovering, till the king and myself were alighted; and then every one alighted where he best could. All the streets and avenues to the palace were blocked up with people, crouding to receive the king's beneficence; for he had proclaimed a feast, and open house-keeping to the people for six days. The king, the colambs, ragans, and great officers of state, with myself, had a magnificent entertainment prepared us in Begsurbeck's great room; and his majesty, after supper, being very impatient to know how the battle went, I told him, the only valorous exploit was performed by my friend Nasgig, who opened the way to victory, by the slaughter of Harlokin's general. Nasgig then rose, desiring only that so much might be attributed to him, as fortune had accidentally thrown into his scale; for it might have been equally his fate, as the general's, to have fallen: 'But except that skirmish,' says he, 'and 'some flying cuts at the van, we have 'had no engagement at all, nor have 'we lost a single man; Peter only sitting in his chair, and commanding 'victory: he spake aloud but thrice, 'and whispered once to them; but so 'powerfully, that having at the two 'first words laid above three hundred 'of the enemy at their lengths, and 'brought Harlokin to his feet, with a 'whisper, at the third word he concluded the war. The whole time, 'from the first sight of the enemy to 'their total defeat, took not up more 'space than one might fairly spend in 'traversing his majesty's garden. In 'short, Sir,' says Nasgig, 'your majesty needs no other defence against 'publick or private enemies, as I can 'see, than Peter; and my profession, 'whilst he is with us, can be of little 'use to the state.'

After these compliments from Nasgig, and separate ones from the king, and the rest, I told them, it was the highest felicity to me to be made an instrument by the great Collwar, in free-

ing so mighty a kingdom and considerable a people from the misery of a tyrannical power. 'You live,' says I, 'so happily, under the mild government of Georigetti, that it is shocking but to think into what a distressed state you must have fallen under the power of an usurper, who claiming all as his own by way of conquest, would have reduced you to a miserable servitude. But,' says I, 'there is, and I am sorry to see it, still amongst you, an evil that you great ones feel not, and yet it cries for redress. Are we not all, from the king to the meanest wretch amongst us, formed with the same members? Do we not all breathe the same air? inhabit the same earth? Are we not all subject to the same disorders? and do we not all feel pain and oppression alike? Have we not all the same senses, the same faculties? and, in short, are we not all equally creatures of, and servants to, the same master, the great Collwar? Would not the king have been a slave, but for the accident of being begotten by one who was a king? and would not the poorest creature amongst us have been the king had he been so begotten? Did you great men, by any superior merit before your births, procure a title to the high stations in which you are placed? No, you did not. Therefore give me leave to tell you what I would have done. As every man has equal right to the protection of Collwar, why, when you have no enemy to distress you, will you distress one another? Consider, you great ones, and act upon this disinterested principle; do to another, what you, in his place, would have him do to you: dismiss your slaves, let all men be what Collwar made them, free. But if this unequal distinction amongst you, of man and man, is still retained, though you are at present free from the late disaster, it shall be succeeded with more, and heavier. And now, that you may know I would not have every man a lord, nor every one a beggar, remember, I would only have every serving-man at liberty to chuse his own master, and every master his own man: for he that has property and benefits to bestow, will never want dependants, for the sake of those benefits, to serve him, as he that has them not must serve for the sake of obtaining them. But then let it be done with free-will; he that then serves you will have an interest in it, and do it, for his own sake, with a willing mind; and you, who are served, will be tenderer and kinder to a good servant, as knowing by a contrary usage you shall lose him. I desire this may now be declared to be so, or your reasons, if any there are, against it.'

One of the ragans said, he thought I spoke what was very just, and would be highly acceptable to Collwar.

Then two of the colambs rose to speak together, and after a short compliment who should begin, they both declared they only rose to testify their consents.

The king referring it to me, and the colambs consenting, I ordered freedom to be proclaimed through the city; so that every one appeared at their usual duties, to serve their own masters for a month, and then to be at liberty to come to fresh agreement with them, or who else they pleased.

'This, Sir,' says I, to the king, 'will now be a day of joy indeed, to those poor hearts who would have been in no fear of losing before, let who would have reigned; for can any man believe a slave cares who is uppermost? he is but a slave still. But now,' says I, 'those who were so before, may by industry gain property; and then their own interest engages them to defend the state.

'There is but one thing more I will trouble you with now—and that,' says I to the ragans, 'is, that we all meet at the mouch to-morrow, to render Collwar thanks for the late, and implore future, favour.' And this passed without any contradiction.

When we met, the poor ragans were at a great loss for want of their Image, not knowing what to do or say: for their practice had been to prostrate themselves on the ground, making several odd gestures; but whether they prayed, or only seemed to do so, no one knew.

While the people were gathering, I called to a ragan, seeing him out of character. 'Suppose,' said I, '(for I see you want your image) you and your

'your brethren had received a favour 'of the king, and you was deputed 'by them to thank him, you would 'ſcarce be at a loſs to expreſs your 'gratitude to him, and tell him how 'highly you all eſteemed his benefits, 'hoping you ſhould retain a juſt ſenſe 'of them, and behave yourſelves as 'dutiful ſubjects for the future; and 'then deſire him to keep you ſtill in 'his protection. And this,' ſays I, 'as you believe in ſuch a Being as 'Collwar, who underſtands what you 'ſay, you may with equal courage do 'to him, keeping but your mind in-'tent upon him, as if you ſaw him 'preſent.'—'Indeed,' ſays he, 'I be-'lieve you are right; we may ſo: but 'it is a new thing, and you muſt ex-'cuſe us if we do it not ſo well at 'firſt.'

I found I had a very apt ſcholar, for after he had began, he made a moſt extraordinary prayer in regular order, the people ſtanding very attentive. It was not long, but he juſtly obſerved the points I hinted to him.

When he had done, another and another went on, till we had heard ten of them, and in every one ſomething new, and very *a-propos*; and ſeveral of them afterwards confeſſed, they never had the like ſatisfaction in their lives, for they had new hearts and new thoughts, they ſaid.

We ſpent the ſixth-day feaſt in every gaiety imaginable, and eſpecially in dancing, of which they were very fond, in their way; but it was not ſo agreeable to me as my own country way, there being too much antick in it. New deputies daily arrived from the revolted towns; and ſeveral little republicks, not claimed by Georigetti before, begged to be taken under his protection; ſo that, in one week, the king ſaw himſelf not only releaſed from the dread of being driven from his throne, but courted by ſome, ſubmitted to by others, and almoſt at the ſummit of glory a ſovereign can attain to.

CHAP. XV.

A VISITATION OF THE REVOLTED PROVINCES PROPOSED BY PETER—HIS NEW NAME OF THE COUNTRY RECEIVED — RELIGION SETTLED IN THE WEST—SLAVERY ABOLISHED THERE—LASMEEL RETURNS WITH PETER—PETER TEACHES HIM LETTERS—THE KING SURPRIZED AT WRITTEN CORRESPONDENCE—PETER DESCRIBES THE MAKE OF A BEAST TO THE KING.

THE feſtival being over, the colambs begged leave to depart; but the king, who now did nothing without me, conſulted with me, if it was yet proper. I told him, as things had ſo long been in confuſion in the weſt, that though the provinces had made their ſubmiſſion, yet the neceſſity of their circumſtances, and the general terror, might have cauſed them only to diſſemble till their affairs were compoſed again; and that as it was more than probable ſome relations of the deceaſed Harlokin, or other popular perſon, might engage them again in another revolt, I thought it would not be improper to adviſe with his colambs about the eſtabliſhment of the preſent tranquillity, and not by too great a ſecurity give way to future commotions; and as all the colambs were then preſent, it might be proper to ſummon them once more.

When they were met, the king declared the more particular ſatisfaction he took in that meeting than he had heretofore done, when they had been put to it for means to ſecure their lives and properties: 'For now,' ſays he, 'our deliberations muſt turn upon ſe-'curing our new acquiſitions, and on 'ſettling thoſe provinces which, till 'now, have never fallen under my 'power. But,' ſays he, 'I ſhall re-'fer it to Peter to propoſe to you what 'at preſent ſeems moſt neceſſary for 'you to conſider of; and, that adjuſt-'ed, ſhall diſmiſs you.'

I told them, that as the too ſudden healing of wounds in the body natural, before the bottom was clean and uncorrupt, made them liable to break out again with greater malignity, ſo wounds in the body political, if ſkinned over only, without probing and cleanſing the ſource and ſpring from whence they aroſe, would rankle and fret within, till a proper opportunity, and then burſt forth again with redoubled violence. I would therefore propoſe a viſitation of the ſeveral provinces;

an enquiry into their conduct; an examination into the lives and principles of the colambs, the inferior officers, and magiſtrates; and either to retain the old, or appoint new, as there ſhould be occaſion. 'This viſitation I 'would have performed by his maje-'ſty—and ſo many of you the honour-'able colambs,' ſays I, 'as he ſhall 'ſee fit ſhould attend him in royal 'ſtate, that his new ſubjects may ſee 'his majeſty, and hear his moſt gra-'cious words; and being ſenſible of 'his good diſpoſition towards them, 'may be won by his equity and juſ-'tice, to a zealous ſubmiſſion to his 'government, which nothing but the 'perception of their own ſenſes can 'eſtabliſh in the heart. This, I don't 'doubt, will anſwer the end I pro-'poſe, and conſolidate the peace and 'happineſs of Norm— Normus— I 'muſt ſay Doorpt Swangeanti.'

Hearing me heſitate at the word Normnbdſgrſutt, and call it Doorpt Swangeanti, the whole aſſembly rang with 'Doorpt Swangeanti!' and, at laſt, came to a reſolution that the weſt being now united again to the eaſt, the whole dominions ſhould be called Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti, or the Great Flight Land.

They approved the viſitation, and all offered to go with the king, but inſiſted I ſhould be of the party; which agreeing to do, I choſe me out two of the moſt knowing ragans, to teach the new religion amongſt them; for in every project I had my view to advance religion.

Some were for having the deputies releaſed, and diſpatched with notice of the king's intentions; but I objecting, that they might diſreliſh their confinement, and poſſibly raiſe reports prejudicial to our proceedings, it was thought better to take them with us, and go ourſelves as ſoon as poſſible.

We ſet out with a prodigious retinue, firſt to the right, in order to ſweep round the whole country, and take all the towns in our way, and occaſionally enter the middle parts, as the towns lay commodious.

We were met by the magiſtrates and chief officers of each diſtrict, at ſome diſtance from each city, with ſtrings about their necks, and the craſhee inſtrument borne before them in much humility. His majeſty ſaid but little to them on the way, but ordered them to precede him to the city, and conduct him to the colamb's houſe; when he was commanded to ſurrender his employment to his majeſty, as did all the other officers who held poſts under him. Then an examination was taken of their lives, characters, and behaviour in their ſtations; and finding moſt of them had behaved well to the government they had lived under, (for their plea was, they had found things under an uſurpation, and being ſo, that government was natural to them, having ſingly no power to alter it;) upon their perfect ſubmiſſion to the king, and ſolemn engagement to advance and maintain his right, they received their commiſſions anew from his majeſty's own mouth. But where any one had been cruel or oppreſſive to the ſubjects, or committed any notorious crime, or breach of truſt, (for the meaneſt perſons had liberty to complain) he was rejected, and for the moſt part ſent to Craſhdoorpt, to prevent the ill effects of his diſgrace.

We having diſplaced but five colambs, and a few inferior officers, the moderation and juſtice of our proceedings gave the utmoſt ſatisfaction both to the magiſtrates and people.

Having obſerved at Brandleguarp abundance of the ſmall images my wife had ſpoken of, and thinking this a proper opportunity to ſhew my reſentment againſt them, I ordered ſeveral of the ragans of the weſt before me, and aſked what ſmall images they had amongſt them. One, who ſpoke for the reſt, told me, very few, he believed; for he had ſcarce had any brought to him to be bleſſed. 'Where,' ſays I, 'is 'your Great Image?' He told me, 'At 'Youk.'—'And have not the people 'here many ſmall ones?'—'Very 'few,' ſays he; 'for they have not 'been forced upon us long.'—'How 'forced upon you?' ſays I; 'don't 'the people worſhip them?'—'A 'ſmall number now do,' ſays he. 'Pray ſpeak out,' ſays I. 'When 'might you not worſhip them?'— 'Never, that I know of,' ſays he, 'in our ſtate, till about ten years ago, 'when Harlokin obliged us to it.'— 'What, did you not worſhip them 'before?' ſays I. 'No,' ſays he, 'never ſince it has been a ſeparate 'kingdom; for we would follow the

'old

'old ragan's advice of worſhipping 'Collwar, which they not admitting 'of, the ſtate was divided between us 'who would, and them who would 'not, come into the ragan's doctrine: 'and though Harlokin was a zealous 'image-worſhipper, yet all he could 'do, would not bring the people hear-'tily into it, for Collwar never want-'ed a great majority.' This pleaſed me prodigiouſly, being what was never hinted to me before; and I reſolved not to let my ſcheme be a loſer by it.

As we were to viſit Youk in about eight days, I ſummoned the ragans and people to meet at the mouch; there recounting the great things done by Collwar in all nations. 'This I 'could make appear,' ſays I, 'by 'many examples; but as you have 'one even at your own towns, I need 'go no farther.

'I muſt begin in ancient times, 'when, I preſume, you all worſhipped 'an idol; have you any tradition be-'fore this?' They ſaid, 'No.'—'This Image,' ſays I, 'was worſhip-'ped in Begſurbeck's days, when an 'old ragan, whoſe mind Collwar had 'enlightened with the truth, would 'have withdrawn your reverence from 'the Image, to the original Collwar 'himſelf; you would not conſent; he 'threatens you, but promiſes ſucceſs 'to Begſurbeck, who did conſent; 'and he had it to an old age. Then 'thoſe who would alſo conſent, were 'ſo far encouraged as to be able to 'form an independent kingdom. 'Could nobody yet ſee the cauſe? was 'it not apparent Collwar was angry 'with the eaſt, that would not follow 'the old ragan, and cheriſhed the weſt, 'who would? But, to be ſhort, let us 'apply the preſent inſtance, and ſure 'it will convince us who is right, 'who wrong.

'So long as the weſt followed Coll-'war, they flouriſhed, and the eaſt de-'clined; but no ſooner had the weſt 'degenerated under the command of 'Harlokin, and the eaſt by my means 'had embraced Collwar, but the ta-'bles were turned: the eaſt is found 'weighty, and the weſt kicks the 'beam. Theſe things whoſo ſees not, 'is blind indeed: therefore let pub-'lication be made, for the deſtruction 'of all ſmall images; and let the 'harbourers of them, contrary to this 'order, be ſlit: and for myſelf, I will 'deſtroy this mother-monſter. Take 'you, holy ragans, care to deſtroy 'the brood.' And having ſaid this, I hacked the new idol to pieces.

I ordered proclamation for aboliſh-ing ſlavery, under the reſtrictions uſed at Brandleguarp: and thus having compoſed the weſt, and given a gene-ral ſatisfaction, we returned, almoſt the whole weſt accompanying us, till the eaſt received us; and never was ſo happy an union, or more preſent to teſtify it, ſince the creation, I believe.

I ordered ſeveral of the principal men's ſons to court, in order for em-ployments, and to furniſh out future colambs; and this I did, as knowing each country would rather approve of a member of their own body for their head, than a ſtranger; and, in my opi-nion, it is the moſt natural union. And then breeding them under the eye of the king eight or ten years, or more, they are, as it were, naturalized to him too, and in better capacity to ſerve both king and country.

As my head was conſtantly at work for the good of this people, I turned the moſt trifling incidents into ſome uſe or other; and made the narroweſt pro-ſpects extend to the vaſteſt diſtances. I ſhall here inſtance in one only. There was at Youk a private man's ſon, whom by mere accident I happened to aſk ſome ſlight queſtion of; and he giving me, with a profound reſpect and graceful aſſurance, a moſt pertinent anſwer; that, and the manner of it's delivery, gave me a pleaſure, which upon farther diſcourſe with him, was, contrary to cuſtom, very much in-creaſed; for I found in him an exten-ſive genius, and a deſire for my con-verſation. I deſired his father to put him under my care, which the old man, as I was then in ſo great repute, rea-dily agreed to; and his ſon deſiring no-thing more, I took him with me to Brandleguarp. I ſoon procured him a pretty poſt of but ſmall duty, for I had purpoſed other employment for him, but of ſufficient ſignificancy to procure him reſpect. I took great de-light in talking with him on different ſubjects, and obſerved by his queſtions upon them, which often puzzled me, or his anſwers to them, he had a moſt pregnant fancy and ſurprizing ſolidity, joined to a continual and unwearied

application,

application. I frequently mentioning books, writing, and letters to him, and telling him what great things might be attained that way; his inquiſitive temper and the ſchemes he had formed thereon, put me upon thinking of ſeveral things I ſhould never have hit upon without him. I conſidered all the ways I could contrive to teach him letters; and letting him into my deſign, he aſked me how I did to make a letter. I deſcribed a pen to him, and told him I put a black liquor into it, and as I drew that along upon a flat white thing we made uſe of, called paper, it would make marks which way ever I drew it, into what ſhape I pleaſed. 'Why then,' ſays he, 'any 'thing that will make a mark upon 'another thing as I pleaſe, will do.'— 'True,' ſays I, 'but what ſhall we 'get that will make a black mark?' We were entering farther into this debate; but the king ſending for me, I left him unſatisfied. I ſtayed late with the king that night, ſo did not ſee Laſmeel (for that was his name) till next night, wondering what was become of him. I aſked him then, where he had been all the day. He told me he had been looking for a pen and paper. I laughed, and aſked him if he had found them. 'Yes,' ſays he, 'or ſomething 'that will do as well:' ſo he opened one ſide of his graundee, and ſhewed me a large flat leaf, ſmooth and pulpy, very long and wide, and about a quarter of an inch thick, almoſt like an Indian fig-leaf. 'And what am I to 'do with this?' ſays I. 'To mark 'it,' ſays he, 'and ſee where you 'mark.'—'With what?' ſays I. 'With this,' ſays he, putting his hand again into his graundee, and taking out three or four ſtrong ſharp prickles. I looked at them both; and, clapping him on the head, 'Laſmeel,' ſays I, 'if you and I were in England, you 'ſhould be made a privy-counſellor.' —'What, won't it do, then?' ſays he. I told him we would try. 'I thought,' ſays he, 'it would have done very 'well; for I marked one all about, and 'though I could not ſee much at firſt, 'by that time I had made an end, that 'I did firſt was quite of a different 'colour from the leaf, and I could ſee 'it as plain as could be.' I told him, as he was of an age to comprehend what I meant, I would take another method with him than with a child; ſo I reaſoned from ſentences, backwards to words, and from them to ſyllables, and ſo on to letters. I then made one, the vowel A, told him it's ſound, and added a conſonant to it, and told him that part of the ſound of each diſtinct letter put together, as the two letters themſelves were, made another ſound, which I called a ſyllable; and that joining two or more of them together, made a word, by putting the ſame letters together as made the ſounds of thoſe ſyllables which made that word. Then ſetting him a copy of letters, which with very little difficulty were to be drawn upon the leaf, and telling him their ſounds, I left him to himſelf; and when he had done, though I named them but twice over, his memory was ſo ſtrong as to retain the ſounds, as he called them, of every one but F, L, and Q.

In two months time I made him maſter of any thing I wrote to him; and, as he delighted in it, he wrote a great deal himſelf; ſo that we kept an epiſtolary correſpondence, and he would ſet down all the common occurrences of the day, as what he heard and ſaw, with his remarks on divers things.

One day, as the king and I were walking in the gardens, and talking of the cuſtoms of my country, and about our wars, telling him how our ſoldiers fought on horſeback, the king could not conceive what I meant by an horſe. I told him my wife had ſaid there were neither beaſts nor fiſhes in her country; which I was very much ſurprized at, conſidering how we abounded with both; 'And therefore,' ſays I, 'to tell your majeſty that an 'horſe is a creature with four legs, 'you muſt naturally believe it to be 'ſomewhat like a man with four legs.' —'Why, truly,' ſays he, 'I believe it 'is; but has it the graundee?' I could not forbear ſmiling, even at his majeſty; and wanted to find ſome ſimilitude to compare it to, to carry the king's mind that way; for elſe he would ſooner, I thought, conceive it like a tree or a mountain, than what it really was; and as I was muſing, it came into my head, I had given Laſmeel a ſmall print of an horſe, which I found in one of the captain's pockets at Graundevolet, and believing it to be the ſtamp of a tobacco-paper, had

kept

kept it to pleaſe the children with; ſo I told the king I believed I could ſhew him the figure of an horſe. He told me it would much oblige him.

Seeing ſeveral of the guards waiting at the garden-arch, I looked, and at laſt found one of Laſmeel's leaves in the garden, and cutting one of them up with my knife, I took the point of that, and wrote to Laſmeel to ſend me by the bearer the picture of an horſe I gave him, that I might ſhew it the king. And calling one of the guards, 'Carry that to Laſmeel,' ſays I; 'he 'is, I believe, in my apartment, and 'bring me an anſwer directly.' Then falling into diſcourſe again with the king, and preſently turning at the end of the walk, I ſaw the ſame guard again. Says I, 'You cannot have 'brought me an anſwer already.'—'You have not told me,' ſays he, 'what to bring you an anſwer to.'—'Nor ſhall I,' ſays I; 'do as you are 'bid;' for I perceived then what the fellow ſtuck at. He walked off with the leaf, but very diſcontentedly. The king ſaid he wondered how I could act ſuch a contradiction. 'This, father,' ſays he, 'is not what I expected from 'you; to order a man to bring an an-'ſwer, without giving him a meſſage.' I deſired his patience only till the man came back. 'Preſently ſays the king; 'Here he comes!'—'Well,' ſays he, 'what anſwer?'—'Sir,' ſays the fellow, 'I have only had the walk for 'my pains; for he ſent it back again, 'and a little white thing with it.'—'Ha, ha!' ſays the king, 'I thought 'ſo—come, father, own you have once 'been in the wrong; for I am ſure 'you intended to give him a meſſage, 'but having forgot it, would not ſub-'mit to be told of your miſtake by a 'guard.' I looked very grave, reading what Laſmeel had wrote; which was to tell me he had obeyed my orders by ſending the horſe; for he was juſt then drawing it out upon a leaf.

'Come, come,' ſays the king, 'give 'the man his meſſage, father, and let 'him go again.'—'Sir,' ſays I, 'there 'is no need of that, he has punctually 'obeyed me; and Laſmeel was then 'at the table in my oval chamber with 'a leaf, and this picture in my hand, 'before him.'

The king was ready to ſink when I ſaid ſo, and ſhewed the print. 'Truly, 'father,' ſays he, 'I have been to 'blame to queſtion you; for though 'theſe things are above my compre-'henſion, I am not to think any thing 'beyond your ſkill.' I made no reply to it; but ſhewing the king the picture, the guard ſneaked off, and glad he was, I believe, he could do ſo.

I went then upon the explanation of my horſe; and, anſwering fifty queſtions about him, at laſt he aſked what his inſide was; 'Exactly the ſame as your 'majeſty's,' ſaid I. 'And can he 'eat and breathe too?' ſays he. 'Juſt 'as you can,' ſays I. 'Well,' ſays he, 'I would never have believed there 'had been ſuch a creature: what 'would I give for one of them!' I ſet forth the divers other uſes we put them to, beſides the wars; and by the picture, with ſome ſuppoſed alterations, I deſcribed a cow, a ſheep, and numberleſs other quadrupedes; my account of which gave him great pleaſure.

CHAP. XVI.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—A RISING OF FORMER SLAVES ON THAT ACCOUNT—TAKES A VIEW OF THE CITY—DESCRIPTION OF IT, AND OF THE COUNTRY—HOT AND COLD SPRINGS.

HAVING now ſome leiſure time on my hands to conſider over my own affairs, I had thoughts of tranſporting my family, with all my effects, to Saïs Doorpt Swangeanti; but yet had no mind to relinquiſh all thought of my ſhip and cargo; for the greateſt part of this was ſtill remaining, I having had but the pickings through the gulph. I once had a mind to have gone myſelf; but conſidering the immenſe diſtance over ſea, though I had once come ſafe, I thought I ought not to tempt Providence, where my preſence was not abſolutely neceſſary.

Naſgig, to whoſe care and conduct any enterprize might be truſted, offered his ſervice to go and execute any commands I ſhould give him. His only difficulty, he ſaid, was, that it would be impoſſible for him to remember the different names of many things, which he had no idea of to convey the knowledge of them to his mind when he ſaw them; but barring that, he doubted not to give me ſatisfaction. I told him I would ſend an aſſiſtant with him,

who

who could remember whatever I once told him; and that I might not burden his memory with names only, Lasmeel should carry his memory with him; and that he, Nasgig, should only have the executive part.

Lasmeel, who had sat waiting an opportunity to put in for a share in the adventure, having a longing desire to see the ship, told Nasgig he had a peculiar art of memory, so as to remember whatever he would as long as he pleased; and that if he carried that with him, they need fear no mistakes.

The king having granted me as many of his guards as I pleased, for the carriage of my things, we appointed them to be ready on the fourth day; when Nasgig and Lasmeel set out with them.

I ordered Lasmeel, however, to be with me the next morning, that we might set down proper instructions; which I told him would be very long, and that he must bring a good number of leaves with him.

When Lasmeel entered my chamber next morning, he informed me that the whole city was in an uproar, especially those who had been freed by me. 'What!' says I, 'have they so soon 'forgot their subjection, to misapply 'their liberty already? But step and 'bring me word what's the matter, 'and order some of the ringleaders hi-'ther to me.'

Lasmeel upon enquiry found, that it had been given out I was going to leave the country, and they all said, wherever I went they were determined to go and settle with me; for if I left them they should be reduced to slavery again. However, he brought some of them to me; and upon my telling them I thanked them for their affection to me, but blamed them for shewing it in so tumultuous a manner, and that I was so far from intending to leave them, that I was sending for my family and effects, in order to settle amongst them, they rejoiced very much, and told me they would carry the good news to their companions, and disperse immediately: but I was now in more perplexity than before, for they having signified my designs to the rest, they rushed into the gallery in such numbers, that they forced up to my very chamber. I told them this was an unprecedented manner of using a person they pretended a kindness for; and told them, if they made use of such risings to express their gratitude to me, it would be the direct means to oblige me to leave them: 'For,' says I, 'do 'you think I can be safe in a king-'dom where greater deference is paid 'to me, than to the crown?' They begged my pardon, they said, and would obey me in any thing; but the present trouble was only to offer their services to fetch my family and goods, or to do any thing else I should want them for; and if I would favour them in that, they would retire directly. I told them, when I had considered of it they should hear from me; and this again quieted them.

This disturbance not only took up much of my time, which I could have better employed, but put me to a nonplus, how to come off with them; till I sent Maleck to tell them, though I set a great value upon their esteem, yet after what had passed, it would be the most unadvisable thing in nature for me to accept their kindness; for having before requested a body of men of the king, as he had graciously granted them, it would be preferring them to the king, should I now relinquish his grant, and make use of their offer; and after this I heard no more of it.

I had scarce met with a more difficult task than to fix exact rules for the conduct of my present undertaking, there being so many things to be expressed, wherein the least perplexity arising, might have caused both delay and damage; for I was not only forced to set down the things I would have brought, but the manner and method of packing and securing them; but, as Lasmeel could read my writing to Pedro at home, and Youwarkee on board, it would be a means, though far from an expeditious one, of bringing matters into some order; and after I had done, as I thought, I could have enumerated many more things, and was obliged to add an *et cætera* to the end of my catalogue; and while they were ready for flight, I added divers other particulars and circumstances. Nay, when they were even upon the graundee, I recollected the most material thing of all; for my greatest concern was, having broke up so many of my chests, to find package for the things; I say, even so late as that, I bethought me of the several great water-casks I had on board, that would hold

an

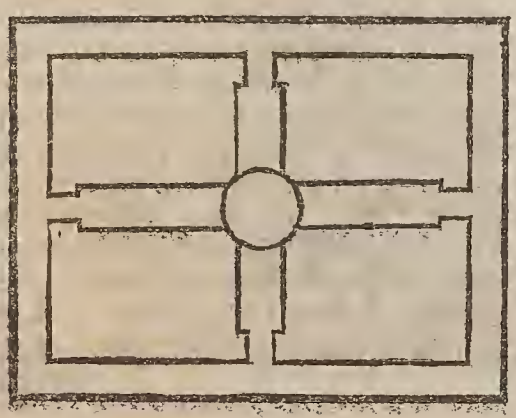
an infinite number of ſmall things, and would be ſlung eaſily; ſo I ſtopped them, and ſet down that; and they were no ſooner out of ſight and hearing, but remembering twenty more, I was then forced to truſt them to my *et cætera*.

I had ſent my own flying-chair to bring the boys who had not the graundee, with orders for Pedro to ſit tied in the chair, with Dicky tied in his arms; Jemmy to ſit tied to the board before the chair, and David behind: ſo I hoped they would come ſafe enough; and then my wife and Sally were able to help themſelves.

Having diſpatched my caravan, and being all alone, I called Quilly the next morning, and telling him I had thoughts of viewing the country, I bade him prepare to go with me.

I had now been here above ſix months, and yet upon coming to walk gravely about the city, I found myſelf as much a ſtranger to the knowledge of the place as if that had been the firſt day of my arrival, though I had been over it ſeveral times in my chair.

This city is not only one of, but actually the moſt curious piece of work in the world, and conſiſts of one immenſe entire ſtone of a conſiderable height, and it may be ſeven miles in length, and near as broad as it is long. The ſtreets, and habitable part of it, are ſcooped, as it were, out of the ſolid ſtone, to the level with the reſt of the country, very flat and ſmooth at bottom, the rock riſing perpendicular from the ſtreets on each ſide. The figure of the city is a direct ſquare; each ſide about ſix miles long, with a large open circle in the centre of the ſquare, about a mile in diameter; and from each of the ſides of the outer ſtreets to the oppoſite ſide, runs another ſtreet, cutting the centre of the circle as in the figure.



Along the whole face of the rock, bounding the ſtreets and the circle, there are arch-ways; thoſe in the circle, and the four croſs ſtreets, for the gentry and better people; and thoſe in the outer ſtreets, for the meaner; and it is as eaſy to know as by a ſign, where a great man lives, by the grandeur of his entrance, and laviſh diſtribution of the pillars, carving, and ſtatues, about his portico, within and without: for as they have no doors, you may look in, and are not forbid entrance; and though it ſhould look odd to an Engliſh reader, that an Engliſhman ſhould ſpeak with pleaſure of a land of darkneſs, as that almoſt was, yet I am ſatisfied, whoever ſhall ſee it after me, will be perſuaded, that for the real grandeur of their entrances, and for the magnificence of the apartments and ſculpture, no part of the univerſe can produce the like; and though within doors there is no other manner of light than the ſweecoes, yet that, when you are once uſed to it, is ſo agreeable and free from all noiſome ſavour, that I never once regretted the loſs of the ſun within doors, though I often have when abroad; but then that would be injurious to the proper inhabitants, though they can no more ſee in total darkneſs than myſelf.

I have been over ſome of theſe private houſes, which contain, it may be, thirty rooms, great and ſmall, ſome higher, ſome lower, full of ſweecoe-lights, and extremely well proportioned and beautiful.

The king's palace, with all the apartments, ſtands in, and takes up, one full fourth-part of the ſquare of the whole city; and is, indeed, of itſelf a perfect city.

There is no great man's houſe without one or more long galleries, for the ladies to divert themſelves at divers ſports in; particularly at one like our bowls on a bowling-green, and at ſomewhat like nine-holes, at which they play for wines, and drink a great deal, for none of them will intoxicate.

In my walk and ſurvey of the city, one of the colambs being making a houſe to reſide in when at Brandleguarp, I had the curioſity to go in. I ſaw there abundance of botts ſtand filled with a greeniſh liquor, and aſked Quilly what that was. He ſaid, it was what the ſtone-men uſed in making the houſes. I proceeded farther

in, where I saw several men at work, and stayed a good while to observe them. Each man had a bott of this liquor in his left-hand, and stood before a large bank of stone, it may be thirty feet high, reaching forward up to the cieling of the place, and ascending by steps from bottom to top; the workmen standing some on one step, some on another, pouring on this liquor with their left-hands, and with their right holding a wooden tool, shaped like a little spade: I observed wherever they poured on this water, a smoke arose for a little space of time, and then the place turned white, which was scraped off like fine powder with the spade-handle; and then pouring new liquor, he scraped again, working all the while by sweecoe-lights.

Having my watch in my pocket, I measured a spot of a yard long, about a foot high, and a foot and a half on the upper flat, to see how long he would be fetching down that piece; and he got it away in little above two hours. By this means I came to know how they made their houses; for I had neither seen any tool I thought proper, nor even iron itself, except my own, since I came into the country. Upon enquiry, I found that the scrapings of this stone, and a portion of common earth, mixed with a water they have, will cement like plaster; and they use it in the small ornamental work of their buildings. I then went farther into this house, where I saw one making the figure of a glumm by the same method; but it standing upright in the solid rock against the wall, the workman held his liquor in an open shell, and dipping such stuff as my bed was made of, bound up in short rolls, some larger, some less, into the liquor, he touched the figure, and then scraped till he had reduced it into a perfect piece.

It is impossible to imagine how this work rids away; for in ten months time after I saw it, this house was compleated, having a great number of fine, large, and lofty rooms in it, exquisitely carved to all appearance.

My wonder ceased as to the palace, when I saw how easily this work was done; but sure there is no other such room in the world as Begsurbeck's, that I described above.

The palace, as I said before, taking up one quarter of the city, opens into four streets by four different arches; and before one of the sides, which I call the front, is a large triangle, formed by the entrance out of one of the cross streets, and the two ends of the front of the palace. Along the lower front of it, all the way runs a piazza of considerable height, supported by vast round columns, which seemed to bear up the whole front of the rock; over which was a gallery of equal length, with balustrades along it, supported with pillars of a yet finer make; and over that a pediment with divers figures, and other work, to the top of the rock; which being there quite even for it's whole length, was inclosed with balustrades between pedestals all the way; on which stood the statues of their ancient kings, so large as to appear equal to the life. The other two sides of the triangle were dwellings for divers officers belonging to the palace. Under the middle-arch of the piazza, was the way into the palace, through a long, spacious arched passage, whose farther end opened into a large square: on each side of this passage were large stair-cases, if I may so call them, by which you ascend gradually, and without steps, into the upper apartments.

The next morning we took another walk, for I told Quilly I had a mind to take a prospect of the country; we then went out at the back arch of the palace, as we had the day before at one of the sides, there being a like passage through the rock from that we went out at, to an opposite arch leading into the garden. I say, we went out at the back-arch, and after passing a large quadrangle with lodgings all round it, we ascended through a cut in the rock to a large flat, where we plainly saw the black mountain with it's top in the very sky, the sides of which afforded numberless trees, though the ground within view afforded very little verdure, or even shrubs. But the most beautiful sight from the rock was, to see the people come home loaded from the mountain, and from the woods, with, it may be, forty pound weight each on their backs; and mounting over the rock, to see them dart along the streets to their several dwellings, over the heads of thousands of others walking in all parts of the

streets,

ſtreets, while others were flying other ways. It was very pleaſant to ſee a man walking gravely in one ſtreet, and as quick as thought to ſee him over the rock, ſettled in another, perhaps two miles diſtant.

The near view of the country ſeeming ſo barren, naturally led me to aſk Quilly from whence they got proviſion for ſo many people as the city contained, which, to be ſure, could not be leſs than three hundred thouſand. He told me, that they had nothing but what came from the great foreſt, or the ſkirts of the mountain. 'But for 'the grain of it, and ſome few out-'ward marks,' ſays I, 'I could have 'ſworn I had eaten ſome of my coun-'try beef the other day at the king's 'table.'—'I don't know what your 'beef, as you call it, is; but I am 'ſure we have nothing here but the 'fruit of ſome tree or ſhrub, that 'ever I heard of.'—'I wonder,' ſays I, 'Quilly, how your cooks dreſs their 'victuals. I have eaten many things 'boiled, and otherwiſe dreſſed hot, but 'have ſeen no rivers, or water, ſince I 'came into this country, except for 'drinking, or waſhing my hands; and 'I don't know where that comes from. 'And another thing,' ſays I, 'ſur-'prizes me, though I ſee no ſun as we 'have to warm the air, you are very 'temperate in the town, and it is ſel-'dom cold here; but I neither ſee fire 'nor ſmoak.'—'We have,' ſays Quilly, 'ſeveral very good ſprings under 'the palace, both of hot water and 'cold; and I don't know what we 'ſhould do with fires, we ſee the dread 'of them ſufficiently at Mount Al-'koe. Our cooks dreſs their fruits at 'the hot ſprings.'—'That is a fancy,' ſays I; 'they cannot boil them there.' —'I am ſure we have no other dreſ-'ſing,' ſays he. 'Well, Quilly,' ſays I, 'we will go home the way you 'told me of, and to-morrow you ſhall 'ſhew me the ſprings: but, pray, how 'come you to be ſo much afraid of 'Mount Alkoe? I ſuppoſe your eyes 'won't bear the light; is not that all?' —'No, no,' ſays Quilly, 'that is the 'country of bad men; ſome of us 'have flown over there accidentally, 'when the mountain has been cool, as 'it is ſometimes for a good while to-'gether, and have heard ſuch noiſes 'as would frighten any honeſt man 'out of his ſenſes; for there they beat 'and puniſh bad men.' I could not make much of his ſtory, nor did I enquire farther; for I had before determined, if poſſible, to get over thither. As we were now come into the garden, I ordered Quilly to get ready my dinner, and I would come in preſently.

We went next morning to view the ſprings; and, indeed, it was a ſight well worth conſidering: we were in divers offices under the rock, (Quilly carrying two globe-lights before me) in which were ſprings of very clear water, ſome of hot, and ſome of cold, riſing within two or three inches of the ſurface of the floor. We then went into the kitchen, which was bigger than I ever ſaw one of our churches, and where were a great number of theſe ſprings, the hot all boiling full ſpeed day and night, and ſmoaking like a caldron, the water riſing through very ſmall chinks in the ſtone into baſons, ſome bigger, ſome leſs; and they had ſeveral deep ſtone-jars to ſet any thing to boil in. But what was the moſt ſurprizing was, you ſhould ſee a ſpring of very cold water within a few feet of one of hot, and they never riſe higher or ſink lower than they are. I talked with the maſter-cook, an ingenious man, about them; and he told me they lie in this manner all over the rocky part of the country, and that the firſt thing any one does in looking out for an houſe is to ſee for the water, whether both hot and cold may be found within the compaſs he deſigns to make uſe of; and, finding that, he goes on, or elſe ſearches another place. And, he told me, where this convenience was not in great plenty, the people did not inhabit, which made the towns all ſo very populous. He ſaid, too, that thoſe warm ſprings made the air more wholeſome about the towns than in other parts where there were none of them. I thanked him for his information, which finiſhed my ſearch for that time.

CHAP. XVII.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—PENDLEHAMBY GIVES A FABULOUS ACCOUNT OF THE PEOPLEING OF THAT COUNTRY—THEIR POLICY AND GOVERNMENT—PE-

TER'S DISCOURSE ON TRADE—YOUWARKEE ARRIVES—INVITES THE KING AND NOBLES TO A TREAT—SENDS TO GRAUNDEVOLET FOR FOWLS.

THE days hanging heavy on my hands till the arrival of my family, I ſent Pendlehamby word, that, as I had ſent for my family and effects, in order to ſettle in this country, and expected them very ſoon, I ſhould be glad of his, my brother, and ſiſter's company, to welcome them on their arrival.

My father came alone, which gave me an opportunity of informing myſelf in the riſe and policy of the ſtate, as I purpoſed to take ſeveral farther ſteps in their affairs, if they might prove agreeable and conſiſtent: for hitherto, having had only ſlight ſketches or hints of things, I could form no juſt idea of the whole of their laws, cuſtoms, and government. Explaining myſelf, therefore, to him, I begged his inſtruction in thoſe particulars.

'Son Peter,' ſays my father, 'you 'have already done too much in a ſhort 'time to leave any room to think you 'can do no more; and as you have 'hitherto directed your own proceed-'ings with ſuch incredible ſucceſs, 'neither the king nor colambs will 'interpoſe againſt your inclination, 'but give you all the advices in our 'powers; and I ſhall eſteem your 'ſelecting me for that purpoſe no ſmall 'honour.

'Know, then, that this ſtate, by the 'tradition of our ragans, has ſubſiſted 'eleven thouſand years; for, before 'that time, the great mountain Emina, 'then not far from the Black Moun-'tain, but now fallen and ſunk in the 'ſea, roaring and raging in it's own 'bowels for many ages, at laſt burſt 'aſunder with great violence, and 'threw up numberleſs unformed fleſhy 'maſſes to the very ſtars; two of which 'happening in their paſſage to touch 'the ſide of the Black Mountain, (for 'all the reſt fell into the ſea and were 'loſt) lodged there, and lying cloſe 'together as they grew, united to each 'other till they were joined in one; 'and in proceſs of time, by the dews 'of Heaven, became a glumm and a 'gawrey; but being ſo linked together 'by the adheſion of their fleſh, they 'were obliged both to move which 'way either would: living thus a long 'time in great love and fondneſs for 'each other, they had but one incli-'nation, leſt both ſhould be ſufferers 'upon the leaſt diſagreement.

'In proceſs of time they grew tired 'of each other's conſtant ſociety, and 'one willing to go here, and the other 'there, bred perpetual diſorders be-'tween them; for prevention where-'of, for the future, they agreed to 'cut themſelves aſunder with ſharp 'ſtones. The pain, indeed, was in-'tolerable during the operation; but, 'however, they effected it, and the 'wounds each received were very dan-'gerous, and a long time before they 'were perfectly healed: but at length, 'ſometimes agreeing, ſometimes not, 'they begat a ſon, whom they called 'Perigen, and a daughter they called 'Philella. Theſe two, as they grew 'up, deſpiſing their parents who lived 'on the top of the mountain, ventured 'to deſcend into the plains, and living 'upon the fruits they found there, 'ſheltered themſelves in this very rock. 'Mean time, the old glumm and gaw-'rey, having lived to a great age, 'were ſo infirm, that neither of them 'was able to walk for a long time; 'till one day, being near each other, 'and trying to riſe by the aſſiſtance of 'each other, they both got up, and 'leaning upon and ſupporting each 'other, they alſo walked commodi-'ouſly: this mutual aſſiſtance kept 'them in good-humour a great while; 'till, one day, paſſing along near hoxi-'mo, they both fell in.

'Perigen and Philella had ſeveral 'children in the plains; who, as they 'grew up, increaſing, ſpread into re-'mote parts, and peopled the country: 'at laſt, one of them being a very paſ-'ſionate man, at the inſtigation of his 'wife, became the firſt murderer, by 'ſlaying his father. This ſo enraged 'the people, that the murderer and his 'wife, in abhorrence of the fact, were 'conveyed to Mount Alkoe, where 'was then only a very narrow deep 'pit, into which they were both thrown 'headlong; but the perſons who car-'ried them thither had ſcarce retired 'from the mouth of the pit, when it 'burſt out with fire, raging prodigi-'ouſly, and has kept burning ever 'ſince. Arco and Telamine (the mur-

'derer

'derer and his wife) lived ſeven thou-
'ſand years in the flames; till having
'with their teeth wrought a paſſage
'through the ſide of the mountain,
'they begat a new generation about
'the foot of the mountain; and hav-
'ing brought fire with them, reſolved
'to keep it burning ever after in me-
'mory of their eſcape; and power
'being given them over bad men, they
'and their progeny are now wholly
'employed in beating and tormenting
'them.

'A great while after Arco and Te-
'lamine were thus diſpoſed of, the
'people of this country multiplying,
'it happened, one year, that all the
'fruits were ſo dry, that the people,
'not able to live any longer upon the
'moiſture of them only, as they had
'always done before, and fearing all
'to be conſumed with drought, one
'of their ragans praying very much,
'and promiſing to make an image to
'Collwar, and preſerve it for ever, if
'he would ſend them but moiſture, in
'one night's time the earth caſt up
'ſuch a flood, that they were forced to
'mount on the rocks for fear of drown-
'ing: but the next day it all ſunk
'away again, except ſeveral little bub-
'bles which remained in many places
'for a long time, and the people lived
'only on the moiſture they ſucked
'from the ſtone where thoſe bubbles
'ſettled for many years; for they
'found that the water aroſe to the
'height of the ſurface, and no higher;
'and where they found moſt of thoſe
'chinks and bubbles, they ſettled, and
'formed cities, living altogether in
'holes of the rock; till one Lallio,
'having found out the art of crum-
'bling the rock to duſt by a liquor he
'got from the trees, and working
'himſelf a noble houſe in the rock, in
'the place where our palace now ſtands,
'he told them, if they would make
'him their king, they ſhould each have
'ſuch an houſe as his own. To this
'they agreed, and then he diſcovered
'the ſecret to them.

'This Lallio directed the cutting
'out this whole city, divided the peo-
'ple into colonies where the waters
'were moſt plenty; and while half the
'people worked at the ſtreets and
'houſes, the other half brought them
'proviſions. In ſhort, he grew ſo
'powerful, that no one durſt diſpute
'his commands; all which authority
'he tranſmitted to his ſucceſſors, who
'finding by the increaſe of the people,
'and the many diviſions of them, that
'they grew inſolent and ungovernable,
'they appointed a colamb in every
'province, as a vice-king, with abſo-
'lute authority over all cauſes, except
'murder and treaſon, which are re-
'ferred to the king and colambs in
'moucheratt.

'As we had no want but of victuals
'and habitations, the king, when he
'gave a colambat, gave alſo the lands
'and the fruits thereof, together with
'all the hot and cold ſprings, to the
'colamb, who again diſtributed par-
'cels to the great officers under him,
'and they part of theirs to the meaner
'officers under them, for their ſubſiſt-
'ence, with ſuch a number of the
'common people as was neceſſary in
'reſpect to the dignity of the poſt each
'enjoyed, who for their ſervices are
'fed by their maſters.

'In all caſes of war, the king lays
'before the moucheratt the number of
'his own troops he deſigns to ſend;
'when each colamb's quota being ſet-
'tled at ſuch a proportion of the
'whole, he forthwith ſends his num-
'ber from out of his own laſks, and
'alſo from the ſeveral officers under
'him; ſo that every man, let the num-
'ber be ever ſo great, can be at the
'rendezvous in very few days.

'We have but three profeſſions, be-
'ſides the ragans and ſoldiery, amongſt
'us, and theſe are cooks, houſe-
'makers, and pike-makers, of which
'every colamb has ſeveral among his
'laſks; and theſe, upon the new re-
'gulation, will be the only gainers,
'as they may work where they pleaſe,
'and according to their ſkill will be
'their proviſion; but how the poor
'labourers will be the better for it, I
'cannot ſee.'

'Dear Sir,' ſays I, 'there are, you
'ſee, amongſt laſks, ſome of ſuch
'parts, that it is great pity they ſhould
'be confined from ſhewing them; and
'my meaning in giving liberty is in
'order for what is to follow; that is,
'for the introduction of arts amongſt
'you. Now, every man who has na-
'tural parts will exert them, when any
'art is laid before him; and he will
'find ſo much delight in making new
'diſcoveries, that, did no profit attend

'it,

'it, the ſatisfaction of the diſcovery 'to a prying genius would compenſate 'the pains: but I propoſe a profit alſo 'to the artificer.'—'Why, what pro-'fit,' ſays my father, 'can ariſe but 'food, and perhaps a ſervant of their 'own to provide it for them?'

'Sir,' ſays I, 'the man who has 'nothing to hope, loſes the uſe of one 'of his faculties; and, if I gueſs 'right, and you live ten years longer, 'you ſhall ſee this ſtate as much alter-'ed as the difference has been between 'a laſk and a tree he feeds on. You 'ſhall all be poſſeſſed of that which 'will bring you fruits from the woods 'without a laſk to fetch it. Thoſe 'who were before your ſlaves, ſhall 'then take it as an honour to be em-'ployed by you, and at the ſame time 'ſhall employ others dependent on 'them; ſo as the great and ſmall ſhall 'be under mutual obligations to each 'other, and both to the truly induſtri-'ous artificer; and yet every one con-'tent only with what he merits.'

'Dear ſon,' ſays my father, 'theſe 'will be glorious days indeed! But, 'come, come, you have played a good 'part already; don't, by attempting 'what you can't maſter, eclipſe the 'glory ſo juſtly due to you.'

'No, Sir,' ſays I, 'nothing ſhall 'be attempted by me to my diſhonour; 'for I ſhall ever remember my friend 'Glanlipze.—Sir,' ſays I, 'ſee here,' (ſhewing him my watch.) 'Why, this,' ſays he, 'hung by my daughter's ſide 'at Graundevolet.'—'It did ſo,' ſays I; 'and, pray, what did you take it 'for?'—'A bott,' ſays he. 'I thought 'ſo,' ſays I; 'but as you aſked no 'queſtions, I did not then force the 'knowledge of it upon you. But put 'it to your ear:' he did ſo. 'What 'noiſe is that!' ſays he. 'Is it alive?' —'No,' ſays I, 'it is not; but it is 'as ſignificant. If I aſk it what time 'of the day it is, or how long I have 'been going from this place to that, I 'look but in it's face, and it tells me 'preſently.'

My father looking upon it a good while, and perceiving that the mi-nute-hand had got farther than it was at firſt, was juſt dropping it out of his hand, had I not caught it. 'Why it 'is alive,' ſays he; 'it moves!'— 'Sir,' ſays I, 'if you had dropped it, 'you had done me an inexpreſſible in-'jury.'—'O ho,' ſays he, 'I find 'now how you do your wonders; it 'is ſomething you have ſhut up here 'that aſſiſts you; it is an evil ſpirit!' I laughing heartily, he was ſorry for what he had ſaid, believing he had ſhewn ſome ignorance. 'No, Sir,' ſays I, 'it is no ſpirit, good or evil, 'but a machine made by ſome of my 'countrymen, to meaſure time with.' —'I have heard,' ſays he, 'of mea-'ſuring an abb, or the ground, or a 'rock; but never yet heard of mea-'ſuring time.'—'Why, Sir,' ſays I, 'don't you ſay three days hence I will 'do ſo; or ſuch a one is three years 'old? Is not that a meaſuring of time 'by ſo many days or years?'—'Tru-'ly,' ſays he, 'in one ſenſe I think 'it is.'—'Now, Sir,' ſays I, 'how 'do you meaſure a day?'—'Why, by 'riſing, and lying down,' ſays he. 'But ſuppoſe I ſay I will go now 'and come again, and have a particu-'lar time in my head when I will re-'turn, how ſhall I do to make you 'know that time?'—'Why, that will 'be afterwards, another time,' ſays he; 'or I can think how long it will 'be.'—'But,' ſays I, 'how can you 'make me know, when you think it will 'be.'—'You muſt think too,' ſays he. 'But then,' ſays I, 'we may de-'ceive each other, by thinking dif-'ferently. Now this will ſet us to 'rights:' then I deſcribed the figures to him, telling him, how many parts they divided the day into, and that by looking on it, I could tell how many of ſuch parts were paſſed; and that if he went from me, and ſaid he would come one, or two, or three parts hence, I ſhould know when to expect him. I then ſhewed him the wheels, and ex-plained where the force lay, and why it went no faſter or ſlower, as well as I could; and, from my deſire of teach-ing, inſenſibly perfected myſelf more and more in it. So that beginning to have a little idea of it, he wiſhed he had one. 'And,' ſays he, 'will you 'teach all our people to make ſuch 'things?'—'Then they would be diſ-'regarded, Sir,' ſays I. 'It is im-'poſſible,' ſays he. 'I'll tell you, 'Sir, how I mean,' ſaid I. 'I can 'hereafter ſhew you an hundred things 'as uſeful as this; now, if every body 'was to make theſe, how would other 'things be made? Beſides, if every

'body

'body made them, nobody would 'want them; and then what would 'any body get by them, beſides the 'pleaſing their own fancy? But if 'only twenty men make them in one 'town, all the reſt muſt come to them; 'and they who make theſe, muſt go 'to one of twenty others, who make 'another thing that theſe men want, 'and ſo on; by which means, every 'man wanting ſomething he does not 'make, it will be the better for every 'maker of every thing.'

'Son,' ſays my father, 'excuſe 'me; I am really aſhamed, now you 'have better informed me, I aſked ſo 'fooliſh a queſtion.' I told him, we had a ſaying in my country, that every thing is eaſy when it is known. 'I 'think,' ſays he, 'a man might find 'every thing in your country.'

Two days after, my wife and daughter Sally came very early; but ſure no joy could be greater than ours at ſight of each other. I embraced them both over and over, as did my father, eſpecially Sally, who was a charming child. They told me, I might expect every thing that evening, for they left them alighting at the height of Battringdrigg; for though they came out the laſt, yet the body of the people with their baggage could not come ſo faſt as they did. And little Sally ſaid, 'We ſtaid and reſted ourſelves, pure-'ly, daddy, at Battringdrigg, before 'the crowd came; but as ſoon as mam-'my had ſeen all my brothers ſafe, 'who came before the reſt, and kiſſed 'Dicky, we ſet out again.'

About ſeven hours after, arrived the ſecond convoy from abroad, that ever entered that country. I had too much to do with my wife and children that night, to ſpare a thought to my cargo; ſo I only ſet a guard over them: for though I had now been married about ſixteen years, Youwarkee was ever new to me.

I was now obliged to the king again, for ſome additional conveniences to my former apartment; and the young ones were mightily pleaſed to have ſo much more room than we had at home, and to ſee the ſweecoes; but finding themſelves waited upon in ſo elegant a manner, and by ſo many ſervants (for with our new rooms, we had all the ſervants belonging to them) they thought themſelves in a paradiſe to the grotto, where all we wanted we were forced to help ourſelves to.

The next day Tommy came to ſee us, the king having given him a very pretty poſt, ſince the death of Yaccombourſe; and Hallycarnie, with the Princeſs Jahamel her miſtreſs, who was mightily pleaſed to ſee Youwarkee in her Engliſh dreſs, and invited her and the children to her apartment.

It was but a few months ſince my wife ſaw the children; yet ſhe ſcarce knew them, they were ſo altered; for the two courtiers behaved with ſo much politeneſs, that their brothers and Sally looked but with an ill eye upon them, finding all the fault, and dropping as many little invidious expreſſions on them as poſſible. But I ſharply rebuked them: we were all made chiefly, I told them, to pleaſe our Maker, and that could be done only by the goodneſs of the heart; and if their hearts were more pure, they were the beſt children; but if they liked their brothers and ſiſters outward behaviour better than their own, they might ſo far imitate them.

When we were ſettled in our new apartment, I unpacked my chairs and tables, and ſet out my ſide-board, and made ſuch a figure as had never before been ſeen in that part of the world. I wanted now ſome ſhoes for Pedro, his own being almoſt paſt wear, for the young ones never had worn any, but could find none; till applying to Laſmeel, and ſhewing him what I wanted, he pointed to one of the great water-caſks; but as there were eleven of them, big and little, I knew not where to begin; till, having invited the king and ſeveral of the miniſters to dine with me, I was forced to look over my goods for ſeveral other things I ſhould want.

In my ſearch, I found half a ream of paper, a leather ink-bottle, but no ink in it, ſome quills, and books of accounts, and ſeveral other things relative to writing. The prize gave me courage to attempt the other caſks; but I found little more that I immediately wanted. In the laſt caſk were ſeveral books, two of them romances, ſix volumes of Engliſh plays, two of devotion, the next were either Spaniſh or Portugueſe, and the laſt looked like a bible; but juſt opening it, and taking it to be of the ſame language, I put

them

them all in again, thinking to divert myſelf with them ſome other time. I here found ſome more paper, and ſo many ſhoes, as when I had fellowed them, ſerved me as long as I ſtaid in the country.

Having, as I ſaid before, invited the king to eat with me, I was ſorry I had not ordered my fowls to be brought; and Youwarkee ſaid, ſhe thought to have done it, but I had not wrote for them. I told her, I would ſend Maleck for ſome of them; I was reſolved; for I ſhould pique myſelf on giving the king a diſh he had never before taſted. So I called Maleck, telling him, he muſt take thirty men with him to Graundevolet; 'And carry ſix 'empty cheſts with you,' ſays I, 'and 'put eight of my fowls in each cheſt, 'and bring them with all expedition.' —'Where do they lie, Sir?' ſays he. 'You will find them at rooſt,' ſays I, 'when it is dark.'—'I never was 'there,' ſays he, 'and don't know 'the way.'—'What,' ſays I, 'never 'at Graundevolet?'—'Yes,' ſays he, 'but not at rooſt.' I laughed, ſaying, 'Maleck, did not you ſee fowls 'when you was there?' He ſaid, he did not know, what were they like. 'They are a bird,' ſays I. 'And 'what ſort of a thing is that?' ſays he. Youwee hearing us in this debate, 'Maleck,' ſays ſhe, 'did not you ſee 'me toſs down little nuts to ſomething 'that you ſtared at; you ſaw them eat 'the nuts.'—'O dear,' ſays he, 'I 'know it very well, with two legs and 'no arms.'—'The ſame,' ſays I, 'Maleck; do you go look for a little 'houſe almoſt by my grotto, and at 'night you will find theſe things 'ſtand on ſticks in that houſe. Take 'them down gently, and come away 'with them in the cheſts.' Maleck performed his buſineſs to a hair, but inſtead of forty-eight, brought me ſixty, telling me, he found the cheſts would hold them very well; and I kept them afterwards in the king's garden.

CHAP. XVIII.

PETER GOES TO HIS FATHER'S—TRAVERSES THE BLACK MOUNTAINS—TAKES A FLIGHT TO MOUNT ALKOE—GAINS THE MINERS—OVERCOMES THE GOVERNOR'S TROOPS—PROCLAIMS GEORIGETTI KING—SEIZES THE GOVERNOR—RETURNS HIM THE GOVERNMENT—PETER MAKES LAWS WITH THE CONSENT OF THE PEOPLE—AND RETURNS TO BRANDLEGUARP WITH DEPUTIES.

NO farther project being ripe for execution, I took a journey home with my father to Arndrumnſtake, and he would take all the children with him. Youwarkee and I ſtayed about ſix weeks, leaving all the children with my father.

Upon my return, I frequently talked with Maleck about his country; who they originally were, and how long it had been inhabited, and what other countries bordered thereon, and how they lay. He told me, his countrymen looked upon themſelves to be very ancient, but they were not very numerous; for the old ſtock was almoſt worn out by the hardſhips they had undergone; that about three hundred years before, he ſaid, as he had it from good report, there were a people from beyond the ſea, or as they called themſelves from the little lands, had ſtrangely over-ran them; and he had heard ſay, they would have over-run this country too, but they thought it would not anſwer. He ſaid, when thoſe people firſt came, they began to turn up the earth to a prodigious depth; 'And now,' ſays he, bringing ſome naſty hard earth of ſeveral ſorts, 'they put it into great fires 'till it runs about like water, and 'then beat it about with great heavy 'things into ſeveral ſhapes; and ſome 'of it, Sir,' ſays he, 'looks juſt like 'that ſtuff that lay at the bottom of 'your ſhip, and ſome almoſt white, 'and ſome red; for when I was a boy 'I was to have been ſent to work 'amongſt them, as my father did; 'but it having killed him, I came hi-'ther, as many more have done, to 'avoid it.'—'And what do they do 'with it,' ſays I, 'when they have 'beat it about as you ſay?'—'Then,' ſays he, 'they carry it a long way to 'the ſea.'—'What then?' ſays I. 'Why then the little landers take it, 'and ſwim over the ſea with it.'—'And what do they do with it?' ſays I. 'Why,' ſays he, 'there are other 'people who take it from them, and

'go

'go away with it.'—'Why do they 'let them take it?' says I. 'Because,' says he, 'they give them cloaths for 'it.'—'Do they want cloaths,' says I, 'more than you?' He told me they had no graundee. 'And what other 'countries have you here about?'—'There is one country,' says he, 'north of Alkoe, where they say there 'is just such another people as the 'Little-landers, and they get some of 'the things from Mount Alkoe.'—'What do they do with them?' says I. 'I don't know,' says he; 'they fetch 'a great deal; but they won't let any 'body come into their country.'—'Is 'there nobody inhabits between the 'Mountain Alkoe and the sea?' He told me no, the Little-landers would not let them.

Having got what information I could from Maleck, and also from a countryman or two of his he had brought to me, I considered it all over; 'And,' thinks I, 'if I could but get Mount 'Alkoe to submit,' (for they had told me they were only governed by a deputy from the Little-lands) 'to see the 'work done, I might, by intercepting 'the trade to the sea, turn the profit of 'the country my own way, and make 'it pass through our hands.'

I next enquired of those who brought the fruits from the great forest, what sort of land they had there; and found, by their description, it was a light mould, and in many places well covered with grass and herbs; and, by all the report I could hear, must be a fruitful country, well managed; and being a flat country, and not encompassed on that side with the black mountain, was much higher than Doorpt Swangeanti. This news put me upon searching the truth of it; and I made the tour of the black mountain and the great forest, alighting often to make my observations. The forest is a little world of wood without end, with here and there a fine lawn very grassy; and indeed the wood-grounds bear it very well, the trees not standing in crowds, but at a healthy distance from each other. I went abundantly farther than any one had before been, but saw no variation in the woody scene; and coming round westward home, I had a view of hoximo; which is nothing but a narrow cleft in the earth, on the top of the black mountain, of a most extraordinary depth; for, upon dropping a stone down, you shall hear it strike and hum for a long time before all is quiet again; and laying my ear over the cleft, whilst I ordered one of my attendants to throw a large stone down, after the usual thumps and humming, I imagined I heard it dash in water, so that it is not impossible it may reach to the sea; which is at least six or seven miles below it. Into this hole all dead bodies are precipitated, from the king to the beggar; for four glumms holding by the ancles and wrists of the deceased, fly with them to hoximo, and throw them down, whilst the air is filled with the lamentations of the relations of the deceased, and of such others as are induced to follow the corpse for the sake of the wines, on such occasions plentifully distributed to all comers, by the gentry; and in the best proportion they are able by even the meanest amongst them.

After a stay of about fourteen days at home, I fixed my next trip for Mount Alkoe; and having told Maleck my design, he said he would go with me with all his heart, but feared I should get no Brandleguarpine to bear me; for he told me they had an old tradition, that Mindrack lived there, and would not go for all the world; 'Which has been the greatest security 'that country has had, for this would 'have devoured them else,' says he.

I spoke to the king, to Nasgig, and the ragans; and found them all unanimous, that the mountain Alkoe was the habitation of Mindrack, and that the noises which had been heard there, were his servants beating bad men. Says I to myself, 'Here is one of the 'usefullest projects upon earth spoiled, 'by an unaccountable prepossession: 'what must be done to overcome this 'prejudice?'

I told Maleck I found what he said to be too true, as to the people of Brandleguarp; 'But,' says I, 'are 'there not enough of your country-'men here to carry me thither?' He believing there were, I ordered him to contract with them; but it vexed me very much to be obliged to take these men. However, though I resolved to go, yet I chose to reason the ragans into the project, if I could; thinking they would soon bring the people over.

I called ſeveral of the ragans together, and ſaid: 'Becauſe you are a 'wiſer and more thinking people than 'the vulgar, I have applied myſelf to 'your judgments in the affair of 'Mount Alkoe. Now, conſider with 'yourſelves, whether you have any 'real reaſon beyond a prepoſſeſſion, 'for thinking theſe people fiends or 'devils ſervants, as you call them, 'without farther examination; for, 'according to my comprehenſion, they 'only underſtanding the nature of 'ſeveral ſorts of earth, reduce them 'by labour and fire to ſolid ſubſtances 'for the uſe of mankind; and the want 'of theſe things is the reaſon of your 'living as you do, without an hundredth part of the benefits of life. 'Theſe ſort of people, theſe noiſes, 'and theſe operations, which you hear 'and ſee carried on at Alkoe, are to 'be heard and ſeen in my country; 'and we deal and traffick with their 'labours, from one end of the world 'to the other; and we who are with 'them the happieſt, without them 'ſhould be the moſt miſerable of people. Did not ſome of you ſee, at my 'entertainment, what I called my 'knives and forks, and ſpoons, my 'piſtols, cutlaſſes, and ſilver cup? All 'theſe, and infinitely more, are the 'produce of theſe poor men's induſtry. 'Now,' ſays I, 'if we ſettle a communication with theſe people, your 'dues will be all paid in theſe curious 'things; you will have your people 'employed in working them, and 'have ſtrangers applying to you to 'ſerve them with what they want; 'who, in return, will give you what 'you want; and you will find yourſelves known and reſpected in the 'world.' Finding ſome of theſe arguments, applied to the men, had ſtaggered them a little, I applied to their ſenſes. Says I, 'It ſtill appears 'to me that you have your prejudices 'hanging on you: but what will you 'ſay if I go thither and return ſafe; 'will you be afraid to follow me another time?' They perſuaded me from it, as a dangerous experiment; but ſaid, if I did return, they would not think there was ſo much in it as they ſuſpected.

Maleck having choſen me out fourſcore of his countrymen, in about a month's time I trained them up to the knowledge of my piſtols and cutlaſſes, and the management of them; and taking a cheſt with me for the arms and other neceſſaries, we ſallied up to the black mountain. I reſted there; and there Naſgig and Laſmeel overtook me; ſaying, that when they found me obſtinate to go, they could not in their hearts leave me, happen what would. This put new ſpirits into me, and we conſulted how the noiſes lay, and agreed to engage firſt upon the ſkirts of them, where the ſmokes were moſt ſtraggling. I charged ſix guns, and all my piſtols, which I kept in my cheſt, and ordered them to alight with me about an hundred paces from the firſt ſmoke they ſaw; then ordered three of them to carry my guns after me, and twelve of them to take piſtols and follow me; but not to fire till I gave orders. The remainder I left with the baggage.

We marched up to the ſmoke, which iſſued out of a low arch-way juſt at the foot of the mountain. It was very light there with the flames of the volcano; and, entering the arch, a fellow ran at me with a red-hot iron-bar, him I ſhot dead; and ſeeing two more and a woman there, who ſtood with their faces to the wall of the hut or room, as unwilling to be ſeen, I ordered Maleck to ſpeak to them in a known tongue, and tell them we were no enemies, nor intended them any hurt; and that their companion's fate was owing to his own raſhneſs in running firſt at me with the hot bar; and that if they would ſhew themſelves good-natured and civil to us, we would be ſo to them; but if they offered to reſiſt openly, or uſe any manner of treachery towards us, they might depend upon the ſame fate their companion had juſt ſuffered.

Upon hearing this, they approached us; and ſhewing great tokens of ſubmiſſion, I delivered my gun to Maleck, and bade them go on with their work, ordering all the guns out of the ſhop, for fear of a ſpark. I then perceived they were direct forges, but made after another manner from ours, their wind being made by a great wheel, like a wheel of a water-mill, which worked with the fans or wings in a large trough, and cauſed a prodigious iſſue of air through a ſmall hole in the back of the fire-place. They were then drawing out iron-bars.

I gave

I gave each of these men, and also to the woman, a dram of brandy; which they swallowed down very greedily, and looked for more, and seemed very pleasant. I then enquired into the trade; by whom, and how it was carried on; and they told me just as Maleck had done. I then asked where the mines lay; and one of them looking full at me said, 'Then you know 'what we are about.'—'Yes,' says I, 'very well.' He told me the mine was (in his language, as Maleck interpreted it) about a quarter of a mile off, and directed me to it. I ordered them to go on with their work, telling them, though I left a guard over them, it was only that they might not raise their neighbours to disturb me; though if they did, I should serve them all as I had done their companion; and left four men with pistols at the arch-way.

I proceeded to the iron-mine, but supposed the men were all within, for I saw nobody; but there were many large heaps of ore lying, which I felt of; and, being vastly heavy, I supposed it might be rich in metal.

I returned to my men at the arch, and asked them what other mines there might be in that country, and of what other metals; but Maleck not knowing the metals themselves, was not able to interpret the names they called them by. I then shewed them an English halfpenny, a Portuguese piece of silver-money, and my gold watch; and asking if they had any of those, they pointed to the halfpenny and silver-piece, but shook their heads at the watch. I then shewed them a musket-ball, and they said they had a great deal of that.

I desired them to shew me the way to the copper-mine, (pointing my finger to the halfpenny) and told them if they would go with me, they should have some more, (pointing to my brandy;) and they readily agreed, if I would stand by them for leaving their work. I believe it might be two miles farther on the right to the copper-mine; and as these men had the graundee, I expected they would have flown by me; but I found they had a light chain round their graundee, which prevented them; so I walked too; and having made them my friends by being familiar with them, I desired they would go in, and let the head-man of the works know that a stranger desired to speak with him, and view his works, and to inform him how peaceable I was if he used me civilly; but that I could strike him dead at once if he did not.

I do not know how they managed, or what report they made; but the man came to me very courteously, and I bade Maleck ask if he came in friendship, as I did to him; and he giving me that assurance, I went in with him, taking Nasgig and Maleck with me, and leaving our fire-arms without. I ordered them both, as I did myself, to carry their cutlasses, sheathed in their hands, for fear of a surprize. We saw a great quantity of copper-ore, and several melting-vats, being just at the mouth of the mine, the mine running horizontally into the side of the mountain, and, as they said, was very rich. I gave the head-man a little brandy, and two or three more of them, who had been industrious in shewing and explaining things to me.

I desired the foreman to walk out with me; and, asking how long he had been in that employ, he told me he was a native of the Born Isles, and was brought thither young, where he first wrought in the iron, then in the silver, and now in this mine: that he had been there twenty years, and never expected to be delivered from his miserable slavery; but as he was now overseer of that work, he did pretty well, though nothing like freedom. He told me they expected several new slaves quickly; for the mines killed those they did not agree with so fast, they were very thinly wrought at present, and that the governor was gone to the isles to get more men. I was glad to hear this: 'And, pray,' says I, 'where 'does the governor reside?' He (pointing to the place) told me. 'And what 'guard,' says I, 'may he keep?'—'About four hundred men; but no-'body durst molest him,' says he; 'for he tortures them in such a man-'ner, never killing them, that not the 'least thing can be done against his 'will.'

After we had talked a good while on the misery of slavery, and finding him a man fit for my purpose, I asked him if he would go with me to Brandleguarp; 'For,' said I, 'there are 'certainly good mines in those moun-

'tains; and if you will overlook them, 'you ſhall be free, and have whatever 'you deſire.' He ſhook his head, ſaying, how could he expect to be free where all the reſt were ſlaves; 'And, 'beſides,' ſays he, 'they are in ſuch 'commotions among themſelves, that 'it is ſaid the ſtate will be torn to 'pieces.'—'You are miſtaken,' ſays I, 'very much; I myſelf have ſettled 'peace amongſt them, and killed the 'uſurper.'—'Is it poſſible!' ſays he; 'and are you the man it was ſaid they 'expected to come out of the ſea?'—'The very ſame,' ſays I: 'and as to 'ſlavery, there is not a ſlave in the 'kingdom; nor ſhall be here, if you 'will hearken to me.'—'That would 'be a good time indeed,' ſays he. 'Well,' ſays I, 'my friend, I pro-'miſe you it ſhall be ſo; only obſerve 'this, that when I come to reduce the 'governor, do none of you miners 'aſſiſt him.' He promiſed he would let the other miners ſecretly know it, and all ſhould be as I wiſhed; but deſired me to be expeditious, for the governor was expected every day.

I went from him to the other mines, and my guides with me; who ſeeing me ſo well received at the copper-mine, and reporting it to the others, it cauſed my proceedings to go on ſmoothly, and my offers to be readily embraced whereever I came.

Having prepared matters thus, I ſet Maleck and his countrymen upon the natives, to treat with them about ſubmiſſion to Georigetti, on promiſe of freedom; who being aſſured of what I had done at Brandleguarp, and in hopes of like liberty, readily came into it; ſo that the only thing remaining was, before the governor's return, to attack the ſoldiery. Having, therefore, renewed my engagements with the miners, and believing myſelf upon as good terms with the natives as I could wiſh, I was adviſed by Naſgig and Laſmeel to return for cannon and a large army, before I attacked the ſoldiery: but I, who had all my life rode upon the ſpur, having conſidered that an opportunity once loſt is never to be regained, and though I could have wiſhed for ſome cannon, I valued the men but for them; I therefore formed my reſolves to march with the force I had next morning, and pitch upon a plain juſt by the governor's garriſon, in order, if I could, to draw his men out. I did ſo, and it anſwered; for, upon the firſt news of my coming, they appeared with a ſort of heavy-headed weapons, which hurling round, they threw upwards aſlope, in order to light upon the backs of their enemies in flight, and beat them down; but they could not throw them above thirty paces.

I ſat ſtill in my chair, with a gun in my hand, and Maleck with another at my elbow, with four more lying by me, ready to be preſented; Laſmeel ſtanding by to charge again as faſt as we fired. I ordered a party of twenty of my men, with cutlaſſes, to attack the van of the enemy, by ruſhing impetuouſly upon them, they coming but thin againſt me; for I was not willing to employ my pieces till I could do more execution. They began the attack about an hundred yards before me, not very high in the air; and my cutlaſs-men having avoided the firſt flight of their weapons, fell upon them with ſuch fury, that chopping here a limb, and there a graundee, which diſabling their flight, was equally pernicious, they fell by ſcores before me: but I ſeeing thoſe in the rear, which made a body of near three hundred, coming very ſwift and cloſe in treble ranks, one above the other, hoping to bear down my handful of men with their numbers, I ordered my men all to retire behind me, and not, till the enemy were paſſed over my head, to fall on them. Maleck and I, as they came near, each firing a piece together, and whipping up another, and then another, in an inſtant, they fell round us, roaring and making a horrid yell. This the reſt ſeeing, went over our men's heads, not without many falling from the cuts of my men; and thoſe who eſcaped were never heard of more.

The miners, who from their ſeveral ſtations had beheld the action, came ſinging and dancing, from every quarter, round me; and if I had not drawn my men cloſe in a circle about me, would probably, out of affection, have done me more hurt than two of the governor's armies; for againſt theſe common gratitude denied the uſe of force; and they crouding every one but to touch me, they ſaid, for fear of being preſſed to death myſelf, as

ſome

ſome of them almoſt were, I ordered them to be let in through my men, at one ſide of the ring, and, paſſing by and touching me, to be let out on the other ſide; and this quieted them, but kept me in penance a long time.

We then marched in a body all into the town, where we were going to proclaim Georigetti King of Mount Alkoe; when a ſurly fellow, much wiſer than the reſt, as he thought, being about to harangue the people againſt being too haſty in it, was knocked down, and trod to death for his pains; and we went on with the proclamation, giving general liberty to all perſons without exception.

The next thing to be conſidered was, how to oppoſe the governor when he came; and for that purpoſe I enquired into the manner of his coming, the road he came, and his attendants; and being informed that an hundred of his guards, who had not the graundee, waited for him at the ſea-ſide, and that he had got no other guard, except a few friends and the ſlaves he went for, and that the ſlaves always came firſt, ſix in a rank tied together, under convoy of a few of his guards, I went in perſon to view the rout he came, and ſeeing a very convenient poſt in a thick wood through which they were to paſs, from whence we might ſee them before they came near us, I poſted a watch on the ſea-ſide of the wood, and myſelf and men lay on the hither-ſide of it, juſt where the governor's party muſt come out of it again: ſo that my watch giving notice of their approach, we might be ready to fall on at their coming out of our ſide of the wood.

When we had waited three days, our watch brought word they were coming; ſo we kept as cloſe as poſſible, letting the ſlaves and guards march on, who came by about two hours march before the governor: but ſo ſoon as he approached, I drew up my men on the plain within the wood in ranks, ordering them to lie cloſe on their bellies till they ſaw me riſe, and then to riſe, follow me, and obey orders.

Several of the firſt ranks having paſſed the wood, juſt as the governor had entered the open country, I roſe, and bade Maleck call aloud, that if any of them ſtirred or lifted up a weapon, he was a dead man; and then ſeeing one of the foremoſt running, I fetched him down with a muſket-ſhot, bidding Maleck tell the reſt, that if they ſubmitted and laid down their weapons, they were ſafe; but if they refuſed, I would ſerve them all as I had done him who fled. This ſpeech, with the terror of the gun, fixed every man to his place like a ſtatue.

I then went forward to the governor, and by Maleck, my interpreter, aſked him who they all were with him: he told me his ſlaves. I then made him call every man before him, and give him freedom; which, finding no way to avoid, (for I looked very ſtern) he did, and I had enough to do to quiet my new freemen, who, I thought, would have devoured me for joy. I aſked whither he was going; he ſaid, to his government. 'Under whom 'do you hold it?' ſays I. 'Under the 'zaps of the iſles,' ſays he. I then told him, that whoever held that government for the future, muſt receive it from the hands of Georigetti, the king of that country, to whom all the natives and miners had already engaged their fidelity. I told him both natives and foreigners had been all declared free.

The governor ſeemed much dejected, and told me he hoped I would not uſe him or his company ill. I told him that depended entirely on his own and their good behaviour. I aſked who his friends were that were with him; he ſaid, they were ſome of the zaps relations, who were come to ſee the method of the government, and inſpect the mines.

Ordering all the governor's guards and friends to go before, and all my own, but Maleck, to keep backwards ſome paces, I entered into diſcourſe with him about the ſtate of the iſles, and the country of Alkoe; and finding him a judicious perſon, and not a native of the iſles, I thought, with ſome management, he might prove a uſeful perſon to me, but did not like the character I had heard of his ſeverity: ſo I plainly told him, that only one thing prevented my making him a greater man than ever he was; which was, I had been informed he had a roughneſs in his nature which drove him to extremities with the poor ſlaves, which I could not bear. 'Sir,' ſays he, 'whatever a man is in his natural 'temper, where ſlavery abounds it is

'neceſſary

'neceſſary to act, or at leaſt be thought 'to do ſo, in a mercileſs manner. I 'am intruſted with the government of 'a land of only ſlaves; who have no 'more love, nor are they capable of 'any, for me, than the herbs of the 'ground have. I am to render an ac-'count to my maſters of their labours; 'they work by force, and would not 'ſtir a ſtep without it, or the fear of 'correction; for which reaſon the rod 'muſt be ever held over them; and 'though I ſeldom let it fall, when I 'do, the ſuffering of one is too long 'remembered to permit others quickly 'to ſubject themſelves to the like pu-'niſhment: and this method I judged 'to be the moſt mild, as the death or 'ſufferings of one but ſeldom, muſt, 'though ever ſo ſevere, be milder than 'the frequent execution of numbers. 'And as to my appearing ſevere to 'them, my poſt required it; for mercy 'to ſlaves being interpreted into fear, 'arms them with violence againſt 'you.'

I could not gainſay this, eſpecially as he told me he was glad I had freed them all; 'For no man,' ſays he, 'but 'if he were to chuſe, would rather 'reign by love (which he may in a 'free country, but it is impractica-'ble in one of ſlaves) than by fear, 'which alone will keep the latter in 'ſubjection.'

I aſked him whether, as he knew the nature of the country, and the buſineſs of the governor, he could become faithful to my maſter Georigetti: he told me he had ever been faithful to his maſters the zaps, and would till he was ſure (without ſuſpecting in the leaſt my veracity) all was true that I was pleaſed to tell him; for nothing could ſatisfy his conſcience but being an eye-witneſs of it; and then being diſcharged from any farther capacity of ſerving them in an open way, he ſhould be free to chuſe his own maſter; of all whom, Georigetti ſhould to him be moſt preferable; but begged me not to interpret his deſire of retaining fidelity to his old maſters till he could no longer ſerve them, into an implication of aſſiſting them, by either open or concealed practices; for, wherever he engaged, he would be true to the utmoſt.

At the end of ſix days (for I travelled on foot with them) we arrived at the governor's palace, which we found without a guard, and all the ſlaves he had ſent before him at liberty: ſo I ordered my men to ſupply the uſual guard, and took my lodging in the governor's apartment.

As Gadſi (for that was the governor's name) was not confined, or any of his friends, he came into my apartment, and told me, ſince he had found all things anſwered my report, if I pleaſed, he would quit the palace to me, and every thing belonging to the government. I told him he ſaid well. He did ſo, taking with him only ſome few things, his own property. So ſoon as he was without the territory of the palace, I ſent for him and his friends back again: he could not help being dejected at his return, fearing ſome miſchief. 'Gadſi,' ſays I, 'this 'palace and this country, which I now 'hold for my maſter Georigetti, I de-'liver in cuſtody to you as his gover-'nor; and now charge you to make 'acknowledgment of your fidelity to 'him.' Then taking it from him in terms of my own propoſing, I delivered him the regalia of his government, charging him to maintain freedom: 'But,' ſays I, 'let no man eat 'who will not work, as the country 'and the produce are the king's.'

I then ſummoned an aſſembly of the people, and ſent notice to all the miners to attend me. I told them, all that the king deſired of them was to make themſelves happy; 'And as the mines 'at preſent,' ſays I, 'are the only 'employment of this country, I would 'have it agreed by your own conſent; 'for I will force nothing upon you, 'that every man amongſt you, from 'ſixteen to ſixty, ſhall work every 'third week at the mines, and other 'duties of the government; and two 'weeks out of three ſhall be your own 'to provide in for your families: and 'if I live to come back again, you 'ſhall each man have ſo much land 'of his own, as ſhall be ſufficient 'for his family; and I will make it 'my buſineſs to ſee for ſeeds to im-'prove it with. And this week's work 'in three, and if afterwards it can be 'done with leſs, in four, ſhall be an 'acknowledgment to the king for his 'bounty to you. Do you agree to 'this?' They all, with one voice, cried out, 'We do!' — 'Then,' ſays I,

'agree

'agree amongſt yourſelves, and part 'into proper diviſions for carrying on 'the work; that is, into four parts, 'one for each ſort of metal; and then 'again, each of thoſe four into three 'parts; and on every ſeventh day in 'the morning, let thoſe who are to be-'gin meet thoſe who are leaving off 'work; ſo that there be clear ſix days 'work, and one of going and return-'ing. Do you all agree to this?' All cried, 'We do!'—'Then,' ſays I, 'whoever neglects his duty, unleſs 'through ſickneſs, or by leave of 'the governor, ſhall work a double 'week. Do you agree to this?'—'We do!'—'Then all matters of dif-'ference between you ſhall be decided 'by the governor; and in caſe of any 'injury or injuſtice, or wrong judg-'ment in the governor, by Georiget-'ti. Do you agree?'—'We do!'—'Then,' ſays I, 'agree upon ten 'men, two for the natives, and two 'for each mineral work, to ſend with 'me to Brandleguarp, to petition Ge-'origetti to confirm theſe laws, till 'you ſhall make others yourſelves, 'and to acknowledge his ſovereignty. 'Do you agree?'—'We do!'

I then told them, that as thoſe who had been ſlaves were now free, they might, if they pleaſed, return home; but, as I ſhould make it my endeavour to provide ſo well for them in all the comforts of life, I believed moſt of them would be of opinion, their intereſt would keep them where they were. And, above all things, recommending a hearty union between the new freemen and the natives, and to marry amongſt each other, and to continue in love amongſt themſelves, and duty to the king and his governor; and promiſing ſpeedily to return and ſettle what was wanting, I diſmiſſed the aſſembly, and ſet out for Brandleguarp with the ten deputies: but I left Laſmeel behind with the governor, and two ſervants with him, to give me immediate notice in caſe any diſturbance ſhould happen in my abſence.

CHAP. XIX.

PETER ARRIVES WITH THE DEPUTIES—PRESENTS THEM TO THE KING—THEY RETURN—A COLONY DECREED TO BE SENT THITHER—NASGIG MADE GOVERNOR—MANNER OF CHUSING THE COLONY—A FLIGHT-RACE, AND THE INTENT OF IT—WALSI WINS THE PRIZE, AND IS FOUND TO BE A GAWREY.

AS we alighted at the palace late at night, I kept the deputies with me till next morning; when I went to the king, deſiring them to ſtay in my apartment till I had received his majeſty's orders for their admiſſion.

The king was but juſt up when I came in; and ſeeing me, embraced me, ſaying, 'Dear father, I am glad to 'meet you again alive; your ſtay has 'given me the utmoſt perplexity; and 'could I have prevailed with any of 'my ſervants to have followed you, I 'had ſent before this time to have 'known what was become of you.'

I told his majeſty, the greateſt pleaſure of my life conſiſted in the knowledge of his majeſty's eſteem for me; and he might depend upon it, I would take care of myſelf from a double motive, whilſt I was in his dominions; the one, from the natural obligation of my own preſervation; and the other, equally compulſive, of continuing ſerviceable to his majeſty, till I had made him more famous than his anceſtor, the great Begſurbeck.

I told his majeſty, as a ſmall token of my duty and affection to him, I was come to make him a tender of the additional title of King of Mount Alkoe. 'Father,' ſays he, 'we ſhall 'never be able to get a ſufficient num-'ber of my ſubjects to go thither; 'for though your ſafe return may be 'ſome encouragement, yet, whilſt 'their old apprehenſions ſubſiſt, (and 'I know not what will alter them) we 'can do no good: and, indeed, were 'they free to go, and under no ſuſpi-'cion of danger, it would coſt abun-'dance of men to conquer Mount 'Alkoe.'

'Great Sir,' ſaid I, 'you miſtake 'me! I told you I came to make you 'a tender of it; I have proclaimed 'you king there, and freedom to the 'people: I have held an aſſembly of 'the kingdom; placed a governor; 'taken the engagement of himſelf and 'ſubjects to you; ſettled laws amongſt 'them for your benefit, the full third 'part of all their labour; have brought

'ten

'ten deputies, two from each denomi-
'nation of people among them: and
'they only wait your command to be
'admitted, to beg your acceptance of
'their ſubmiſſion, and pray your royal
'protection.'

'Father,' ſays the king, 'you amaze
'me! but, as it is your doing, let them
'come in.'

The deputies being received, and heard by Maleck, their interpreter, very graciouſly, the king told them, in a very favourable ſpeech, that whatever his father had done, or ſhould do, they might accept as done by himſelf; and commanded them to remind the governor, for whom he had the higheſt eſteem, to obſerve the laws, without the leaſt deviation, till his father ſhould make ſuch farther additions as were conſiſtent with his own honour and their future freedom: and having feaſted them in a moſt magnificent manner, they returned, highly ſatisfied with the honours they had received.

This tranſaction being immediately noiſed abroad, all the colambs came themſelves; and the great cities, by their deputies, ſent his majeſty their compliments upon the occaſion; and there was nothing but mirth and rejoicing throughout the whole kingdom. And thoſe who had refuſed going with me, as Maleck told me, hung their heads for ſhame and ſorrow, that they had miſſed the opportunity of bearing a part in the expedition.

I demonſtrated to the king, that the only way to preſerve that kingdom was to ſettle a large colony on the plains, between the mountain and the ſea, to intercept clandeſtine trade, and make a ſtand againſt any force that might be ſent from the Little-lands to recover the mines. And I promiſed to be preſent at the ſettlement, and an aſſiſtant in it.

Moſt of the colambs, as I ſaid, being at court upon this complimentary affair, the king ſummoned them for their advice on my propoſals; and told them he had ordered me to lay before them my thoughts on the affairs of that kingdom; and, after many compliments and encomiums had paſſed on me, I told them the neceſſity of the colony, the commodity that would ariſe from it, how I intended to manage it, and what proſpect I had of introducing amongſt them ſeveral extraordinary conveniences they had never before had.

The colambs, who, for want of practice this way, knew but little of the matter, thinking, nevertheleſs, that in the general turn of things, they muſt ſomehow come in for a ſhare, approved of all I ſaid. I deſired them then to ſettle, out of what part of the people, and how to be nominated, ſuch choice of the colony as ſhould be made for the new ſettlement; but found them much at a loſs to fix on any method of doing it. So I told them, I believed it would be the beſt way to iſſue an order for ſuch as would willingly go, to repair to a particular rendezvous; and in caſe ſufficient ſhould not appear voluntarily, to iſſue another order, that the colambs, out of their ſeveral diſtricts, ſhould compleat the number, ſo as to make a body of twelve thouſand men of arms, beſides women and children; and that ſuch a territory ſhould be allotted to each, with ſo much wood-grounds, in common to all, as would ſuffice for their ſubſiſtence: all which paſſed the vote.

I then told them, that this large people muſt have an head, or governor, to keep them to their duties, and to determine matters of property, and all diſputes amongſt them. Here they one and all nominated me; but I told them, I apprehended I could be more uſeful other ways, having too many things in my head for the general good, to confine myſelf to any particular province; but if they would excuſe me in preſuming to recommend a perſon, it ſhould be Naſgig. And immediately Naſgig being ſent for, and accepting it, they conferred it upon him.

All things, as I judged, went on in ſo ſmooth a way, in reference to the new colony, that I was preparing, with the aſſiſtance of the proper officer, expreſſes to be ſent with the king's gripſacks, into the ſeveral provinces, with notice of theſe orders, and an appointment for a rendezvous. But while this was doing, abundance of people came crouding about me, to be informed, whether I thought it ſafe for them to go; and I believe I had fully ſatisfied all their ſcruples, when by ſome management of the ragans, who, having ſo long declared Mount Alkoe to be inhabited by Mindrack, did not care the people ſhould all of a ſudden find out they had deceived them, there was a report ran current, that though I and my bearers, who were all Mount Alkoe men, returned ſafe, yet if any of the

the Brandleguarpines had gone, they would never have come back again. This rumour coming to my ears, and fearing whitherto it might grow, I had no ſmall proſpect of a diſappointment; and I thereupon ſtopped iſſuing the orders till I had conſidered what farther to do in the affair: at length, being perſuaded I had already ſatisfied abundance of their ſcruples, and in order to diſſipate the doubts of others, and to familiarize them in ſome meaſure to the country and people of Mount Alkoe, I propoſed a prize to be flown for, and gave notice of it for ſix days all about the country, both to thoſe of Mount Alkoe, and thoſe of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti; that whoever, except thoſe who were with me in the late expedition, ſhould make the moſt ſpeedy flight to the governor's of Mount Alkoe, to carry a meſſage, and bring me an anſwer from Laſmeel, ſhould have one of my piſtols, with a quantity of powder, and ſo many balls; and the perſon who ſhould be ſecond, ſhould have a cutlaſs and belt. The time being fixed, very few had entered in the firſt two or three days; but on the third day came ſeveral over from Alkoe to enter, which the Brandleguarpines ſeeing, and having equal inclination to the prize, after half a dozen of them had entered on the fourth morning, before noon on the fifth, I had near ſixty of them on my liſt, beſides the Alkoe men; making in all about one hundred.

The time of ſtarting was fixed for the ſixth morning, from off the rock, on the back-ſide of the palace, upon my firing a piſtol.

This unuſual diverſion occaſioned a prodigious confluence of ſpectators; for ſcarce a perſon in Brandleguarp, except thoſe who were either too young or too old for flight, but were upon one or other of the rocks: even the king himſelf and all his court were there, with infinite numbers from all diſtant parts.

I had diſpatched a letter, by one of my old bearers, to Laſmeel ſome days before, to inform him of it, that he might get two letters ready wrote, one to deliver to the firſt, and another to the ſecond meſſenger; but not to take farther notice of the reſt: now, my flight-race being for the equal benefit of both the kingdoms, it happened, as I was in hopes it would, that ſo many of the Mount Alkoans coming over to me to be entered, and ſtaying with me till the flight began; and ſuch vaſt numbers of perſons meeting of both nations upon the black mountains, to ſee them go and return; and ſeveral of the Swangeantines going, out of bravado, quite through with the flyers; the intercourſe of the two nations was that day ſo great, and the diſcourſe they had with the natives and miners, ſo ſtripped the Swangeantines of their old apprehenſions of danger from Mount Alkoe, that in three days after the whole dread of the place was vaniſhed, and he would then have been thought mad who had attempted to revive it.

The time being come, I ſet my flyers in a row on the outer edge of the rock; and having given notice that no one ſhould preſume to riſe till the flyers were on the graundee, and at ſuch a diſtance, I then let the flyers know I ſhould ſoon give fire; which I had no ſooner done but down they all dropped as one man, as it were, headlong from the edge of the mountain; and preſently the whole field were after them. They ſkimmed with incredible ſwiftneſs croſs the face of the plain, between the rock and the mountain; the force of which deſcent ſwung them as it were up the mountain's ſide in an almoſt upright poſture; till ſeeming to ſweep the edge of the mountain with their bellies, they ſlid over it's ſurface, till they were loſt in the body of the Swangean, our rocks echoing the ſhouts of the mountaineers. I fired my piſtol, by my watch, at nine o'clock in the morning, but had no occaſion to enquire when it was thought they would return, for every one was paſſing his opinion upon it. Some ſaid, it could not be till midnight, or very near it; and others, that it would be almoſt next morning. However, we went to dinner, and coming again about ſix o'clock by my watch, I was told by the people on the rock, as the general opinion, (for it was then topfull) that they could not yet be expected a long time; and the major part concluded they could not be half way home yet; when, on a ſudden, we heard a prodigious ſhout from the mountain, which growing nearer and nearer to us, and louder and louder,

in a few moments came a ſlim young fellow, and nimbly alighting on the rock, tripped briſkly forward, as not able to ſtop himſelf at once, from the violence of the force he came with, and delivered me a letter from Laſmeel as I was ſitting in my chair. I gave him joy of the prize, and ordered him to come to my apartment ſo ſoon as I got home, and he ſhould have it. I then aſked him where he left the other flyers: he told me, he knew nothing of them ſince he came paſt the forges in his return; for there he met them going to Laſmeel. 'Why that,' ſays I, 'muſt be a great way on this 'ſide the governor's.' He told me, about half an hour's flight. I then told him, as he muſt be ſtrained with ſo hard a flight, it would be better if he laid down, and called on me in the morning. He thanked me; and after he had told me his name was Walſi, he ſaid he would take my advice; and, ſpringing up as light as air, went off, the rock being quite thronged with thoſe who had followed from the mountain to ſee the victor.

When Walſi came in, it was juſt ſeven o'clock by my watch; ſo that, according to the beſt computation by miles I could make from their deſcriptions of things, I judged he had flown at little more or leſs than at the rate of a mile a minute.

I ſtayed till near nine o'clock upon the rock, where it being cold, and the time tedious, I was taking Quilly home with me, and deſigned that Maleck ſhould wait for the coming of the ſecond; but hearing again a ſhout from the mountain, I reſolved to ſee the ſecond come in myſelf. The noiſe increaſing, I preſently ſaw the whole air full of people, very near me, for I had retired near two hundred paces from the edge of the rock to give room to the flyers to alight, and expected nothing leſs than to be borne down by them; when I ſpied two competitors, one juſt over the back of the other, the uppermoſt bearing down upon the other's graundee, their heads being juſt equal; ſo that the under man perceiving it impoſſible to ſink lower for the rock, or to mount higher, for the man above him, and as darting ſideways would loſe time, and fearing to bruſh his belly againſt the rock, he ſlackened, juſt to job up his head in his antagoniſt's ſtomach; which giving the upper man a ſmart check with the pain, and the under-one ſtriking, at that inſtant, one bold ſtroke with his graundee, he fell juſt with his head at my feet, and the other upon him, with his head in the under man's neck.

Thus they lay, for a conſiderable time, breathleſs and motionleſs, ſave the working of their lungs, and heaving of their breaſts; when each aſked me if he was not the firſt, and the under man giving me a letter; I told them, 'No,' Walſi had been in almoſt two hours ago. They both ſaid, it was impoſſible; they were ſure no glumm in the Doorpt could out-fly either of them. I ordered them both to call on me in the morning, and I would ſee they ſhould have right done to their pretenſions. The under man had but juſt told me his name was Naggitt, when another arrived, who, ſeeing Naggitt before him, told me he was ſure he was ſecond; but on ſeeing the other alſo, he gave it up.

I would ſtay no longer, it being now ſo late; but the next morning I was informed, that all the reſt had ſtopped at the mountain but two, who were obliged to give out before, being overſtrained, and unable to hold it.

The next morning, Walſi was the firſt at my apartment, when I happened to be with the king; and, ſpeaking of his buſineſs to Quilly, he ordered him to ſtay in my gallery till I came back; and Quilly preſently after ſeeing Youwarkee, told her the victor at the flight-race was waiting for me in the gallery. Youwarkee, who had great curioſity to ſee him, having heard how long he came in before the reſt, ſtepped into the gallery, and taking a turn or two there, fell into diſcourſe with him about his flight. And, as women are very inquiſitive, ſhe diſtinguiſhed, by the flyer's anſwers, ſpeech, ſhape, and manner of addreſs, that it was certainly a gawrey ſhe was talking with; though ſhe had endeavoured to diſguiſe herſelf, by rolling in her hair, and tying it round her head with a broad chaplet, like a man; and by the thinneſs of her body, and flatneſs of her breaſts, might fairly enough have paſſed for one, to a leſs penetrating eye than Youwarkee's. But Youwarkee putting ſome queſtions to her, and ſaying ſhe was more like a gawrey than

than a glumm, she put the poor girl (for so it was) to the blush, and at last she confessed the deceit; but, upon her knees, begged Youwarkee not to mention it, for it would be her undoing.

This confession gave Youwarkee a fair opportunity of asking how she came to be an adventurer for this sort of prize. The girl, finding there was no remedy, frankly confessed, she had a strong affection for a glumm-boss, who was a very stout glumm, she said, but somewhat too corpulent for speedy flight; who ever since the prize had been proposed, could rest neither night nor day, to think he was not so well qualified to put in for it as others; especially one Naggitt, who he well knew made his addresses to her, and also was an adventurer. 'Had it 'been a matter of strength, valour, 'or manhood,' says he, 'I had had 'the best of chances for it; but to be 'under a natural incapacity of ob-'taining so glorious a prize, as even 'the king himself is not master of 'such another, I cannot bear it!' She then said, he had told her, he was resolved to give in his name, and do his utmost, though he died in the flight. 'What!' said he, 'shall I see Nag-'gitt run away with it, and, perhaps, 'with you too, when he has that to 'lay at your feet which no glumm 'else can boast of? No, I'll overcome, 'or never come home without it.'— 'I must confess, Madam,' says Walsi, 'as I knew his high spirit could never 'bear to be vanquished, I was afraid 'he would be as good as his word, 'and come to some unlucky end; and 'told him, that though he need not 'have feared being conqueror in any 'thing else, had it been proposed, yet 'in flight, there were so many, half 'glumms as they were, who from 'their effeminate make and size, and 'little value for any thing else, would 'certainly be in before him; that it 'was unworthy of a thorough glumm 'to contend with them, for what 'could be obtained only by those who 'had no right to, or share in any 'thing more excellent; and that he 'must therefore not think of more 'than his fatigue for his pains. But 'as he had set his heart so much upon 'it, I would enter, and try to get it 'for him; as, from my size and make, 'I believed few would have a better 'chance for it than myself. And, 'thanks to Collwar, Madam,' says she, 'I hope to make him easy in it, 'if you will but please to conceal 'your knowledge of who and what 'I am.'

Youwarkee was mightily pleased with her story, and promised she would; but engaged her to come again to her apartment, so soon as she was possessed of the prize.

When I returned, hearing Walsi waited for me, I called him in, read the letter he brought, and finding it Lasmeel's, I looked over my list for Walsi's name, for I set them all down as they entered; and finding it the very last name of all, and that it was entered but on the morning the race was flown, 'So,' says I, 'Walsi, I 'find the last at entering is the first at 'returning; but I see you have been 'there, by what Lasmeel has sent me; 'though there were some last night 'who questioned it, by your so speedy 'return. Here,' says I, 'take the 'prize, and see they are only used in 'the service of your country:' and then I dismissed him.

My two competitors appeared next for the cutlass; and had each of them many arguments to prevail with me, in favour of him, but I told them, I must do justice; and that, though the difference was so small between them, yet certainly Naggitt was the nearest me at the time they both ceased flight, his face lying on my foot; so that as they both complained of foul play, and were therefore equal in that respect, Naggitt in justice must have it. And I gave it him with these words, however: 'Take it, Naggitt, as certain-'ly yours by the law of the race, but 'with a diffidence in myself who best 'deserves it.'

I own I pitied the other man's case very much, as I should Naggitt's, had the other won it; but seeing the other turning away, and hearing him say, 'But by half a head! when I had 'strove so hard!' as in a sort of dejection, I told them, they were both brave glumms, and of intrepid resolution; and gave him also one, with the like instruction as to Walsi.

Walsi went from me, as she had promised, to Youwarkee, who wanted more discourse with her; for in an af-

fair of love, her gentle heart could have dwelt all day upon the repetition of any circumſtances which would create delight in the enamoured. Youwarkee and Walſi ſat on thorns, wanting to be gone; but Youwarkee aſking queſtion upon queſtion, Walſi got up, and begged ſhe would excuſe her, ſhe would come and ſtay at any other time. 'But,' ſays ſhe, 'Madam, 'when the man one loves is in pain, '(for I am ſure he is on the rack for 'fear of a diſcovery, till he ſees me) 'if you ever loved yourſelf, you can'not blame me for preſſing to relieve 'him.'

When ſhe was gone, Youwarkee, finding me alone, was ſo full of Walſi's adventure ſhe could not be ſilent; but after twenty round-about ſpeeches, and promiſes that I was to make, not to be angry with any body, or undo any thing I had done that day, and I know not what, out came the ſtory. I was prodigiouſly pleaſed with it, and wiſhed I had taken more notice of her. Says Youwarkee, 'I endeavoured to 'keep her till you had done, that you 'might have ſeen her.'—'And why 'did not you?' ſays I. 'My dear,' ſays Youwarkee, 'had you ſeen the 'poor creature's uneaſineſs till ſhe got 'off with it, yourſelf could not have 'had the heart to have deferred that 'pleaſure you would have perceived 'ſhe expected when ſhe came home; 'nor could you in conſcience have 'detained her.'

CHAP. XX.

THE RACE RECONCILES THE TWO KINGDOMS—THE COLONY PROCEEDS—BUILD A CITY—PETER VIEWS THE COUNTRY AT A DISTANCE—HEARS OF A PROPHECY OF THE KING OF NORBON'S DAUGHTER STYGEE—GOES THITHER—KILLS THE KING'S NEPHEW—FULFILS THE PROPHECY, BY ENGAGING STYGEE TO GEORIGETTI—RETURNS.

THIS race, notwithſtanding all that the ragans could ſay to keep up their credit, and to prevent the people's perceiving what fools they had made of them, had ſo good and ſudden an effect on the people's prejudices, that upon iſſuing the firſt proclamation, there was no occaſion for the ſecond; for at leaſt twenty-five thouſand men appeared voluntarily at the rendezvous, of the old ſlaves, whoſe maſters, though they were declared free, had uſed divers devices to oppreſs them, and render even their freedom a ſort of ſlavery, beſides women and children: ſo that we had now only to pick and chuſe thoſe who would be likelieſt to be of ſervice to the new colony.

Naſgig and I differed now about the choice of perſons; he, as a ſoldier, was for taking moſtly ſingle young men, and I for taking whole families, though ſome were either too old or too young for war; and, upon farther conſideration, he agreed with me; for I told him, young men would leave a father, mother, or miſtreſs, behind them, which would either cauſe a hankering after home, and conſequently the bad example of deſertion, or elſe create an uneaſy ſpirit, and perhaps a general diſtaſte to the ſettlement, ſo we choſe thoſe whole families, where they offered, which had the moſt young men in them, firſt; then others, in like order; after that, man by man, aſking them ſeverally, if any woman they liked would go with them; and if ſo, we took her, till we had about thirteen thouſand fighting men, beſides old men, women, and children; and then, marching by the palace, the king ordered ten days ſtores for every mouth, and with this we took our flight: but as I was always fearful of a concourſe in the air, Naſgig led them, and I brought up the rear.

Beſides the above number of people, I believe we could not have leſs than ten thouſand volunteers to the black mountain; ſome to take leave of their friends, and others out of curioſity to ſee our flight. I took three pieces of cannon with me, and proper ſtores.

Our firſt ſtage, after a ſhort halt on the black mountain, was to the governor's palace; where Gadſi received us with great reſpect. I told him my errand, which he approved; 'For,' ſays he, 'countryman, it is now as 'much my intereſt to keep my old 'maſters out, as ever it was to ſerve 'them when in: and you have taken 'the only method in the world to 'do it effectually.' I conſulted him where

where I ſhould fix my colony; and, by his advice, fixed it on this ſide the wood, with ſome ſcattering habitations behind the wood, as watch-houſes, to give notice of an enemy, having the wood for ſhelter, before they could reach the town, and, at the worſt, the town for a retreat.

I found, by Gadſi, that the ſhips from the Little-lands were ſoon expected, for that, he ſaid, the zaps knew nothing yet of the change of government, nor could, till the ſhips returned: he aſked me, as there was now a good lading, whether I thought fit to let them have it upon proper terms. I told him, I would not hinder their having the metals, or endeavour to ſtop their trade in the leaſt; but ſhould be glad to treat with them about it myſelf.

I gave the forge-men deſcriptions for making ſhovels, ſpades, pickaxes, hammers, and abundance of other iron implements I ſhould want in the building the new town; all which we got ready, and carried with us. We then took flight, and alighted on the ſpot of our intended city; and having viewed the ground ſome miles each way, we drew the out-lines, and ſet a great number of hands to cutting down trees, digging holes, and making trenches for the foundations. In ſhort, we were all hands at it, and the women fetched the proviſions; but I was obliged to ſhew them every ſingle ſtep they were to take, towards the new erections: and, I muſt ſay, it was with great pleaſure I did it, they ſeldom wanting to be told twice, having as quick an apprehenſion of what they heard or ſaw, as any people I had ever met with.

The whole city, according to our plan, was to conſiſt of ſeveral long ſtraight ſtreets, parallel to each other, with gardens backwards each way, and traverſe-paſſages at proper diſtances, to croſs each ſtreet, from one to the other, quite through the whole city.

While this work was in hand, I took a progreſs to view the other country Maleck had told me of. We had not taken a very long flight, before we ſaw at a diſtance ſeveral perſons of that country travelling to Mount Alkoe for metals. I had a great mind to have ſome talk with them about their kingdom, and ordered my bearers to go to them; they told me, they durſt not, for one of them would kill ten men. I did not chuſe to force them to it, for fear of ſome miſchief; but obſerving which way they came, and that they came in ſeveral ſmall bodies, of ſix or eight together, and that there was a little wood, and ſome buhes between me and them, I ordered my bearers to ſink beneath the trees out of their ſight, and to ground me juſt at the foot of the wood; for I reſolved to know ſomething more of them before we parted.

I lay perdue, till they arrived within ſixty paces of me; then aſking Maleck if he knew their language, and he telling me he did, having often converſed with them at the mines, I bid him greet them, and tell them I was a friend, and be ſure to ſtand by me. There were ſeven of them, and many more at different diſtances. I ſhewed myſelf, and Maleck ſpoke to them, when two or three of the hindermoſt ran quite away; one ſtood and looked very ſurly; but the reſt, who had ſtood with him, turning to run, I bid Maleck tell him, if he did not call them back, I would kill them. He that ſtood then called to them, but they mending their pace upon it, I let fly, and ſhot one in the ſhoulder; who dropping, I was afraid I had killed him. I then went up to the other, who had not ſtirred even at the report of the gun; ſeeming quite terrified. I took him by the hand, and kiſſed it; which made him recover himſelf a little, and he took mine and kiſſed it.

I bid Maleck tell him I was a great traveller, and only wanted to talk with him; but ſeeing the man I had ſhot ſtir, I went to him, and by Maleck told him I was ſorry I had hurt him; which I ſhould not have attempted, had he not ſhewn a miſtruſt of me by running away, for I could not bear that: this I ſaid to keep the other with me. I ſaw I had hurt his ſhoulder, but, being at a great diſtance, the ball had not entered the blade-bone, but ſtopping there, had fallen out; ſo tying my handkerchief over it, I told him I hoped it would ſoon be well.

I enquired into their country, it's name, the intent of their journey this way, their trades, the fruits, birds, and beaſts of the country.

The man I had ſhot, I found, was in pain, which gave me no little concern;

cern; so I chiefly applied myself to the other, who told me the name of his country was Norbon, a large kingdom, and very populous, he said, in some parts of it, and was governed by Oniwheske, an old and good king. 'He 'has only one daughter,' says he, 'named Stygee; so that I am afraid, 'when he dies, it will go to a good 'for nothing nephew of his, a desperate debauched man; who will probably ruin us, and destroy that king-'dom, which has been in the Oniwheske family these fifteen hundred 'years.'—'Won't his daughter have 'the kingdom,' says I, 'after his 'death, or her children?'—'Children,' says he, 'no, that's the pity; 'all would be well if she had but children, and the state continue fifteen 'hundred years longer in the same good 'family.'—'How is it possible for any 'one to know that?' says I. 'You 'may know how long it has, but how 'long it will last, is mere guess-work.' —'No,' says he, 'this very time, and 'the present circumstances of our king-'dom, were foretold at the birth of the 'first king we ever had, who was of 'the present royal family.'—'How 'so?' says I. 'Why,' says he, 'before we had any king, we had a very 'good old man, who lived retired in 'a cave by the sea; and to him every 'body, under their difficulties, repaired for advice. This old man happening to be very ill, every body 'was under great affliction for fear 'they should lose him; when flocking 'to his assistance, he told them, they 'need not fear his death till the birth 'of a king, who should reign fifteen 'hundred years. At hearing this, all 'persons then present apprehended 'that his disorder had turned his brain; 'but he persisted in it, and recovered.

'After a few years, a great number 'of persons being about him, he told 'them he must now depart, for that 'their king was born, and pointed to a 'sucking child a poor woman had then 'in her arms. It caused a great wonder 'in his audience, at the thoughts of 'that poor child's ever becoming a 'king: but he told them, it was so 'decreed; and farther, that as he was 'to die the next day, if they would 'gather all together, he would let them 'know what was to come in future 'times.

'When they were met, the woman 'and child being amongst them, he 'told them, that child was their king; 'and that his loins should produce 'them a race of kings for fifteen hundred years; during which time, 'they should be happily governed: 'but then a female inhabitant of the 'skies should claim the dominion, and, 'together with the kingdom, be utterly 'destroyed, unless a messenger from 'above, with a crown in each hand, 'should procure her a male of her 'own kind; and then the kingdom 'should remain for the like number of 'years to her posterity. Now,' says he, 'the time will expire very soon, and 'as no one has been, or it is believed 'will ever come, with two such crowns, 'the Princess Stygee, though she undoubtedly will try for it, has little 'hopes of succeeding her father; for 'her cousin Felbamko pretends, as no 'woman ever reigned with us, he is 'the right heir, and will have the 'kingdom.'—'Pray,' says I, 'what 'do you mean by an inhabitant of the 'air?'—'O,' says he, 'she flies.'—'And do most of your country folks 'fly?' says I, 'for I perceive you 'you don't.'—'No,' says he, 'no 'one but the Princess Stygee.'—'How 'comes that about?' says I. 'Her 'mother, when she was with child with 'her,' says he, 'being one day in a 'wood near the palace, and having 'straggled from her company, was attacked by a man with a graundee, 'who, not knowing her, clasped her 'within his graundee, and would have 'debauched her; but perceiving her 'cries had brought some of her servants to her assistance, he quitted her, 'and went off: this accident threw 'her into such a fright, that it was a 'long time before she recovered; and 'then was delivered of a daughter 'with a graundee.'—'My friend,' says I, 'your meeting with me will be 'a very happy affair for your king-'dom. I am the man the princess 'expects; go back to the princess and 'let her and her father know, I will 'be with them in six days, and establish his dominions in the princess.'

The fellow looked at me, thinking I joked, but never offered to stir a foot. 'Why don't you go?' says I. 'And 'for the good news you bear to the 'princess, I'll see you shall be made

'one

'one of the greateſt men in Norbon.' The man ſmiled ſtill, but could not conceive I was in earneſt: I aſked him then how long he ſhould be in going to the palace; he ſaid three days at ſooneſt; 'Deliver but your meſſage 'right,' ſays I, 'and I'll aſſure you 'it ſhall be the better for you.' The man ſeeing me look ſerious, did at length believe me, and promiſed he would obey me punctually; but he had not ſeen how I came to the place he met me at, for I had ordered my bearers into the wood with my chair, before I ſhewed myſelf.

He arrived, as I afterwards found, at the palace, the fourth morning very early; and paſſing the guard in a great heat, with much ado was introduced to the king, and diſcharged himſelf of my meſſage. His majeſty giving no credit to him, thought he had been mad; but he affirming it to be true, and telling the king at what a diſtance I had knocked down his companion, and made a great hole in his back, only holding up a thing I had in my hand, which made a great noiſe; Oniwheſke ordered his daughter to come before him, who having herſelf heard the man's report, and being very willing to believe it, with the king's leave, deſired that the meſſenger might be detained till the appointed day, and taken care of; and that preparation ſhould be made for the reception of the ſtranger, in caſe it ſhould be true.

The noiſe of my coming, and my errand, excited every one's curioſity to ſee me arrive; and the day being come, I hovered over the city a conſiderable time, to be ſure of grounding right. The king and his daughter, on the rumour of my appearing, came forth to view me, and receive me at my alighting. The people were collected into a large ſquare, on one ſide of the palace, and ſtanding in ſeveral cluſters at different places, I judged where the king might ſeem moſt likely to be, and ordered my bearers to alight there; but I happened upon the moſt unlucky poſt, as it might have proved, and at the ſame time the moſt lucky I could have found there; for I had ſcarce raiſed myſelf from my chair, but Felbamko puſhing up to me through the throng, and lifting up a large club he had in his hand, had certainly diſpatched me, if I had not at the inſtant, drawn a piſtol from my girdle, and ſhot him dead upon the ſpot; inſomuch, that the club which was then over my head, fell gently down on my ſhoulder.

I did not then know who it was I had killed; but for fear of a freſh attempt, I drew out another piſtol and my cutlaſs, and enquiring at which part of the ſquare the king was, I walked directly up to him, he not as yet knowing what had happened. His majeſty and his daughter met me, and welcomed me into his dominions. I fell at the king's feet, telling him I brought a meſſage, which I hoped would excuſe my entering his majeſty's dominions without the formality of obtaining his leave.

When we came to the palace, the king ordered ſome refreſhments to be given me and my ſervants; and then that I ſhould be conducted to the room of audience.

The report of Felbamko's death had reached the palace before us, and that it was by my hand: this greatly ſurprized the whole court, but proved agreeable news to Stygee.

At my entrance into the room of audience, the king was ſitting at the farther end of it againſt the wall, with his daughter on his right-hand; and a ſeat was placed for me at his left, but nearer to the middle of the room ſideways, on which I was ordered to ſit down: there were abundance of the courtiers preſent, and above me was a ſeat ordered for one of them, who I found afterwards was one of the religious.

His majeſty aſked me aloud how it happened, that the firſt moment of my entering his dominions I ſhould dip my hands in blood, and that, too, of one of his neareſt relations.

I then got up to make my anſwer; but his majeſty ordering me to my ſeat again, I told him, that as it was moſt certain I knew no one perſon in his kingdom, ſo it could not be ſuppoſed I could have an ill deſign againſt any one, eſpecially againſt that royal blood, into whoſe hands I then came to render myſelf; but the truth was, that what I had done was in preſervation of my own life; for that the perſon ſlain had ruſhed through the crowd upon me with a great club, intending to murder me; and that whilſt the

blow

blow was over my head, I killed him in ſuch poſition, that by his fall the club reſted on my ſhoulder, but was then too weak to hurt me.

The king aſking if that was the real caſe, ſeveral from the lower end of the room ſaid they were informed it was; and one in particular ſaid he ſaw the tranſaction, and I had declared it faithfully. 'Then,' ſays the king, 'you 'are acquitted: and, now, what brings 'you hither? relate your buſineſs.'

'Great Sir,' ſays I, 'it is my pe-'culiar happineſs to be appointed by 'Providence as the propoſer of a mar-'riage for the princeſs Stygee, your 'daughter, with a potent neighbour-'ing monarch; having already been 'enabled to perform things paſt belief 'for his honour. Know then, great 'Sir, I am a native of the north, and, 'through infinite perils and hardſhips, 'at laſt arrived in the dominions of 'Georigetti, where I have given peace 'to his ſtate by the death of the uſur-'per Harlokin. I have alſo juſt con-'quered the kingdom of Mount Al-'koe for my maſter, and am here come 'to make your daughter an offer of 'both crowns, and alſo of all that is 'my maſter's, with his perſon in mar-'riage.'

The old prieſt then roſe, and ſaid, 'May it pleaſe your majeſty, we are 'almoſt right: but what has always 'ſtaggered me, is, how the perſon 'ſhould come; for the meſſenger to 'us on this errand is to come from 'above. Now this perſon has not the 'graundee, and therefore could not 'come from thence: as for the reſt, I 'underſtand the prince from whom he 'brings this offer to your daughter has 'the graundee, and ſo is a male of her 'own kind; and I underſtand the two 'kingdoms in his poſſeſſion to be the 'two crowns in the meſſenger's hands; 'but, I ſay, what I ſtick at is, his 'coming from above.'

'What,' ſays Stygee, 'did not you 'ſee him come?'—'No,' ſays he. 'O,' ſays ſhe, 'he came in the air, 'and was a long time over the city be-'fore he deſcended.'—'That's im-'poſſible,' ſays the old prieſt; 'for 'he is ſmooth, like us.'—'Indeed, 'Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'I ſaw him, and ſo 'did moſt of the court.' The king and nobles then atteſting this truth—'Sir,' ſays the prieſt to the king, 'it 'is compleated, and your majeſty muſt 'do the reſt.'

'I little expected,' ſays the king, 'to ſee this day—and now, daughter, 'as this meſſage was deſigned for you, 'you only can anſwer it; but ſtill I 'muſt ſay it ſurpaſſes my comprehen-'ſion, that in the decree of Providence 'it ſhould be ſo ordered, that the very 'hand which brings the accompliſh-'ment of what has been ſo long ſince 'foretold us, ſhould, without deſign, 'have firſt deſtroyed all that could 'have rendered the marriage-ſtate un-'comfortable to you.'

Stygee then declared ſhe ſubmitted to fate and her father's will.

I ſtaid here a week to view the country and the ſea, which I heard was not far off. Here were many uſeful beaſts for food and burden, fowls alſo in plenty, and fiſh near the ſea-coaſts, and the people eat fleſh; ſo that I thought myſelf amongſt mankind again. I made all the remarks the ſhortneſs of the time would allow, and then, taking my leave, departed.

I returned to the colony, where I heard that the Little-landers had been on the coaſt; but I not being there, or any lading ready, they were gone away again: however, they had detained two of them. I was pleaſed with that, but ſorry they were returned empty.

I examined the priſoners; and, by giving them liberty and good uſage, they ſettled amongſt us; and the next fleet that came, the ſailors to a man were all my own the moment they could get to ſhore: this, though I thought it would have ſpoiled our trade at firſt, brought the iſlanders and me to the following compromiſe, and upon this occaſion. Their ſhips having laid on our coaſts one whole ſeaſon for want of hands to carry them back, I came to an agreement with their commanders, (for they were all willing to return) that ſuch a number of them ſhould be left as hoſtages with me till the return of a number of my own men, which I ſhould lend them to navigate their ſhips home; and I ſent word to the zaps, that as it might be beneficial to us both to keep the trade ſtill on foot, to prevent the like inconveniences for the future, I would buy their ſhipping, paying for them in metals, and agree to furniſh them yearly with ſuch a quantity of my goods at

a ſtated

a ſtated price, and would ſend them by my own people; which they approving, the trade went on in a very agreeable and profitable manner, and we in time built ſeveral new veſſels of our own, and employed abundance of hands in the trade, and had plenty of handicraftſmen of different occupations, each of whom I obliged to keep three natives under him, to be trained up in his buſineſs.

CHAP. XXI.

A DISCOURSE ON MARRIAGE BETWEEN PETER AND GEORIGETTI—PETER PROPOSES STYGEE—THE KING ACCEPTS IT—RELATES HIS TRANSACTIONS AT NORBON—THE MARRIAGE IS CONSUMMATED—ACCOUNT OF THE MARRIAGE-CEREMONY—PETER GOES TO NORBON—OPENS A FREE TRADE TO MOUNT ALKOE—GETS TRADERS TO SETTLE AT NORBON—CONVOYS CATTLE TO MOUNT ALKOE.

AT my return to Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti, I went directly to the king, and giving him an account of the ſettlement, and my proceedings thereon, he told me his whole kingdom would not be an equivalent for the ſervices I had done him. I begged of him to look on them in no other light than as flowing from my duty; but if, when I ſhould be no more, he or his children would be gracious to my family, it was all I deſired.

'This, father,' ſays the king, 'I 'can undertake for myſelf; but who's 'to come after me, nobody knows, 'for I ſhall never marry. No! Yac'combourſe has given me a ſurfeit of 'woman-kind; and unleſs the ſtates 'will ſettle the kingdom on you, to 'which I will conſent, it will pro'bably be torn to pieces again by 'different competitors; for I am the 'laſt of the line of Begſurbeck, and 'of all the blood-royals: and, in'deed, who is ſo proper to maintain it 'flouriſhing, as he who has brought it 'to the preſent perfection?'

'Great Sir,' ſays I, 'my ambition 'riſes no higher than to abound in good 'deeds whilſt I live, and to perfect my 'children in the ſame principle; and 'this, I hope, will entitle them to a 'ſupport when I am gone. But,' ſays I, 'why is your majeſty ſo averſe from 'marriage, merely on account of a 'woman you could not expect to be 'true to you?'—'Not expect it!' ſays he; 'what ſtronger tie upon earth 'could ſhe have had to be true, than 'my affection, and all that my king'dom could afford her?'—'Weak 'things all, Sir,' ſays I. 'Why, what 'could ſhe have had?' ſays he, in ſome warmth. 'Honour, Sir,' ſays I, 'and 'virtue, both which ſhe abandoned to 'become yours; and thoſe once loſt, 'how could you expect her to be true?' —'You are too hard for me, father,' ſays he: 'but they are all alike, and 'I don't believe there's a grain of ho'nour in any of them.'—'In any of 'them like Yaccombourſe, I admit, 'Sir,' ſays I; 'but think not ſo of 'others, for no part of our ſpecies 'abounds more with it, or is more 'tender of it, than a good woman; 'and, take my word for it, Sir, there is 'more real ſincerity in an ordinary 'wife than in the moſt extraordinary 'miſtreſs. We are all biaſſed naturally 'by intereſt; and as there can be but 'one real intereſt between the man 'and wife, ſo the intereſt of a miſtreſs 'is, and ever will be, only to accom'modate herſelf; for it's all one to 'her with whom ſhe engages, ſo ſhe 'can raiſe but the market by a change. 'Now, if your majeſty could find an 'agreeable and virtuous wife, one de'ſerving of your royal perſon and bed, 'and perhaps with a kingdom for her 'dowry, a partner fit to ſhare your cares 'as well as glory, would it not be a 'great pleaſure to you to be poſſeſſed of 'ſuch a mate; and to ſee heirs ariſing 'under your joint-tuition, to convey 'down your royal blood to the lateſt 'poſterity? Would not this, I ſay, 'be a grateful reflection to you in your 'declining years?'

'Truly, father,' ſays the king, 'as 'you have painted it, the proſpect 'could not fail to pleaſe; and under 'the circumſtances you have put it, it 'would meet my approbation: but 'where is ſuch a thing as a woman of 'this character to be found? I fear 'only in the imagination.'

'Sir,' ſays I, after a ſeeming muſe for ſome time, 'what ſhould you think 'of Oniwheſke, the king of Norbon's

'daughter; he has but that one child, 'I hear?'—'Dear father, have done,' ſays his majeſty; 'to what purpoſe 'ſhould you mention her? We but 'barely know that there is ſuch a ſtate, 'we have never had an intercourſe; 'and, beſides, as you ſay he has but 'one child, can you ſuppoſe ſhe will 'ever marry, to leave ſo fine a king-'dom, and live here?'—'But, Sir,' ſays I, 'now we are ſuppoſing, ſup-'poſe ſhe ſhould, with her father's con-'ſent, be willing to marry you, would 'you have her for your queen?'—'To 'make any doubt of that, father,' ſays he, 'is almoſt to ſuppoſe me a fool.' —'Then, Sir,' ſays I, 'her father has 'conſented, and ſhe too; and if I durſt 'have preſumed ſo far, or had known 'your mind ſooner, ſhe would, I be-'lieve, have ventured with me to have 'become yours: but you might have 'ſlighted her, and crowned heads are 'not to be trifled with; but ſince you 'are pleaſed to ſhew your approbation 'of it, I can aſſure you, Sir, her per-'ſon will yield to none in your maje-'ſty's dominions; for, Sir, I have been 'there, and have ſeen her, and ſhe is 'your own, and her kingdom too, 'upon demand.'

'Father,' ſays the king, looking earneſtly at me; 'I have been fre-'quently, ſince I knew you firſt, in 'doubt of my own exiſtence; my life 'ſeems a dream to me; for if exiſtence 'is to be judged of by one's faculties 'only, I have been in ſuch a deluſion 'of them ever ſince, that as I find my-'ſelf unable to judge with certainty 'of any other thing, ſo I am ſubject 'to doubt whether I really exiſt. Are 'theſe things poſſible that you tell me, 'father?'

I then told him the whole affair, and adviſed him by all means to accept the offer, and marry the princeſs out of hand.

His majeſty, when I had brought him thoroughly to believe me, was as eager to conſummate the marriage, as I was to have him; but then, whether he ſhould go to her, or ſhe come to him, was the queſtion. I told him it was a thing unuſual for a ſovereign to quit his own dominions for a wife; but would adviſe an embaſſy to her father, with notice, that his majeſty would meet and eſpouſe her on the frontiers of the two kingdoms.

The ambaſſadors returning with an appointment of time and place, it was not above a month before I had ſettled Stygee on the thrones of Saſs Doorpt Swangeanti and Mount Alkoe, with the reverſion of the kingdom of Norbon, without a competitor.

I ſhall here give you an account of the marriage-ceremony. The king being arrived on the borders, Stygee, who had waited but a few hours at the laſt village in Norbon, advanced to his majeſty on the very diviſion, as they called it, of the two kingdoms, a line being drawn to expreſs the bounds of each. The king and Stygee having talked apart from the company a little ſpace, each ſtanding hand in hand, on their own reſpective ground, the chief ragan advanced, and began the cere-mony.

He firſt aſked each party aloud, if he and ſhe were willing to be united in body and affections, and would engage to continue ſo their whole lives; to which each party having anſwered aloud in the affirmative; 'Shew me then a 'token!' ſays he; and immediately each expanding the right-ſide of their graundees, laid it upon the other's left-ſide, ſo that they appeared then but as one body, ſtanding hand in hand, in-caſed round with the graundee. The ragan then having deſcanted upon the duties of marriage, concluded the cere-mony with wiſhing them as fruitful as Perigen and Philella. So ſoon as it was over, and the gripſacks and voices had finiſhed an epithalamium, the bride and bridegroom taking wing, were conducted to Brandleguarp, amidſt the acclamations of an infinite number of Georigetti's ſubjects.

The king had made vaſt prepara-tions for the reception of the princeſs Stygee; and nothing was to be heard or ſeen but feaſtings and rejoicing for many days: and his majeſty after-wards aſſured me of his entire ſatis-faction in my choice of his bride, without whom he confeſſed, that not-withſtanding the many other bleſſings I had procured him, his happineſs muſt have been incompleat.

Intending another flight to Norbon, I was charged with the king and queen's compliments to Oniwheſke; which having executed, I opened a free trade to Mount Alkoe; and hearing that ſmall veſſels came frequently on the

Norboneſe

Norboneſe coaſt, to carry off the iron and other metals from thence unwrought, and paid part of their return in wrought metals, I ordered ſome of the next that came to be ſtopped, and brought to me; and the day before I had fixed for my departure, notice was ſent that twelve of thoſe traders were ſtopped, and in cuſtody at the ſea-ſide: I longed to ſee them, but then conſidering that it would take up more time to bring them to Apſilo the capital, where I was, than I ſhould take in going to them and returning, I reſolved to go and examine them myſelf.

They told me they traded with ſmall veſſels to Norbon for metals, which they carried home, and wrought great part of it themſelves, ſending it to, and diſperſing it in, ſeveral iſlands at a diſtance; and alſo ſold the unwrought to ſeveral people who carried it they knew not whither in great ſhips. They ſaid they kept abundance of hands at work in the trade. I aſked if their artificers wrought it for their own profit or their maſters. They told me for maſters, themſelves being all ſlaves. 'And 'are you all ſlaves?' ſays I. They told me 'Yes,' all but one, pointing to him. I then ordered him to be ſecured and removed; and told them if they would procure ſome hands to ſettle at Norbon and Mount Alkoe, they ſhould all be made free, have lands aſſigned them, and have other privileges, and I did not doubt in time would become the richeſt men in the country; for I underſtood by them they were acquainted with the uſe of money. I aſked them what other commodities they brought to Norbon in exchange: they ſaid cloaths for the people, both what they received in exchange from others who bought their iron, and ſome of a coarſer ſort of their own making. I found, in my diſcourſe I had with them, that out of my eleven men there were perſons of four different occupations; ſo I promiſed thoſe who would ſtay with me their freedoms, good houſes, and other rewards; and ſending three hands home with the veſſel, and a full freight, according to the value of the cargo they brought, I ordered them to engage as many as they could of their countrymen of diſtinct trades, to come and ſettle with me; and to be ſure, if they had any grain, corn, roots, plants, or ſeeds, uſually eaten for food, to bring all they could get with them, and they ſhould have good returns for them; and as to thoſe good hands that ſettled here, they ſhould be allowed all materials to work for their own profit the firſt year, and after that they ſhould alſo work for themſelves, allowing the king one tenth of the clear profit. This took ſo far with them, that it was with the utmoſt difficulty I got any of them to carry the ſhip back, for fear they ſhould not be able to return.

Before I parted from them, I aſſigned the eight who were left all proper conveniences, and recommended them to the king's protection; and I ordered the owner, then in cuſtody, to be conducted to Mount Alkoe, and from thence to Brandleguarp; where, treating him kindly, and giving him liberty, I made my proper uſe of him.

The king having lent me a convoy to conduct my priſoner, and given me a licenſe for as many cattle of the ſorts I choſe, as I pleaſed to drive to Georigetti's dominions, I made them drive a great number of ſheep of the fineſt wool I ever ſaw, and very large alſo; a great number of creatures not unlike an aſs for ſhape, but with two upright horns and ſhort ears, which gave abundance of rich milk; and alſo ſome ſwine. All theſe were drove to, and diſtributed at, my new colony, where I let them remain till I had provided a proper receptacle for them at Doorpt Swangeanti, near the woods; when I brought many over the black mountain, and diſtributed there, with directions how to manage them; and in about ſeven years time we held a little beaſt-market near Brandleguarp, twice a year, where the ſpare cattle were brought up, and preſerved in ſalt till the next market; for I had ſome years before made large ſalt-works near the ſea at Mount Alkoe, which employed abundance of hands, and was now become a conſiderable trade.

We had iron, copper, and ſilver money, which went very current; and had butter and cheeſe from the farms near the woods, as plenty as we had the fruits before, great numbers of families having ſettled there; and there was ſcarce a family but was of ſome occupation or other.

By the accounts I received from the mines, from time to time, it was prodigious to hear what vaſt quantities of

metals were prepared in one year now, by little above one third of the hands that were uſually employed in them before; for now the men's ambition was, to leave a good week's work done at their return, for an example to thoſe who were coming; and the overſeers told me, they would ſing and work with the greateſt delight imaginable, whilſt they pleaſed themſelves with telling one another how they intended to ſpend the next fourteen days.

CHAP. XXII.

PETER, LOOKING OVER HIS BOOKS, FINDS HE HAS GOT A LATIN BIBLE—SETS ABOUT A TRANSLATION—TEACHES SOME OF THE RAGANS LETTERS—SETS UP A PAPER MANUFACTURE—MAKES THE RAGANS READ THE BIBLE—THE RAGANS TEACH OTHERS TO READ AND WRITE—A FAIR KEPT AT THE BLACK MOUNTAIN — PETER'S REFLECTION ON THE SWANGEANTINES.

ALL things being now ſo ſettled, that they would go on of themſelves, and having no farther direct view in my head, I ſpent my time with my wife; and looking over my books one day to divert myſelf, with the greateſt joy imaginable, I found that the Bible I had taken to be in the Portugueſe tongue was a Latin one. It was many years ſince I had thought of that language; but on this occaſion, by force of memory and recollection, and with ſome attention, conſideration, and practice, I found it return to me in ſo plentiful a manner, that I fully reſolved to tranſlate my Bible into the Swangeantine tongue.

I ſent directly for Laſmeel to be my amanuenſis; and to work we went upon the tranſlation.

We began at the creation, and deſcending to the Flood, went on to the Jewiſh captivity in Egypt, and deliverance by Moſes; leaving out the genealogies, and all the Jewiſh ceremonies and laws, except the Ten Commandments. I tranſlated the Books of Samuel and Kings, down to the Babyloniſh captivity. I then tranſlated ſuch parts of the Prophets as were neceſſary to introduce the Meſſiah, and diſcover him; the Book of Pſalms, Job, and the Proverbs; and with the utmoſt impatience haſted to the New Teſtament. But then conſidering that when I had done, as only Laſmeel and myſelf could read it, in caſe of our deaths, the tranſlation muſt die with us, I choſe out ſix of the junior ragans, and two of the elder, to learn letters; and in leſs than twelve months I had brought them all to read mine and Laſmeel's writing perfectly well.

I inſtructed theſe ragans at ſpare hours, whilſt I went on with my tranſlation; but finding my paper grow low, having had a great ſupply of coarſe linen, and a ſort of calicoes from the iſles, in return for our metals, I ſet up a manufactory from that, and ſome gums of the trees, which we boiled with it to a pulp in iron pans, and beating it to pieces, made a uſeful paper, which would bear ink tolerably. But I could find nothing to make ink of, though I ſent over all the country to ſearch for every herb and fruit not commonly uſed; till at laſt I found an herb and flower on it, which if taken before the flower faded, would, by boiling thoroughly, become blue: this, by ſtill more boiling in a copper-pan, till it was dry and burnt hard to the bottom, in ſome meaſure anſwered my purpoſe; and I fixed upon it as the beſt I could obtain from all my experiments.

When the ragans were maſters of their pens, I ſet ſix of them to copy what Laſmeel had finiſhed, and the other two to teach their brethren; and in two years time, by a pretty conſtant application, (for I made them tranſcribe it perfectly fair and intelligible) we finiſhed our tranſlation, and two fair copies.

I then ordered the ragans to read a portion of it to the people conſtantly in the mouch: they, from the novelty of the ſtory, at firſt grew ſo exceeding fond of it, that upon the proper expoſitions of it I taught the ragans afterwards to make, they began to apply it ſeriouſly to religious purpoſes.

My writing-ragans were very fond of their knowledge of letters; and trade and commerce now increaſing, which put every one more or leſs in want of the ſame knowledge, they made

made a great profit of it, by inſtructing all who applied to them. This increaſe of writing neceſſarily provided a maintenance for ſeveral perſons who travelled to Norbon for quills, and ſold them to the Swangeantines at extravagant rates; till the Norboneſe hearing that, brought them themſelves to the foot of the mountain, where the Swangeantines bought them, as they did ſeveral other commodities, which one country had, and the other wanted, eſpecially iron wares of almoſt every denomination; ſo that the mountain, being ſo exceſſively high, was the barrier; for the Norboneſe finding that difficulty in aſcending and deſcending, which the Swangeantines with their graundees did not, there was a conſtant market of buyers and ſellers on the Mount Alkoe ſide of the black mountain; which by degrees grew the general mart of the three kingdoms.

I have often reflected with myſelf, and have been amazed to think, that ſo ingenious and induſtrious a people as the Swangeantines have ſince appeared to be, and who, till I came amongſt them, had nothing more than bare food, and a hole to lie in, in a barren rocky country, and then ſeemed to deſire only what they had, ſhould in ten years time, be ſupplied not only with the conveniences, but ſuperfluities of life; and that they ſhould then become ſo fond of them, as rather willingly to part with life itſelf, than be reduced to the ſtate I found them in. And I have as often, on this occaſion, reflected on the goodneſs of Providence, in rendering one part of mankind eaſy under the abſence of ſuch comforts as others could not reſt without; and have made it a great argument for my aſſent to well-atteſted truths above my comprehenſion. 'For,' ſays I, 'to have affirmed, at my firſt 'coming, either that theſe things could 'have been made at all, or when done 'could have been of any additional be'nefit to theſe people, would have been 'ſo far beyond their imaginations, that 'the reporter of ſo plain a truth, as 'they now find it, would have been 'looked upon as a madman or an im'poſtor: but by opening their views 'by little and little, and ſhewing them 'the dependance of one thing upon 'another, he that ſhould now affirm 'the inutility of them, would be ob'ſerved in a much worſe light. And 'yet, without any embelliſhments of 'art, how did this ſo great a people live 'under the protection of Providence? 'Let us firſt view them at a vaſt diſ'tance from any ſort of ſuſtenance, 'yet from the help of the graundee, 'that diſtance was but a ſtep to them. 'They were forced to inhabit the 'rocks, from an utter incapacity of 'providing ſhelter elſewhere, having 'no tool that would either cut down 'timber for an habitation, or dig up 'the earth for a fence, or materials to 'make one: but they had a liquor 'that would diſſolve the rock itſelf 'into habitations. They had neither 'beaſt or fiſh, for food or burden; 'but they had fruits equivalent to 'both, of the ſame reliſh, and as 'wholeſome, without ſhedding blood. 'Their fruits were dangerous, till 'they had fermented in a boiling heat; 'and they had neither the ſun, or any 'fire, or the knowledge how to pro'pagate or continue it. But they had 'their hot ſprings always boiling, 'without their care or concern. They 'had neither the ſkins of beaſts, the 'original cloathing, or any other ar'tificial covering from the weather; 'but they were born with that warm 'cloathing the graundee, which being 'of a conſiderable denſity, and full of 'veins flowing with warm blood, not 'only defended their fleſh from all 'outward injuries, but was a moſt ſoft, 'comely, and warm dreſs to the body. 'They lived moſtly in the dark rock, 'having leſs difference of light with 'the change of ſeaſons, than other 'people have; but either by cuſtom or 'make, more light than what Pro'vidence has ſent them in the ſwee'coe, is diſagreeable: ſo that where 'little is to be obtained, Providence, 'by confining the capacity, can give 'content with that; and where appa'rent wants are, we may ſee, by theſe 'people, how careful Providence is to 'ſupply them; for neither the graun'dee, the ſweecoes, or their ſprings, 'are to be found where thoſe neceſſa'ries can be ſupplied by other means.'

Amongſt my other conſiderations, I have often thought, that if I had gone to the top of the black mountains northward of Brandleguarp, in the very lighteſt time, I might have ſeen the ſun; but theſe mountains were ſo elevated,

elevated, that our lighteſt time was only the gilded glimmering of their tops, having never ſeen ſo much light on them as totally to eclipſe all the ſtars; of which we had always the ſame in view, but in different poſitions.

CHAP. XXIII.

PETER'S CHILDREN PROVIDED FOR—YOUWARKEE'S DEATH—HOW THE KING AND QUEEN SPEND THEIR TIME—PETER GROWS MELANCHOLY—WANTS TO GET TO ENGLAND—CONTRIVES MEANS—IS TAKEN UP AT SEA.

I Had now been at Brandleguarp ten years; and my children were all provided for by the king but Dickey, as faſt as they were qualified for employment, and ſuch as were fit for it were married off to the beſt alliances in the country; ſo that I had only to ſit down, and ſee every thing I had put my hand to proſper, and not an evil eye in the three kingdoms caſt at me: but about my eleventh or twelfth year, my wife falling into a lingering diſorder, at the end of two years it carried her off. This was the firſt real affliction I had ſuffered for many years, and ſo ſoured my temper, that I became fit for nothing, and it was painful to me even to think of buſineſs.

The king's marriage had produced four children, three ſons and a daughter, which he would frequently tell me were mine.

Old Oniwheſke was dead, and the king and queen divided their whole time equally between Brandleguarp and Apſilo: but he was building a palace at my new colony, which by this time was grown to a vaſt city, and was called Stygena, in compliment to the queen; and this new palace was deſigned to receive the court one third of the year, as it lay almoſt at equal diſtance between both his other palaces. This method, which his majeſty took, at my perſuaſion, on the death of Oniwheſke, though it went againſt the grain at firſt, was now grown ſo habitual to him, and he ſaw his own intereſt ſo much in it, in the love and eſteem it procured him from the people, that at laſt he wanted no ſpur to it.

My melancholy for the death of my wife, which I hoped time would wear off, rather gained ground upon me; and though I was as much regarded as ever by the whole court, yet it grew troubleſome to me even to be aſked my advice; and it not only ſurprized thoſe about me, but even myſelf, to ſee the ſame genius, without any viſible natural decay, in ſo ſhort a time, from the moſt ſprightly and enterprizing, become the moſt phlegmatick and inactive.

My longings after my native country, ever ſince my wife's death, redoubled upon me, and I had formed ſeveral ſchemes of getting thither, as firſt, I had formed a project of going off by the iſlands, as I had ſo many ſmall veſſels at command there, and to get into the main ocean, and try my fortune that way; but, upon enquiry, I found that my veſſels could not get to ſea, or elſewhere, but to the zaps iſlands, by reaſon of the many rocks and ſand-banks which would oppoſe me, unleſs I went through the zaps country, which, in the light they had reaſon to view me, I was afraid to do. Then I had thoughts of going from the coaſt of Norbon; but that muſt have been in one of the foreign veſſels, and they coming from a quite different quarter than I muſt go, in all probability if I had put to ſea any way they were unacquainted with, they having no compaſs, we muſt have periſhed; for the more I grew by degrees acquainted with the ſituation of Doorpt Swangeanti, the ſtronger were my conjectures, that my neareſt continent muſt be the ſouthern coaſt of America; but ſtill it was only conjecture. At length, being tired and uneaſy, I reſolved, as I was accuſtomed to flight, and loved it, I would take a turn for ſome days, carry me where it would, I ſhould certainly light on ſome land, whence at worſt I could but come back again. I then went to ſee if my chair, board, and ropes, were ſound, for I had not uſed them for ſeveral years paſt; but I found them all ſo crazy, I durſt not venture in them; which diſappointment put off my journey for ſome time. However, as I had ſtill the thought remaining, it put me on ſeeking ſome other method to put it in practice: ſo I contrived the poles from which you took me, being a ſort of hollow cane the Swangeantines make their

their ſpears of, but exceeding ſtrong and ſpringy, which interwoven with ſmall cords, were my ſeat, and were much lighter than my chair; and theſe buoyed me up when your goodneſs relieved me. I had taken Mount Alkoe bearers, as I knew I muſt come to a country of more light; and I now find, if I had not fallen, I muſt ſoon have reached land, if we could have held out; for we were come too far to think of returning, without a reſting-place: and what will become of my poor bearers, I dread to think; if they attempted to return, they muſt have dropt, for they had complained all the laſt day and night, and had ſhifted very often. If in your hiſtory you think fit to carry down the life of a poor old man any farther, you will as well know what to ſay of me, as I can tell you; and I hope what I have hitherto ſaid, will in ſome meaſure recompence both your expence and labour.

FINIS.

Listed:
O'Neal list 92, item 128 — $200. (1992)

63540